Document Title:	**Understanding Developmental Crime Trajectories at Places: Social Disorganization and Opportunity Perspectives at Micro Units of Geography**
Author:	**David Weisburd, Elizabeth R. Groff, Sue-Ming Yang**
Document No.:	**236057**
Date Received:	**September 2011**
Award Number:	**2005-IJ-CX-0006**

Understanding Developmental Crime Trajectories at Places: Social Disorganization and Opportunity Perspectives at Micro Units of Geography

Final Report to the National Institute of Justice

Award Number: 2005-IJ-CX-0006

David Weisburd
George Mason University
Hebrew University

Elizabeth R. Groff
Temple University

And

Sue-Ming Yang
Georgia State University

November 2009

Acknowledgements

There are many people that we need to thank who have helped us in the development of this research and in the preparation of the manuscript. We are especially indebted to Chief Gil Kerlikowske of Seattle (now the Director of the Office of National Drug Control Policy) who supported our research from the outset, and facilitated our collection of official crime data as well as other data sources in Seattle. Many other people from the Seattle PD assisted us, but we owe a special debt to Lt. Ron Rasmussen who played a particularly important role as our main contact regarding data drawn from the police department.

A number of research assistants helped us in identifying, collecting and preparing data for this project. Kristen Miggans, then a graduate student at the University of Maryland, was particularly important in getting data collection off the ground and collected quite a bit of it. Rachel Philofsky, Chien-min Lin, Nancy Morris, Breanne Cave, Julie Willis, Amy J. Steen, and Janet Hagelgens also provided important assistance. We are grateful to all of these younger scholars for their commitment and interest in our work. Cody Telep of George Mason University deserves special mention because of his efforts in the rewrites, development of tables and figures, and editing of the report. Cody added tremendously to the quality of this work.

We thank Dan Nagin for his assistance with our trajectory models and Ned Levine for his comments on spatial point pattern statistics.

Finally we want to thank Kimberly Schmidt of the University of Maryland for her help and support in managing the NIJ grant that supported our research. We also want to thank our grant monitor, Carrie Mulford, for keeping us on track and reminding us of the importance of getting our work done.

Abstract

Individuals and communities have traditionally been the focus of criminological research, but recently criminologists have begun to explore the importance of "micro" places (e.g. addresses, street segments, and clusters of street segments) in understanding and controlling crime. Recent research provides strong evidence that crime is strongly clustered at hot spots and that there are important developmental trends of crime at place, but little is known about the geographic distribution of these patterns or the specific correlates of crime at this micro level of geography.

We report here on a large empirical study that sought to address these gaps in our knowledge of the "criminology of place." Linking 16 years of official crime data on street segments (a street block between two intersections) in Seattle, Washington to a series of data sets examining social and physical characteristics of micro places over time, we examine not only the geography of developmental patterns of crime at place but also the specific factors that are related to different trajectories of crime. We use two key criminological perspectives, social disorganization theories and opportunity theories, to inform our identification of risk factors in our study and then contrast the impacts of these perspectives in the context of multivariate statistical models.

Our first major research question concerns whether social disorganization and opportunity measures vary across micro units of geography, and whether they are clustered, like crime, into "hot spots." Study variables reflecting social disorganization include property value, housing assistance, race, voting behavior, unsupervised teens, physical disorder, and urbanization. Measures representing opportunity theories include the location of public

facilities, street lighting, public transportation, street networks, land use, and business sales. We find strong clustering of such traits into social disorganization and opportunity "hot spots," as well as significant spatial heterogeneity.

We use group-based trajectory modeling to identify eight broad developmental patterns across street segments in Seattle. Our findings in this regard follow an earlier NIJ study that identified distinct developmental trends (e.g. high increasing and high decreasing patterns) while noting the overall stability of crime trends for the majority of street segments in Seattle. We go beyond the prior study by carefully examining the geography of the developmental crime patterns observed. We find evidence of strong heterogeneity of trajectory patterns at street segments with, for example, the presence of chronic trajectory street segments throughout the city. There is also strong street to street variability in crime patterns, though there is some clustering of trajectory patterns in specific areas. Our findings suggest that area trends influence micro level trends (suggesting the relevance of community level theories of crime). Nonetheless, they also show that the bulk of variability at the micro place level is not explained by trends at larger geographic levels.

In identifying risk factors related to developmental trajectories, we find confirmation of both social disorganization and opportunity theories. Overall, street segments evidencing higher social disorganization are also found to have higher levels of crime. For many social disorganization measures increasing trends of social disorganization over time were associated with increasing trajectory patterns of crime. Similarly, in the case of opportunity measures related to motivated offenders, suitable crime targets, and their accessibility, we find that greater opportunities for crime are found at street segments in higher rate trajectory patterns. Finally, we use multinomial logistic regression to simultaneously examine opportunity and social disorganization factors and their influence on trajectory patterns. The most important finding here is that both perspectives have considerable salience in understanding crime at place, and together they allow us to develop a very strong level of prediction of crime.

Our work suggests it is time to consider an approach to the crime problem that begins not with the people who commit crime but with the micro places where crimes are committed. This is not the geographic units of communities or police beats that have generally been the focus of crime prevention, but it is a unit of analysis that is key to understanding crime and its development.

Table of Contents

List of Figures

List of Tables

Executive Summary:

Understanding Developmental Crime Trajectories at Places: Social Disorganization and Opportunity Perspectives at Micro Units of Geography

Grant #2005-IJ-CX-0006

"Neighbors next door are more important than relatives far away"

Chinese Folk Saying

Traditionally, research and theory in criminology have focused on two main units of analysis: individuals and communities (Nettler, 1978; Sherman, 1995). Crime prevention research and policy have also been focused primarily on offenders or the communities in which they live (Akers, 1973; Gottfredson & Hirschi, 1990). While the individual and the community have long been a focus of crime research and theory, and of prevention programs, only recently have criminologists begun to explore other potential units of analysis that may contribute to our understanding and control of crime.

An important catalyst for this work came from theoretical perspectives that emphasized the context of crime and the opportunities that are presented to potential offenders. In a ground breaking article on routine activities and crime, for example, Cohen and Felson (1979) suggest that a fuller understanding of crime must include a recognition that the availability of suitable crime targets and the presence or absence of capable guardians influence crime events. Around the same time, the Brantinghams published their influential book *Environmental Criminology*, which emphasized the role of place characteristics in shaping the type and frequency of human interaction (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]). Researchers at the British Home Office in a series of studies examining “situational crime prevention” also challenged the traditional focus on offenders and communities (Clarke, 1983). These studies showed that the crime situation and the opportunities it creates play significant roles in the development of crime events (Clarke, 1983).

One implication of these emerging perspectives is that crime places are an important focus of inquiry. While concern with the relationship between crime and place is not new and indeed goes back to the founding generations of modern criminology (Guerry, 1833; Quetelet, 1842 [1969]), the “micro” approach to places suggested by recent theories has just begun to be examined by criminologists.[1] Places in this “micro” context are specific locations within the larger social environments of communities and neighborhoods (Eck & Weisburd, 1995). They are sometimes defined as buildings or addresses (e.g. see Green, 1996; Sherman et al., 1989); sometimes as block faces, ‘hundred blocks’, or street segments (e.g. see Taylor, 1997; Weisburd et al., 2004); and sometimes as clusters of addresses, block faces or street segments (e.g. see Block et al., 1995; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995).

Recent studies point to the potential theoretical and practical benefits of focusing research on crime places. A number of studies, for example, suggest that there is a very significant clustering of crime at places, irrespective of the specific unit of analysis that is defined (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1999; Crow & Bull, 1975; Pierce et al., 1986; Roncek, 2000; Sherman et al., 1989; Weisburd et al., 1992; Weisburd & Green, 1994; Weisburd et al., 2004). The extent of the concentration of crime at place is dramatic. In one of the pioneering studies in this area, Lawrence Sherman and colleagues (1989) found that only three percent of the addresses in Minneapolis produced 50 percent of all calls to the police. Fifteen years later in a

[1] For a notable example of an early approach which did place emphasis on the “micro” idea of place as discussed here, see Shaw et al. (1929).

study in Seattle, Washington, Weisburd et al. (2004) reported that between four and five percent of street segments in the city accounted for 50 percent of crime incidents for each year over 14 years. These studies and others (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1984; Clarke, 1983; Curtis, 1974; Maltz et al., 1990 [2000]; Pyle, 1976; Rengert, 1980; Skogan, 1990) have established crime places as an important focus of criminological inquiry and practical crime prevention. In turn, a number of recent programs focused on specific places, often defined as crime "hot spots," have been found to have significant effects on crime and disorder (e.g. see Braga et al., 1999; Mazerolle & Terrill, 1997; Mazerolle et al., 1998; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995).

In a prior NIJ study, Weisburd and colleagues (2004) also point to the importance of recognizing dynamic developmental trends across micro units of geography. Using group-based trajectory analysis (Nagin, 1999, 2005; Nagin & Land, 1993), they classify street segments (as measured by address ranges) in Seattle, Washington into trajectory groups that reflect distinct longitudinal crime patterns. Some trajectories were classified as stable, a few as increasing, and some as decreasing throughout the time span. These findings are particularly important because the city of Seattle, like most large American cities in the 1990s, experienced a large crime decline. The fact that Weisburd et al. found that most street segments in a city changed little in terms of crime during that period, and that some even experienced strong crime waves serves to reinforce the salience of looking more closely at crime at very small geographic units of analysis.

While scholars have provided a strong empirical basis for the assumption that crime is strongly clustered at crime hot spots and that there are important developmental trends of crime at place, existing research provides little insight into the factors that underlie these patterns.[2]

[2] For example, we could identify only three prior published studies that specifically examined developmental patterns of crime at micro places over time. One study conducted by Spelman (1995) looked at specific places such

What characteristics of places are associated with crime hot spots, and how do the characteristics of hot spots differ from places that are relatively crime free? Do high and low crime places differ in substantive ways that can be empirically identified? What accounts for the differing developmental crime trends that have been identified at micro units of place over time? What leads some micro places to experience a large decline in crime trends over time, while others in the same city experience crime waves and still others vary little in crime trends during the same period? Perhaps just as critical in increasing our understanding of micro units of geography and crime and place is exploring whether crime trends observed at such geographic units are simply reflections of higher order neighborhood or community effects, or if focus on these higher order geographic areas has led us to miss important insights about the causes of crime at the micro geographic level.

For the last century criminologists have focused on describing the nature and causes of individual offending. In this report we turn our attention to a different problem that has only recently drawn criminological attention, but has the potential to improve our predictions of crime and also our ability to develop practical crime prevention. Our focus is on how crime distributes across very small units of geography. A Chinese proverb suggests that "neighbors next door are more important than relatives far away." We argue that the action of crime research and practice should be focused much more on micro crime places.

Site and Methods

Seattle makes a good choice for a longitudinal study of places for several reasons. First, as a large city it has enough geography, population and crime to undertake a micro level study.

---

as high schools, public housing projects, subway stations and parks in Boston, using three years of official crime information. Taylor (1999) examined crime and fear of crime at 90 street blocks in Baltimore, Maryland using a panel design with data collected in 1981 and 1994 (see also Taylor, 2001). These studies are limited only to a small number of locations and to a few specific points in time. The final study by Weisburd et al. (2004) examined all the street 'hundred blocks' in Seattle. This research extends that earlier work.

The distinguishing feature of Seattle was the length of the time for which they had crime data available. Moreover, Seattle was led at the time of our study by an innovative Chief of Police, Gil Kerlikowske, now the Director of the Office of National Drug Control Policy, who offered to facilitate the collection of data both from the police department and other government sources in Seattle.

The study period we used is 1989 – 2004. In 1990 the population of the city had begun to rebound for the first time in decades, reaching 516,259. This upward trend continued over the next decade and by the 2000 census there were 563,374 people living in Seattle (U.S. Census Bureau, 1990, 2000).

The geographic unit of analysis for this study is the street segment (sometimes referred to as a street block or face block). We define the street segment as both sides of the street between two intersections. Only residential and arterial streets were included in our study. We excluded limited access highways because of their lack of interactive human activity.[3] This left us with 24,023 units of analysis (i.e., street segments) in Seattle. We chose the street segment for a variety of theoretical and practical reasons. Theoretically, scholars have long recognized the relevance of street blocks in organizing life in the city (Appleyard, 1981; Brower, 1980; Jacobs, 1961; Taylor et al., 1984; Unger & Wandersman, 1983). Taylor (1997, 1998) made the case for why street segments (his terminology was street blocks) function as behavior settings. We also thought that crime data was unlikely to be accurately coded at the address level, and thus the street segment in our view represented a micro level of geography that was likely to include accurate crime information.

[3] The street centerline file we obtained from Seattle GIS included many different line types (e.g. trails, railroad and transit lines to name a few). Our study included only residential streets, arterial streets and walkways/stairs connecting streets.

Data

We used computerized records of crime incident reports to represent crime. Incident reports are generated by police officers or detectives after an initial response to a request for police service. We included a total of 1,697,212 crime records that were then joined to their corresponding street segments so that crime frequencies for each of the 24,023 segments for each year could be calculated.

The data collected about each street segment represents one of two (and in some cases both) major schools of criminological thought related to places. One school of thought emphasizes opportunity characteristics and the other emphasizes social disorganization characteristics. The temporal resolution of each characteristic is a calendar year (January – December). This resolution matches the crime data. Based on the opportunity theory perspective we collected data on 16 source characteristics for each street segment in Seattle. These characteristics were then aggregated to create the final 10 characteristics we focused on for the analysis (see Table A). Based on social disorganization theories we collected nine characteristics for each street segment in Seattle at the address level of analysis. These characteristics were then aggregated to create the final eight characteristics we focused on for the analysis (see Table B). Retrospective data collection was the single most challenging aspect of the research.

Table A: Opportunity Theory Characteristics Used in Analysis

Characteristic	Composition
Motivated Offenders	
• High risk juveniles	• Truant or low academic achieving juvenile residents
Suitable Targets	
• Employment • Residents • Retail business-related Crime generators/Crime attractors • Public facilities as Crime generators/Crime attractors	• Number of employees • Total juveniles + total registered voters • Total sales for retail businesses • Number of public facilities within 1,320 feet ○ Community centers ○ Hospitals ○ Libraries ○ Parks ○ Schools
Accessibility/Urban Form	
• Type of street • Bus stops	• 1= arterial, 0 = residential • Total number of bus stops
Guardianship	
• Vacant Land • Police station/Fire station • Street lighting	• Percentage of vacant land • Number of Police or fire stations within 1,320 feet • Watts per foot of lighting

Table B: Social Disorganization Characteristics Used in Analysis

Structural Dimensions (Variables within dimension)
• SES ○ Property Values (Weighted ranking of single- and multi-family housing) • Public Housing / Assistance • Mixed Land Use • Racial Heterogeneity ○ Race of Public School Students

• Distance to Downtown
  ○ Urbanization
 	
• Physical Disorganization
  ○ Physical Disorder

Intermediating Dimensions (Variables within dimension)

• Unsupervised Teens
  ○ Truant Juveniles (grades 3 – 12)
 	
• Willingness to Intervene in Public Affairs
  ○ Voting Participation (Percent of Active voters)

Results

We think that our study has yielded a number of important findings for advancing the study of the criminology of place. In some cases, our work has only reinforced that of prior investigations. But in others, our research has broken new ground that we hope will continue to be explored by other researchers. We divide our discussion of our research findings into four distinct areas: 1) the distribution of opportunity and social disorganization across places; 2) the concentration of crime at place; 3) the geography of crime at place; 4) the correlates of crime at place.

The Distribution of Opportunity and Social Disorganization across Places

We began by identifying two major perspectives that have informed criminological understandings of place: social disorganization theories and opportunity theories.

For criminologists who have placed emphasis on social disorganization theory, social processes occur in relatively larger areas where social and economic forces influence the ability of communities to regulate and enforce norms on their members (e.g. see Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Shaw & McKay 1942 [1969]) . While social disorganization theory has not been seen as a key factor in understanding crime at micro units of analysis such as the street segment, we thought it was important to examine whether such structural factors as socio-economic status or physical disorder, or mediating concepts like collective efficacy, help us to understand what we have termed the criminology of place.

The importance of opportunity theories for understanding crime at place has a long history in criminology (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991], 1984; Clarke, 1983, 1992, 1995; Cohen & Felson, 1979; Cornish & Clarke, 1986). A focus on crime naturally leads scholars to specific places or situations, and the opportunities that situations and places provide for crime. We expected at the outset that measures reflecting the opportunity perspectives would vary at the street segment level. However, we wanted to examine whether this assumption would be strongly supported by empirical data.

Looking both at structural and mediating variables we found that there are hot spots of social disorganization at the street segment level. For example, fully 50 percent of truant students are consistently found to reside on between 2 and 3.5 percent of the total street segments during the study period. Over 50 percent of reports of physical disorder were found on between 1.5 and 3 percent of street segments. And these hot spots were not simply part of contiguous hot spots at larger geographic levels. They are not found only in specific neighborhoods. Rather they are distributed across the city landscape.

We also found strong evidence of spatial independence of social disorganization at street segments. While there are sometimes clusters of street segments with specific traits in what may be termed communities or neighborhoods, there is also significant street by street variation in such concentrations. This is an extremely important finding since it suggests that a perspective that has generally been seen as relevant at higher levels of geography shows concentration and variability at the street segment level. The fact that there are hot spots of social disorganization at this level raises the intriguing question of whether such hot spots are related to hot spots of crime (see later). But irrespective of that relationship our work is the first establish that social disorganization variables are concentrated at micro places and that they are spread across the city landscape.

Opportunity measures are as we expected also concentrated, and also evidence variability across places. The overwhelming finding is one of concentration at specific places. For example, 50 percent of high risk juveniles (a proxy in our work for "motivated offenders") are consistently found on between three and four percent of the total number of Seattle street segments. In turn, half of all the employees (a proxy for "suitable targets") in the city were located on less than one percent of Seattle street segments. There are hot spots of motivated offenders, suitable targets and capable guardians. This was not suprising given prior theorizing, but our data are among the first to illustrate this fact.

Finally, as with social disorganization measures we find that opportunity characteristics of places evidence much spatial heterogeneity. In statistical terms there is a significant degree of negative spatial autocorrelation evident in the variables we examine. In this sense while there are hot spots of opportunities, such hot spots are not clustered only in specific neighborhoods. Our results suggest that characteristics reflecting opportunity theories are indeed associated with specific street segments, and are not simply reflecting larger area trends.

The Concentration of Crime at Place

Using 16 years of data and adding refinement to the definition of street segments our analyses follow closely those of prior studies of crime at place. Our study confirms prior research showing that crime is tightly clustered in specific places in urban areas, and that most places evidence little or no crime (Sherman et al., 1989; Weisburd et al., 2004). Fifty percent of the crime each year in Seattle was found at just five to six percent of the street segments in the city. We think this pattern is consistent enough to suggest a "law of concentration" of crime. Following prior study (see Weisburd et al., 2004) we were also able to show that there is a high degree of stability of crime at micro places over time. While there is overall stability in the trajectory patterns we observe in our study, there is also evidence of strong increasing and decreasing patterns of crime. One pattern of developmental trends we observe for example, suggest strong crime waves during a 16 year period of general crime declines in the city. More generally, our data suggest that crime trends at specific segments are central to understanding overall changes in crime in a city.

The Geography of Crime at Place

Our analyses of the geography of developmental patterns of crime at street segments provided important insights into our understanding of the processes that generate crime trends at street segments. Perhaps the key objection to our work would be that we have unnecessarily rarified our geographic analysis and that our choice of a micro place unit for studying crime has simply masked higher order geographic processes.

We do not find evidence suggesting that the processes explaining crime patterns at street segments come primarily from higher geographic influences such as communities. There are indications of the influence of higher order trends in our data. One example is the fact that higher crime street segments are not distributed at random, and are more likely to be closer to each other than would be predicted simply by chance. But these indications of macro geographic influences are much outweighed in our data by evidence of the importance of looking at crime at the micro level that we have defined as street segments in our study. There is strong street to street variability in crime patterns in our data, and such variability emphasizes the importance of studying crime at place at a micro unit of analysis. Evidence of spatial independence at the street segment level further reinforces this. Much of the action of crime comes from the street segment, as we have defined it. We think our findings suggest that it is time to move the geographic cone of criminological interests to the criminology of place.

The Correlates of Crime at Place

Having established that an important part of the crime equation is generated at a very micro level of geography, it was natural to turn to the factors that would explain crime at place. Earlier we noted that characteristics of social disorganization and opportunity were concentrated at places and that they evidenced strong geographic heterogeneity. Can we explain selection to different developmental crime patterns with variables representing these key theoretical dimensions of place?

Our research has provided an unambiguous answer to this question. Looking at risk factors for crime, we found a large number of both opportunity measures and social disorganization measures to significantly distinguish trajectory membership. Of the six structural indicators of social disorganization that we examined, five are directly related to crime levels of trajectories. In the case of mediating factors of social disorganization two key measures were related to the level of crime in trajectory patterns. Our ten measures of motivated offenders, suitable targets and accessibility are all linked strongly to initial crime levels of trajectory patterns. The relationship of these factors to developmental trends, while not as uniform, follows the patterns overall that would be expected.

Our risk analysis suggested the importance of both opportunity and social disorganization theories as correlates of crime at place. But we also looked at these factors in the context of an overall model explaining developmental patterns of crime at street segments. We used a direct method for comparing the influence of the two theoretical perspectives on crime patterns at places. It suggested that both perspectives are providing a strong explanation for developmental patterns of crime at place. The opportunity perspective provided an explained variance value of ("pseudo" R^2) of .66 versus .51 for the social disorganization measures. This suggests that a model exclusively concerned with opportunities for crime (as we measure them) is likely to provide a higher level of prediction of trajectory patterns. However, we think what is most significant here overall is that in the multivariate context, both perspectives maintain strong and significant influences on crime at place. Both social disorganization theory and opportunity theories need to be considered in understanding why crime varies across places.

In turn, the models presented point to the strength of these theories in providing explanation for crime at place. Our main model explaining trajectory group membership had a Pseudo R^2 value of .68 (Nagelkerke). Drawing from a recent article in the *Crime and Justice* series (see Weisburd & Piquero, 2008) we argued that in comparison to studies of crime and criminality more generally prediction is very high in our model. The median value for R^2 in that study was only .36, and a quarter of the studies examined had values of less than .20. The average R^2 value for person based studies was about .30. In this context our Pseudo R^2 value above .60 implies that the criminology of place has much potential for explaining crime.

Policy Implications

We have shown so far that our findings have important implications for our understanding of crime. However, we also think that our work has direct implications for crime prevention policy. Our work reinforces a growing trend in crime prevention that seeks to focus efforts on the context of crime (Sherman, 1995; Weisburd, 2002; Weisburd et al., 2009), in our case on crime places.

While the efficiency of crime prevention approaches can be defined in a number of different ways, we think it reasonable to begin with a definition of efficiency that suggests that strategies are more efficient to the extent that they offer the same crime prevention value with a smaller number of targets. We find that five to six percent of street segments each year include half of all crime incidents. One percent of the street segments in the chronic trajectory group are responsible for more than a fifth of all crime incidents in the city. This means that crime prevention practitioners can focus their resources on relatively few crime hot spots and deal with a large proportion of the crime problem. Importantly, as well, places are not “moving targets.” Place-based crime prevention provides a target that “stays in the same place.” This is not an insignificant issue when considering the investment of crime prevention resources.

Evidence of the stability of crime patterns at places in our work, also suggests the efficiency of place based approaches. We show not only that about the same number of street segments were responsible for 50 percent of the crime each year, but that the street segments that tended to evidence very low or very high activity at the beginning of the period of study in 1989 were similarly ranked at the end of the period in 2004. Accordingly, a strategy that is focused on chronic hot spots is not likely to be focusing on places that will naturally become cool a year later. The stability of crime at place across time makes crime places a particularly salient focus for investment of crime prevention resources.

Our work also reinforces the importance of focusing in on “places” rather than larger geographic units such as communities or police precincts. Our data suggest that crime prevention at larger geographic units is likely to suffer an “ecological fallacy” in which crime prevention resources are spread thinly across large numbers of street segments, when the problems that need to be addressed are concentrated only on some of the street segments in that area. Criminologists and crime prevention practitioners need to recognize that definitions of neighborhoods as "bad" or problematic, is likely to miss the fact that many places in such areas have no or little crime. In turn, crime prevention resources should be focused on the hot spots of crime within "good" and "bad" neighborhoods.

Our data also illustrate that criminologists and crime prevention practitioners can identify key characteristics of places that are correlated with crime. At a policy level, our research reinforces the importance of initiatives like "hot spots policing" that address specific streets within relatively small areas (Braga, 2001; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995). If police become better at recognizing the "good streets" in the bad areas, they can take a more holistic approach to addressing crime problems.

Limitations

While we think our work has contributed a good deal to our knowledge of the criminology of place, we note in our report some specific limitations of our data. Perhaps most significant is the fact that by necessity we were limited to retrospective data collection. Having noted that we were able to provide a more in depth view of crime at place than any prior study we know of, we think it important to recognize that retrospective data collection is by its nature limited. Many of our measures are proxies for variables we would have liked to collect but were unable to identify.

A second key limitation of our study relates to our use of observational data in understanding developmental crime patterns. While we examine the correlates of developmental crime patterns at places, we cannot make unambiguous statements about the causal patterns underlying our data. For example, reports of physical disorder are very strongly correlated with presence in more serious or chronic trajectory patterns. But our data do not allow us to establish that physical disorder leads to more serious crime problems. Even though we find that changes in physical disorder and changes in crime are related, it may be that a third cause unmeasured in our analysis is in fact the ultimate cause of the relationships observed. This limitation is not unique to our study, but one that affects all observational studies (Shadish et al., 2002). Nonetheless, it is important to keep this limitation in mind when considering the implications of our work.

Conclusions

For most of the last century criminologists and crime prevention practitioners have tried to understand why people become involved in crime and what programs can be developed to discourage criminality. Our work suggests that it is time to consider another approach to the crime problem that begins not with the people who commit crime but the places where crimes are committed. Our work shows that street segments in the city of Seattle represent a key unit for understanding the crime problem. This is not the geographic units of communities or police beats that have generally been the focus of criminologists or police in crime prevention, but it is a unit of analysis that is key to understanding crime and its development.

Chapter 1: Introduction

"Neighbors next door are more important than relatives far away"

Chinese Folk Saying

Traditionally, research and theory in criminology have focused on two main units of analysis: individuals and communities (Nettler, 1978; Sherman, 1995). In the case of individuals, criminologists have sought to understand why certain people as opposed to others become criminals (e.g. see Akers, 1973; Gottfredson & Hirschi, 1990; Hirschi, 1969; Raine, 1993), or to explain why certain offenders become involved in criminal activity at different stages of the life course or cease involvement at other stages (e.g. see Laub & Sampson, 2003; Moffitt, 1993; Sampson & Laub, 1993). In the case of communities, criminologists have often tried to explain why certain types of crime or different levels of criminality are found in some communities as contrasted with others (e.g. see Agnew, 1999; Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson & Wilson, 1995; Shaw et al., 1929), or how community-level variables, such as relative deprivation, low socioeconomic status, or lack of economic opportunity may affect individual criminality (e.g. see Agnew, 1992; Cloward & Ohlin, 1960; Merton, 1968; Wolfgang & Ferracuti, 1967). In most cases, research on communities has focused on the "macro" level, often studying states (Loftin & Hill, 1974), cities (Baumer et al., 1998), and neighborhoods (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson, 1985).

Crime prevention research and policy have also been focused primarily on offenders or the communities in which they live. Scholars and practitioners have looked to define strategies that would deter individuals from involvement in crime (see Nagin, 1998), or that would rehabilitate offenders (e.g. see Andrews et al., 1990; Sherman et al., 1997, 2002). In recent years, crime prevention efforts have often focused on the incapacitation of high rate or dangerous criminals so that they are not free to victimize people in the community (e.g. see Blumstein et al., 1986). Community-based crime prevention has also played a major role in the development of crime prevention programs. Whether looking to strengthen community bonds (Sampson et al., 1997; Sherman et al., 1997; Skogan, 1990; Tierney et al., 1995), or to enlist the community in crime prevention efforts (Skogan, 1996), the community has traditionally been viewed as an important context for crime prevention research and policy development.

While the individual and the community have long been a focus of crime research and theory, and of prevention programs, only recently have criminologists begun to explore other potential units of analysis that may contribute to our understanding and control of crime. An important catalyst for this work came from theoretical perspectives that emphasized the context of crime and the opportunities that are presented to potential offenders. In a ground breaking article on routine activities and crime, for example, Cohen and Felson (1979) suggest that a fuller understanding of crime must include a recognition that the availability of suitable crime targets and the presence or absence of capable guardians influence crime events. Around the same time, the Brantinghams published their influential book *Environmental Criminology*, which emphasized the role of place characteristics in shaping the type and frequency of human interaction (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]). Researchers at the British Home Office in a series of studies examining "situational crime prevention" also challenged the traditional focus on offenders and communities (Clarke, 1983). These studies showed that the crime situation and the opportunities it creates play significant roles in the development of crime events (Clarke, 1983).

One implication of these emerging perspectives is that crime places are an important focus of inquiry. While concern with the relationship between crime and place is not new and indeed goes back to the founding generations of modern criminology (Guerry, 1833; Quetelet, 1842 [1969]), the "micro" approach to places suggested by recent theories has just begun to be examined by criminologists.[1] Places in this "micro" context are specific locations within the larger social environments of communities and neighborhoods (Eck & Weisburd, 1995). They are sometimes defined as buildings or addresses (e.g. see Green, 1996; Sherman et al., 1989); sometimes as block faces, 'hundred blocks', or street segments (e.g. see Taylor, 1997; Weisburd et al., 2004); and sometimes as clusters of addresses, block faces or street segments (e.g. see Block et al., 1995; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995). Research in this area began with attempts to identify the relationship between specific aspects of urban design (Jeffery, 1971) or urban architecture and crime (Newman, 1972) but broadened to take into account a much larger set of characteristics of physical space and criminal opportunity (e.g. Brantingham & Brantingham, 1975; Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Duffala, 1976; Hunter, 1988; LeBeau, 1987; Mayhew et al., 1976; Rengert, 1980, 1981).

Recent studies point to the potential theoretical and practical benefits of focusing research on crime places. A number of studies, for example, suggest that there is a very significant clustering of crime at places, irrespective of the specific unit of analysis that is defined (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1999; Crow & Bull, 1975; Pierce et al., 1986; Roncek, 2000; Sherman et al., 1989; Weisburd et al., 1992; Weisburd & Green, 1994; Weisburd et al., 2004). The extent of the concentration of crime at place is dramatic. In one of the pioneering studies in this area, Lawrence Sherman and colleagues (1989) found that only three percent of the addresses in Minneapolis produced 50 percent of all calls to the police. Fifteen years later in a

[1] For a notable example of an early approach that did place emphasis on the "micro" idea of place as discussed here, see Shaw et al. (1929).

study in Seattle, Washington, Weisburd et al. (2004) reported that between four and five percent of street segments in the city accounted for 50 percent of crime incidents for each year over 14 years. These studies and others (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1984; Clarke, 1983; Curtis, 1974; Maltz et al., 1990 [2000]; Pyle, 1976; Rengert, 1980; Skogan, 1990) have established crime places as an important focus of criminological inquiry and practical crime prevention. In turn, a number of recent programs focused on specific places, often defined as crime "hot spots," have been found to have significant effects on crime and disorder (e.g. see Braga et al., 1999; Mazerolle & Terrill, 1997; Mazerolle et al., 1998; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995).

Weisburd and colleagues (2004) also point to the importance of recognizing dynamic developmental trends across micro units of geography. Using group-based trajectory analysis (Nagin, 1999, 2005; Nagin & Land, 1993), they classify street segments (as measured by address ranges) in Seattle, Washington into trajectory groups that reflect distinct longitudinal crime patterns. Some trajectories were classified as stable, a few as increasing, and some as decreasing throughout the time span. These findings are particularly important because the city of Seattle, like most large American cities in the 1990s, experienced a large crime decline. The fact that Weisburd et al. found that most street segments in a city changed little in terms of crime during that period, and that some even experienced strong crime waves serves to reinforce the salience of looking more closely at crime at very small geographic units of analysis.

While scholars have provided a strong empirical basis for the assumption that crime is strongly clustered at crime hot spots and that there are important developmental trends of crime at place, existing research provides little insight into the factors that underlie these patterns.[2]

[2] For example, we could identify only three prior published studies that specifically examined developmental patterns of crime at micro places over time. One study conducted by Spelman (1995) looked at specific places such

What characteristics of places are associated with crime hot spots, and how do the characteristics of hot spots differ from places that are relatively crime free? Do high and low crime places differ in substantive ways that can be empirically identified? What accounts for the widely differing developmental crime trends that have been identified at micro units of place over time? What leads some micro places to experience a large decline in crime trends over time, while others in the same city experience crime waves and still others vary little in crime trends during the same period? Perhaps just as critical in increasing our understanding of micro units of geography and crime and place is exploring whether crime trends observed at such geographic units are simply reflections of higher order neighborhood or community effects, or if focus on these higher order geographic areas has led us to miss important insights about the causes of crime at the micro geographic level.

Do these factors suggest specific policy proscriptions or specific crime prevention approaches on the part of the police or communities? Or do they indicate that the causes of crime declines at specific places are the result of broader societal trends that are unlikely to be the subject of manipulation by the police or the public? Are there "early warnings" that identify street segments in trajectories that experienced crime waves over time, and can these indicators be used to identify places "at risk" before crime waves begin? What factors can be seen as "risk factors" in the development of crime at micro levels of geography and which can be seen as "protective factors"?

In the following chapters we report on a large empirical study that sought to answer these critical questions about the "criminology of place" (Sherman et al., 1989). Linking 16 years of

as high schools, public housing projects, subway stations and parks in Boston, using three years of official crime information. Taylor (1999) examined crime and fear of crime at 90 street blocks in Baltimore, Maryland using a panel design with data collected in 1981 and 1994 (see also Taylor, 2001). These studies are limited only to a small number of locations and to a few specific points in time. The final study by Weisburd et al. (2004) examined all the street 'hundred blocks' in Seattle. This research extends that earlier work.

official crime data on street segments (a street block between two intersections, see Chapter 2) in Seattle to a series of data sets examining the social and physical characteristics of micro places over time we were able to extend present knowledge and explore areas that have not been the subject of systematic research to date. In this introductory chapter we wanted to provide a context for our approach to the criminology of place and our identification of data relevant for understanding and explaining crime concentrations and developmental patterns of crime. Accordingly, we turn next to a historical review of the study of place and crime, focusing in particular on the developing trend of scholars to see the "action of crime" as being in lower and lower units of geography. We then turn to the key theoretical perspectives that have been used to understand the criminology of places, in particular contrasting what we term "social disorganization theories" with "opportunity theories." Finally, in concluding we provide an overall road map to the chapters that follow.

For the last century criminologists have focused on describing the nature and causes of individual offending. In this report we turn our attention to a different problem that has only recently drawn criminological attention, but has the potential to improve our predictions of crime and also our ability to develop practical crime prevention. Our focus is on how crime distributes across very small units of geography. A Chinese proverb suggests that "neighbors next door are more important than relatives far away." The chapters that follow will argue that the action of crime research and practice should be focused much more on micro crime places.

Crime and Place[3]

Examining the history of the study of crime and place, one is struck by the continuation of themes from the earliest studies to the present day. Poverty, urbanization, and population

[3] This section of our chapter draws heavily from a paper by Weisburd, Bruinsma, and Bernasco (2009). We are especially indebted to Gerben Bruinsma for his insights and comments on the historical development of crime and place.

heterogeneity, which were to become key elements of social disorganization theories of crime, and continue to have salience in recent criminological work (e.g. see Cancino et al., 2009; Hipp, 2007a; Hipp et al., 2009; Schreck et al., 2009; Sampson et al., 2002) were key variables in the very earliest crime and place studies. Importantly, however, there has been a consistent trend over the last two centuries of moving the lens of criminological interest to smaller and smaller units of geography.

The study of crime at places began with the publication of statistics on the French population summarized in very large areas, or departments, by the French Home Office in the 1820s. The publication of the *Comptes Générales de l'administration de la justice criminelle en France* inspired many statisticians and other scholars to explore crime data in more detail. In 1829 the first geographical map of crime was published. Partly based on the *Comptes Générales de l'administration de la justice criminelle en France*, Michel-André Guerry and the Venetian cartographer Adriano Balbi published on one large sheet, three maps on the distribution of crime in France in the years 1825-1827. It was a novelty in the new field of criminology that they made use of a cartographic method of presenting statistical material. Their work was to emphasize an enduring interest of criminologists with urbanization and crime. They found that in urban areas, especially in the capital of Paris, the highest numbers of property and personal crimes could be observed. Later, when Guerry became head of the Crime Statistics Unit of the France ministry of Justice, he continued his work on mapping crime. In 1833 his influential *Essai sur la statistique morale de la France* was published (Guerry, 1833). Inspired by the Reform Movement[4] of the 19th century, Guerry examined whether poverty and density of population might lead to higher crime rates. He observed an empirical complexity. The rich north *departements* were confronted with higher property crime rates than the poor *departements*

[4] In France and England the Reform Movement focused its policy on public health and education for the poor.

in the south of France. He concluded that the level of poverty was not the direct cause of crime. Similarly, his data suggested that population density was not a cause of crime.

The French scholar Michel-André Guerry is often bracketed together with the Belgium statistician and astronomer Adolphe Quetelet who discovered the normal distribution in statistics with which deviations can be observed and calculated (Landau & Lazarsfeld, 1968). Quetelet (1831 [1984]) also used large areal units such as provinces and countries as units of analyses. He explained the higher rates of property crimes of the richer provinces by the unequal distribution of wealth: a great number of people possess nothing compared to the relatively few rich citizens (Quetelet, 1831 [1984], p. 38). Presaging the focus of late 20th century criminologists on opportunity and crime (e.g. see Cohen and Felson, 1979; Felson & Clarke, 1998), Quetelet concluded that poverty was not in itself the cause of crime, but rather that crime develops when the poor and disadvantaged "are surrounded by subjects of temptation and find themselves irritated by the continual view of luxury and of an inequality of fortune" (1831[1984], p. 38).

These French and Belgian scholars were the first who scientifically analyzed crime at place. They focused on the administrative and political borders of their time in their geographical crime analyses and began to raise key issues related to poverty, urbanization, population heterogeneity and even crime opportunities in understanding crime problems, though they did not always come to singular conclusions. Nations, regions, counties, provinces, departments and *quartiers* were the units of analyses, and they were used as a unit for systematic comparisons of crime figures. They were fully dependent on official crime data and other data arranged within these larger geographic units that the government supplied. While the early French and Belgian researchers concerned with crime and place also examined some variability of crime within cities, their overall focus was generally on larger administrative units.

Pioneers in England in the 19th Century

France and Belgium were not the only countries where geographical studies on crime were carried out in the 19th century. Members of *The Statistical Society of London* also regularly published on crime topics in their statistical journal. John Glyde (1856) was the first to question the validity of the research findings when large areas were chosen as units of analysis in geographic criminology. In his paper *Localities of crime in Suffolk* he showed very clearly that larger units of analysis hide underlying variations in crime. When smaller units than districts or *departements* were taken into account, significant differences in crime rates across smaller areas appeared. As Morris (1957, p. 58) notes: "Of the regional studies, a major criticism is that the county was the smallest territorial unit considered, but Glyde, by breaking Suffolk down into its seventeen Poor Law Unions was able to demonstrate that the 'County Aggregate' masked considerable differences between the smaller geographical units of which it was composed."

In studies of crime and place in England in the 19th century, the work of Henry Mayhew (1851 [1950]) is particularly important. He is well-known in criminology (and cited therefore) for his descriptive studies of the underworld of London in the middle Victorian Age. However, Mayhew also tried to uncover patterns in the distribution of crime in the city of London combining ethnographic methods with statistical data.[5] He interviewed prostitutes, criminals and other citizens about alcoholism, poverty, housing conditions and economic uncertainty. He was the first scholar who focused on small areas like squares, streets and buildings as a unit of analysis in criminological research, predating modern interests in micro crime places (see later) by over a century.

[5] In a sense Mayhew practiced already the methodology that Robert Park (1925 [1967]) advocated 70 years later in the 1920s in Chicago.

Chicago and the Dynamics of Cities: Neighborhoods and Square Miles as Units of Analyses

After the turn of the century, the locus of geographic research on crime moved to the United States, and especially to the city of Chicago. At the University of Chicago, a group of sociologists[6] took the initiative to undertake new research on urban problems, which centered in part, on crime (Beirne & Messerschmidt, 1991; Bulmer, 1984; Faris, 1967; Harvey, 1987). They also moved the action of crime and place research from broad comparisons across large geographic areas to more careful comparisons within cities. Interestingly, the Chicago School scholars were either not aware of or ignored until 1933 the work of 19th century crime and place researchers in Europe (Elmer, 1933). At this point a group of American sociologists, among them, Robert Park, William Thomas, Louis Wirth, Ernest Burgess, Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay took a leadership role in the development of the criminology of place, in contrast to the statisticians, criminal lawyers or psychiatrists who dominated criminology more generally in Europe (Vold et al., 2002).

William Thomas contributed to the criminology of place by introducing the important concept of *social disorganization*, referring to “a decrease of the influence of existing social rules of behavior upon individual members of the group” (Thomas, 1966, p. 3). Though the Chicago sociologists studied many of the same variables as earlier European scholars, and especially those that focused on poverty and related social problems, they concentrated on neighborhoods or communities rather than much larger administrative areas. Robert Park (1864-1944), who was recruited by Thomas, was the initiator of urban social research on crime places, shifting the unit of analyses from countries and large areas to cities and their neighborhoods (Park, 1925 [1967]). The city in his opinion was more than:

[6] As Burgess and Bogue (1964a, p.1) demonstrated, other disciplines and governmental agencies also studied urban life in Chicago extensively (also see Bulmer, 1984; Faris, 1967).

> "…a congeries of individual men and of social conveniences – streets, buildings, electric lights, tramways, and telephones, etc; something more, also, than a mere constellation of institutions and administrative devices – courts, hospitals, schools, police and, civil functionaries of various sorts. The city is, rather, a state of mind, a body of costumes and traditions, and of the organized attitudes and sentiments that inhere in these costumes and are transmitted with this tradition. The city is not, in other words, merely a physical mechanism and an artificial construction. It is involved in the vital process of the people who compose it; it is a product of nature, and particularly of human nature" (Park 1925[1967], p. 1).

Park argued that urban life must be studied in this context in terms of "its physical organization, its occupations, and its culture" and especially the changes therein (Park, 1925 [1967], p. 3). Neighborhoods in his view were the elementary form of cohesion in urban life.

His younger colleague, Ernest Burgess, drawing from an inventory of price changes in housing values in Chicago areas, developed a concentric zone model of the distribution of social problems and crime for cities (especially for Chicago) (Burgess, 1925 [1967]).[7] Burgess suggested that Chicago included five concentric[8] zones, each containing various neighborhoods, four of them situated around 'The Loop' (the business center of the city): "the typical processes of the expansion of the city can best be illustrated, perhaps, by a series of concentric circles, which may be numbered to designate both the successive zones of urban extension and the types of areas differentiated in the process of expansion" (Burgess, 1925 [1967], p. 50). Burgess' unit of analyses was a series of neighborhoods within cities that share similar characteristics. He assumed that depending on the distances to the center and the special features of these zones, the levels of crime would vary.

Clifford Shaw was one of the first Chicago sociologists to carry out extensive empirical research on the geographical distribution of crime on the basis of Burgess' zone model (Shaw et

---

[7] The real estate agent had discovered zones in the city of Chicago when he made up an inventory of price changes of houses and real estate. He contacted Burgess regarding his findings, which led to the now famous geographic model of crime and social problems in the urban context.

[8] In reality only half circles because Chicago is situated at the border of Lake Michigan.

al., 1929). This study can be seen as a landmark in the history of crime and place studies because of its detailed data collection, advanced methods and innovative statistical tools. Based on the concentric zone model of Burgess, he studied the distribution of truancy of young people, juvenile delinquents and adult offenders in Chicago. Assisted by young researchers like Henry McKay, Frederick Zorbaugh and Leonard Cottrell, he took natural areas as units of analyses (Abbott, 1997) but in more detail than ever before in these kinds of studies.[9] Shaw introduced new units of analyses. First, he introduced *spot maps* by plotting the home address of thousands of offenders on a map of Chicago. Second, he combined the offender address data with census data to created *delinquency rate maps* of square mile areas. And finally, he constructed *radial maps* and *zone maps*, which displayed delinquency rates at regular distances from the city center (Snodgras, 1976).

In the same year Shaw's research assistant Harvey Zorbaugh published his PhD in which he compared a slum neighborhood (The Lower North Side) with a wealthy area (Gold Coast) in Chicago, both situated in close proximity (Zorbaugh, 1929). In this more qualitative study, Zorbaugh presented only a few maps, all of them less detailed in information than Shaw's study. However, his research demonstrated clearly that two areas in close physical proximity were not necessarily similar and thus physical and social distances do not always coincide. Zorbaugh's work made it clear that administrative and political areas and social spaces are not identical. Depending on the size of the area, a variety of social communities with different identities can

[9] It is interesting to note that a similar approach was taken by Cyrill Burt (1883-1971) who studied the location of the home addresses of delinquent boys and girls in the years 1922 and 1923 in London. Following the Chicago School findings, he noted that the highest concentrations in crime were found in three neighborhoods situated closely to the city centre: Holborn, Finsbury, and Shoreditch (Burt, 1924[1944]). According to Burt, these oldest but not poorest neighborhoods of London were of strategic importance for offenders, because they were situated closely to attractive crime targets in the inner city and - if necessary – they could function as a place to hide from the police.

exist. Importantly, he concluded that the smaller the unit of analysis, the greater the chance of a homogeneous community.

In 1942, Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay published their magnum opus, *Juvenile Delinquency and Urban Areas*, in which they not only presented their geographical and etiological analyses of crime rates in the city of Chicago, but also those of other cities: Philadelphia, Boston, Cincinnati, Cleveland, and Richmond. In all of the studied cities, they found similar patterns in the geographical distribution of crime. The rapid changes in the city of Chicago over a long period of time enabled them also to study the effects of the dynamics of the city on crime and other phenomena. One of their findings was that: "The data on trends also demonstrate with equal sharpness the rapid rise in rates of delinquents in certain areas when a population with a different history and different institutions and values takes over areas in a very short period of time" (Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969], p. 382). This work established the idea of population heterogeneity as a key factor in the study of crime and place and criminology more generally.

The Chicago studies inspired criminologists to carry out empirical crime and place research in other cities (e.g. see Burgess & Bogue, 1964a, 1964b).[10] At the same time, as the decades passed, empirical and methodological critics of the Chicago approach began to emerge (Lander, 1954). First, it was argued that Shaw and colleagues (1929) and Shaw & McKay (1942 [1969]) could not distinguish between the dwelling place of the offender and the location where he or she committed a crime, neglecting the variability in the mobility of offenders (see also Boggs, 1965). Secondly, by relying on official crime figures, their research was seen as biased

[10] Interesting to mention here is the relatively unknown policy report of Edwin Sutherland (1883-1950) on the geographical distribution of juvenile delinquency of the city of Bloomington, Indiana (Sutherland, 1937). Inspired by the work of Shaw and McKay and using the zone model of Burgess, he revealed like in Chicago, certain delinquent neighborhoods with high numbers of adult and juvenile offenders.

because offenders of the lower class had (and still have) a greater chance to be processed in the criminal justice system (e.g. see Beirne & Messerschmidt, 1991; Chilton, 1964; Gordon, 1967). Thirdly, delinquency rates after 1945 in Chicago did not conform to the distribution patterns of Shaw and McKay's early assumptions (Bursik, 1984, 1986). European studies also showed contradicting results. Morris (1957) examined the offender rates of the county of Croydon, but could not confirm the zone model of Burgess. Twenty years later, Morris' findings were replicated in the city of Sheffield (Baldwin & Bottoms, 1976).

Another criticism that is key to our focus on micro units of analysis is that brought by Robinson (1950) who discussed the use of ecological correlations in geographical studies like that of Shaw and McKay (1942 [1969]). According to Robinson (1950, p. 351) the object of an ecological correlation is a group of persons, not a person: "…the individual correlation depends on the internal frequencies of the within-areas individual correlations, while the ecological correlation depends upon the marginal frequencies of the within-areas individual correlations" (Robinson, 1950, p. 354). He concluded that ecological correlations cannot validly be used as substitutes for individual correlations. Such an ecological fallacy leads to meaningless conclusions. Looking back, these empirical and methodological criticisms diminished the attention of criminologists in studies of crime and place for almost 20 years.

Reemerging interest in communities

In the 1980s, Albert J. Reiss Jr. was to encourage a group of younger criminologists to return to the interests of the Chicago School where he had received his Ph.D. in 1949. Reiss (1986) saw the criminological tradition as including two major theoretical positions, one that focused on individuals and a second that focused on crimes. Communities and crime was a main focus of the latter tradition and he sought to rekindle criminological interest in understanding variability of crime within and across communities. Editing an early volume in the *Crime and Justice* series, Reiss and Michael Tonry (1986) sought to bring *Communities and Crime* to the forefront of criminological interests.

Reiss did not see the new interest as simply mimicking the insights of the Chicago School criminologists. Rather, he sought to raise a new set of questions about crime at community that had been ignored in earlier decades: “Recent work on communities and crime has turned to the observation that Shaw and McKay neglected: not only do communities change their structures over time but so often do their crime rates, a recognition that communities as well as individuals have crime careers” (Reiss, 1986, p. 19). This volume and other work developed in this period drew upon the identification of neighborhoods and communities to expand insights about the development of crime (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Bursik, 1986; Bursik & Webb, 1982; Clarke, 1983; Hunter, 1988; Kobrin & Scherman, 1981; LeBeau, 1987; Rengert, 1980, 1981; Roncek & Bell, 1981; Sampson, 1985; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Scherman & Kobrin, 1986; Skogan, 1986).

Smith (1986), for example, identified neighborhood variation in the behavior of the police, suggesting the importance of place in understanding not only the etiology of crime, but also the etiology of criminal justice. Skogan brought new insights not only to our understanding of the interaction of community characteristics and policing (Skogan, 1987), but also more generally to the developmental processes that led to the emergence of crime and disorder in urban communities (Skogan, 1990). More recently, scholars led by Robert Sampson have used a focus on the community to draw new insights into developmental crime patterns, arguing that social cohesion within communities and shared expectations of community members combine to affect both crime and social disorder (Sampson & Raudenbush, 1999; Sampson et al., 1997). These insights are examined in our work as they relate to micro units of crime and place.

Consistent with Reiss' call for investigation of the criminal careers of communities, Bursik (1986; see also Bursik & Webb, 1982) revisited crime in Chicago neighborhoods over time and challenged earlier views of the stability of crime within neighborhoods and communities, arguing that stability in crime patterns was a result of long term stability in the social characteristics of places, and that instability in such patterns would also lead to instability in crime rates. Similarly, Schuerman and Kobrin (1986) identified stability and variability in criminal careers of communities, focusing on the residences of juvenile delinquents as had Shaw and McKay (1942 [1969]). Using the number of residential addresses of officially known delinquents by census tracts in Los Angeles as an indicator of aggregate crime, they found three general patterns that led to high crime rates in 1970. The first pattern they termed "emerging", and referred to those clusters that were relatively crime free in 1950 but had moderate to high crime in 1960 and 1970, respectively. The second pattern, "transitional", refers to those clusters that had moderately high crime in 1950, a higher level 1960 and an even higher level in 1970. The last pattern is referred to as "enduring" and refers to those clusters that had persistently high crime rates at all points in time. The vast majority of census tracts within the clusters were designated as having enduring crime rates over the time span, with fewer census tracts in the transitional and emerging categories.

Interestingly, though the approach of the Chicago School called for the identification of units of geography that would not be drawn from administrative data collection, but from the social units that defined neighborhoods or communities, this new generation of scholars concerned with communities and crime have generally used officially defined units for drawing their data and conclusions. In this case, the US Census definitions, most often census tracts or the smaller census block groups, have become the main source for defining the units of geography that are the focus of research in the US, despite the fact that the goals of the census in creating physically contiguous geographic units are often inconsistent with the goals of community and crime researchers (see Rengert & Lockwood, 2009). Often such studies will simply assume that census units such as census tracts reflect actual community boundaries (Hipp, 2007b), though some scholars in this area combine census units with the idea of creating boundaries of communities that are more consistent with the theoretical interests of researchers (e.g. see Sampson et al., 1997). Importantly, this new focus on communities and crime often led to the study of much smaller geographic units of analysis than had drawn the interests of the early Chicago School scholars.

The Emphasis on Micro Units of Geography in the "Criminology of Place"

While a reemergence of interest in communities and crime had been one important source for renewed study of crime and place in recent decades, the 1980s produced a more radical reformulation of the unit of geography that should form the basis of crime place studies, continuing to push the unit of geographic analysis to a more micro level. Traditional criminological interest in place has focused on higher level geographic units such as regions, cities, communities or neighborhoods. One reason for this focus on macro levels of geography is simply that data were often not available at geographic levels lower than the standard administrative or census divisions. But even when data were on hand, statistical and analytic tools were not readily available for linking crime easily to micro units of geography.

Certainly, the difficulty of mapping crimes to specific places and of analyzing geographic data was a factor that prevented the study of crime at micro units of geography, but another barrier was the lack of consistent theoretical interest in micro places as contrasted with research on individual criminality, or crime across macro geographic units (Weisburd & McEwen, 1997; Weisburd et al., 2004). Such theoretical interest was not to emerge until the late 1970s and 1980s, about the time that computerized crime mapping and more sophisticated geographic statistical tools were to emerge (Weisburd & McEwen, 1997). A new group of theorists challenged traditional criminological interests and began to focus more on the "processes operating at the moment of the crime's occurrence" (Birkbeck & LaFree, 1993, p. 114). One influential critique that was to have strong influence on the development of interest in micro units of geography was brought by Lawrence Cohen and Marcus Felson (1979). They argued that the emphasis placed on individual motivation in criminological theory failed to recognize the importance of other elements of the crime equation. Specifically, that crime rates could be affected by changing the nature of targets or of guardianship, irrespective of the nature of criminal motivations. The "routine activities" perspective they presented established the spatial and temporal context of criminal events as an important focus of study.

Canadian criminologists Patricia Brantingham and Paul Brantingham (1993a) made the connection between routine activities and place even more directly in their development of "crime pattern theory." Crime pattern theory focuses directly upon places by examining how the transportation networks and land use patterns influence human activity which in turn shapes the locations and timing of offender-victim convergences. They identified the important role that facilities play as crime attractors and crime generators, places that attract people because of their reputation for criminal opportunity and places that simply attract large numbers of people, respectively (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1995). In addition, they focus on human activity and how it influences both where targets cluster and how targets come to the attention of offenders.

These factors, in turn, influence the distribution of crime events over time and across places. Like Cohen and Felson, Brantingham and Brantingham see routine human social and economic activities as a critical feature of the crime equation, but in this case the place is made an explicit rather than implicit part of this equation, providing a “backcloth” which influences human behavior.

Building on work by urban planners, other researchers focused on environmental design issues (Appleyard, 1981; Jacobs, 1961). Design-centered strategies such as “defensible space” (Jeffery, 1971) and “Crime Prevention through Environmental Design” (Newman, 1972, 1975) identified changes in the physical environment to improve surveillance, control access, and encourage territoriality by both residents and users. By changing the physical environment, one could ‘set the stage’ to discourage criminal activity.

Drawing upon similar themes, British scholars led by Ronald Clarke began to explore the theoretical and practical possibilities of “situational crime prevention” in the 1980s (Clarke, 1983, 1992, 1995; Cornish & Clarke, 1986). Their focus was on criminal contexts and the possibilities for reducing the opportunities for crime in very specific situations. Their approach turned traditional crime prevention theory on its head. At the center of their crime equation was opportunity, and they sought to change opportunity rather than reform offenders. In situational crime prevention, more often than not, “opportunity makes the thief” (Felson & Clarke, 1998). This was in sharp contrast to the traditional view that the thief simply took advantage of a very large number of potential opportunities. Importantly, in a series of case studies situational crime prevention advocates showed that reducing criminal opportunities in very specific contexts can lead to crime reduction and prevention (Clarke, 1992, 1995).

These perspectives led researchers to consider a much more micro unit of place than had been the focus of earlier studies concerned with how crime varies across places. We have seen this is part of a more general evolution since the 19th century, as criminologists developed interest in smaller and smaller units of geography. Places in this "micro" context are specific locations within the larger social environments of communities and neighborhoods (Eck & Weisburd, 1995). They are, as we noted earlier, sometimes defined as buildings or addresses (e.g. see Green, 1996; Sherman et al., 1989); sometimes as block faces, 'hundred blocks', or street segments (e.g. see Taylor, 1997; Weisburd et al., 2004); and sometimes as clusters of addresses, block faces or street segments (e.g. see Block et al., 1995; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995). In 1989, Sherman and colleagues coined the term the "criminology of place," to describe this new approach that drew its theoretical grounding from routine activities and situational crime prevention to emphasize the importance of micro crime places in the etiology of crime.

Empirical studies have strongly confirmed the importance of micro crime places as a focus of criminological inquiry. In a ground breaking paper in 1989, Sherman et al. examined the concentration of emergency crime calls to the police across addresses in the city of Minneapolis. They found that less than four percent of the street addresses in Minneapolis produced more than half of all crime calls. Their proposal that crime was concentrated in hot spots in urban areas has now been confirmed in a series of studies conducted in different cities using different definitions of hot spot areas (see Brantingham & Brantingham, 1999; Eck et al., 2000; Roncek, 2000; Spelman, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1994; Weisburd & Mazerolle, 2000; Weisburd et al., 1992; Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press). For example, Weisburd and Mazerolle (2000) found that approximately 20 percent of all disorder crimes and 14 percent of crimes against persons were concentrated in just 56 drug crime hot spots in Jersey City, New

Jersey, an area that comprised only 4.4 percent of street segments and intersections in the city. Similarly, Eck et al. (2000) found that the most active 10 percent of places (in terms of crime) in the Bronx and Baltimore accounted for approximately 32 percent of a combination of robberies, assaults, burglaries, grand larcenies and auto thefts.

Weisburd et al. (2004) extended this work on crime concentrations by examining developmental trends in crime at micro places over time. Examining crime at street segments in Seattle over a 14 year period, Weisburd, Bushway, Lum and Yang (2004) found not only that there was a very high concentration of crime at places in a specific time period, but that the concentration of crime at micro units of geography is relatively stable over time. Importantly, Weisburd et al. (2004) also found that there were distinct developmental trends at street segments, which suggested significant variability in the nature of crime trends over time at micro levels of geography. Using group-based trajectory analysis (Nagin, 1999, 2005; Nagin & Land, 1993) they identified 18 separate developmental trajectories. Despite the fact that Seattle, as other major American cities at the time (Blumstein & Wallman, 2000), had experienced a 24 percent crime drop during the study period, the bulk of these trajectories and the vast majority of the street segments in the city experienced little change in the 14 years examined. The crime “drop” in Seattle was driven by only 14 percent of the street segments in the study. And despite the overall crime decline, some two percent of street segments in the city evidenced stark increases in crime: while crime in the city overall declined 24 percent, in these increasing trajectory segments it increased fully 42 percent.

The finding that street segments in a city evidence different developmental trends reinforces the importance of looking more carefully at the dynamic processes that lead to variation in crime at very small units of geography. It is not possible to simply speak about community or citywide trends in crime, and to try to explain them, if indeed within such areas there are strongly different trends. What is needed in this case is an explanation for crime trends at such micro crime places. What is it about specific micro places that lead them to be free of crime? What leads other street segments to be chronic crime hot spots? To date, criminologists concerned with micro crime places or crime hot spots have generally not been able to empirically examine the risk factors or causal mechanisms that underlie developmental trends of crime at place. This is the main focus of our report and its main contribution to our understanding of crime.

Theoretical Foundations for Understanding Crime at Place

As we noted above, crime and place scholars have looked primarily to opportunity theories, specifically *routine activity theory* (see Cohen & Felson, 1979) as an explanation for why crime trends vary at places and as a basis for constructing practical crime prevention approaches (Eck, 1995; Sherman et al., 1989; Weisburd et al., 2004). Cohen and Felson (1979) and later Felson (1994) suggested that crime trends over time could be explained by understanding structural changes in the routine activities, movements and interactions of individuals. Routine activities are relevant to the explanation of crime because these activities, if influenced, could affect the convergence of three necessary elements for crimes to occur: a motivated offender, a suitable target, and the absence of a capable guardian. If any of these three elements could be blocked or transformed by changing routines, then so too could crime rates be affected. Cross-sectional studies examining the factors that predict crime at micro places generally confirm this relationship (see Roncek & Bell, 1981; Roncek & Maier, 1991; Smith et al., 2000).

A theory of routine activities at crime hot spots (see Sherman et al., 1989) might explain the variability in developmental trends represented by increasing and decreasing crime trajectories at micro places (see Schmid, 1960a, 1960b; Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]). It may be that declining trajectories are places where aspects of routine activities that prevent crime have been encouraged, perhaps because the police have focused more attention on them or citizens have increased elements of guardianship. Increasing crime trajectories could represent places where crime opportunities have increased, perhaps as a result of the introduction of new targets through urban renewal, or motivated offenders through the introduction of easy transportation access. In this regard environmental criminologists have focused on the ways in which changes in the "urban form" of places can influence opportunities and routine activities (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991], 1984). A variety of studies have been conducted that link physical characteristics of street blocks to crime levels (Duffala, 1976; Painter, 1993; Roman, 2002; Roncek & Bell, 1981; Roncek & Maier, 1991; Roncek et al., 1981).

One recent study has provided initial empirical data suggesting the salience of the routine activities perspective for understanding developmental trends at street segments. Weisburd et al. (in press) examined "juvenile arrest incidents" in Seattle Washington between 1989 and 2002 by identifying every crime incident in which a juvenile was arrested. Their work replicated earlier findings regarding crime incidents more generally by identifying distinct developmental trends as well as strong concentration of crime at a small number of crime hot spots. Importantly, they were also able to show that juvenile crime was heavily concentrated at juvenile activity spaces such as malls, schools and restaurants.

While opportunity theories have been a central feature of recent interest in crime hot spots, we think that it is important in our study to also consider a group of other theories that have been critical in the explanation of crime at larger units of geography. As we described above, theories of social disorganization have played a critical role in understanding communities and crime, and indeed the key variables of this perspective have been an enduring part of crime and place inquiry from the early 19th century. A key question is whether such theories have relevance for understanding crime at micro units of geography such as street segments.

A straightforward application of social disorganization and other community-based theories of crime would assume that there are strong neighborhood or community wide trends that are influencing more micro geographic units such as street segments. Indeed, the idea of social disorganization was, as noted earlier, linked by the Chicago School to the dynamic processes that occur in communities, and in this sense we would expect the primary influence of social disorganization to be a common one in larger areas in which street segments or other micro geographic crime place units are found. This would suggest, for example, the concentration of crime hot spots in specific neighborhoods as larger neighborhood trends of poverty, social heterogeneity and low collective efficacy (see Morenoff et al., 2001; Sampson et al., 1997; Sampson & Groves, 1989) influence the people who live on street segments in those areas.

But as we illustrate later in this report, there is very strong street by street heterogeneity in crime at the street segments we study (see Chapter 6). Indeed, hot spots of crime are found near cool spots, and there are hot spots throughout the city landscape and not simply in specific high crime neighborhoods. While our work does suggest that larger area effects are important, an issue we discuss in detail later in this volume, there is much variability among street segments in the city that cannot be explained by larger area trends suggested by social disorganization theory. The question is whether the theory of social disorganization also has relevance to these more micro units of analysis.

We began our work with the assumption that the underlying constructs of social disorganization may also operate at micro units of geography. For example, people who live in cities are well aware of the fact that a movement from one block to the next can reflect major structural changes in terms of housing, shopping, and even the types of people who live and hang out on a block. We set out to see whether there was variability in characteristics reflecting social disorganization at the street segment level. As we detail in Chapter 3 there is indeed significant street by street variability in such factors, a fact that reinforces our approach of examining whether social disorganization as a theoretical perspective has salience not simply at the community level but also at crime places such as street segments.

In this context we might expect for example, relying on studies of communities, that there would be a stability of crime patterns where there is an underlying social and demographic stability at places (Bursik & Webb, 1982). And declining crime rates could be explained by stabilization over time as micro places establish themselves after periods of rapid social and economic change (Bursik & Webb, 1982). Increasing crime rates at micro places, accordingly, may be explained by sudden instability and change in the social and economic characteristics of places.

Absent detailed empirical data at the micro place unit of analysis, scholars have only been able to speculate on the specific factors that predict developmental trends of crime at micro places over time. Nonetheless, both for crime prevention practice and policy it is crucial to identify the specific factors that lead to increasing, decreasing and stable crime trends at micro places. If opportunity and routine activities variables are important factors, for example, in understanding why specific micro places evidence crime drops or crime waves over time, then it would encourage continued focus on immediate and proximate causes of crime that can be influenced by the police and the community. However, if social disorganization variables explain the crime patterns we observe, formal social controls, such as hot spots policing, may have less potential for affecting the trajectories of crime at places. If the primary causal mechanism underlying crime trajectories can be found in factors such as racial heterogeneity and economic deprivation, all linked to the social disorganization perspective, then perhaps a much wider set of social interventions would be required to change the form of trajectories at crime hot spots. Then again, this finding could also provide support for micro level efforts to improve the socio-economic status and collective efficacy block by block. Of course, it may be that a combination of routine activities and social disorganization variables influence crime patterns at micro places (see Smith et al., 2000), and thus a complex combination of interventions might be required to have a meaningful and long-term impact on crime at place.

What Follows

In the next chapter we introduce our empirical study of crime at place. We begin by describing our original collection of crime data in Seattle, which had archived crime incidents since 1989 linked to specific geographic coordinates. We detail our strategy for defining these data, and for linking them to street segments (street blocks between intersections). We then describe how we defined and then collected detailed information linked to the street segment level reflecting perspectives focusing primarily on opportunity factors (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Cohen & Felson, 1979); and those concerned primarily with social structure (e.g. Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Shaw et al., 1929). The Seattle project is the first major study to allow for a comprehensive examination of the factors that predict variability in crime at micro place.

Much is known about the distribution of social disorganization and social capital at macro levels across the urban landscape (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson, 1985; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson & Morenoff, 2004; Sampson et al., 1997; Sampson et al., 2002; Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]; Shaw et al., 1929). However, in Chapter 3 we provide the first examination of which we are aware of this distribution at a micro place level such as the street segment. Earlier geographic studies have by necessity been focused on much larger units, such as census tracts, for which social data are available. Our study collected data reflecting many elements of social disorganization and social capital at the street segment level including (but not limited to) property value, race, voting behavior, unsupervised teens, physical disorder, and urbanization. Such data allow us to examine the distribution of social disorganization and social capital at a micro place geographic level. Importantly, a key question here is whether there are hot spots of social disorganization at street segments, as there are hot spots of crime. In later chapters we will examine these relationships directly.

In Chapter 4 we examine the distribution of routine activities and crime opportunities at street segments. How do routine activities in a city differ across place and time? Are places in which routine activities encourage crime likely to be spread across the city, or are such places clustered in certain areas? Are there hot spots of opportunities for crime as there are hot spots of crime? What of other environmental and situational opportunities for crime? Are they similarly structured? This chapter allows us to answer a number of critical questions that have been asked about the distribution of routine activities and crime opportunities across the urban landscape. For example, early criminologists argued that crime opportunities were not a useful focus of study because they were so numerous in the urban environment (Sutherland, 1947). Are criminal opportunities so widely spread as to make focus of crime prevention at places useless? More generally, this chapter will allow for the first systematic examination of the distribution of routine activities and crime opportunities at micro crime places across time. Data described in this chapter include (but are not limited to) the location of public facilities, street lighting, public transportation, street networks, land use and business size.

In Chapter 5 we turn to the key question of the concentration of crime at place. Our work here replicates that conducted in prior studies (see Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press), and lays the groundwork for linking social disorganization and opportunity factors to crime trends. It begins by illustrating the general crime decline that was found in Seattle between 1989 and the first years of this century. It shows that crime at street segments in Seattle is highly concentrated. The chapter then uses statistical tools (primarily group-based trajectory analysis) to group street segments into developmental patterns (such as increasing, stable and decreasing) over time.

Chapter 6 examines the geographical distribution of these trajectory patterns and then asks to what extent there is clustering of specific crime patterns in specific areas. This chapter deals with the crucial "geography" of developmental patterns of crime. Most importantly, do our data suggest that a large part of the variability of crime is located at the micro place level (i.e. street segment in our study)? Or is there evidence of strong area trends in our data? Our findings show that area trends do influence micro level trends (suggesting the relevance of traditional community level theories of crime). Nonetheless, they also show that the bulk of variability at the micro place level is not explained by trends at larger geographic levels. These findings reinforce the importance of studying the causes of crime at micro places.

In Chapter 7 we explore the basic relationships between social disorganization and opportunity variables identified in Chapters 3 and 4 and the developmental patterns of crime described in Chapter 5. What factors seem to be related to increasing or decreasing developmental trends? Are hot spots of high social disorganization or high crime opportunity street segments linked to hot spots of crime? What are risk factors in terms of increasing rates of crime, and protective factors in terms of crime declines? We then develop an overall model of factors that influence developmental trends of crime at place in Chapter 8. This model allows us to compare and contrast the importance of social disorganization and opportunity theories for understanding crime at place. Which theories have the most explanatory power in understanding overall trends, or in explaining specific developmental processes?

Finally, in Chapter 9 we summarize our findings, and describe their implications for theory and practice in crime and justice. Criminology has been focused on people or places at macro levels of geography. Our work demonstrates the importance of the development of a "criminology of place," to complement traditional criminological perspectives. We also examine how our findings change what is presently known about crime and place. Moreover, we ask whether existing theories are sufficient to explain developmental trends of crime at micro places. Finally, we focus on the implications of our work for policy and practice. What are the policy proscriptions suggested by our study? How can they be implemented?

Chapter 2: Context, Unit of Analysis, and Data

Longitudinal studies of individuals have been a key part of the development of knowledge about criminality. In the 1930s and 1940s Sheldon and Eleanor Glueck followed youths released from a Massachusetts Reformatory for five, 10 and then 15 years (Glueck & Glueck, 1950, 1968), drawing important insights about the idea of criminal careers. Recently John Laub and Robert Sampson were able to track these offenders much later in life, again developing important criminological insights, especially about the relevance of transitions in later years for the development of criminality and for desistence from criminal involvement (Laub & Sampson, 2003; Sampson & Laub, 1993). The first study to look at factors affecting offending in a cohort (as opposed to a sample of delinquents or offenders) was likely conducted by Nils Christie (1960) in Norway.[1] But it was Marvin Wolfgang's groundbreaking examination of a birth Cohort in Philadelphia first published in 1972 that was to lead to increasing interest in how criminality develops over time. Wolfgang's finding that a relatively small part of criminal population produced a very large proportion of crime was to strongly influence thinking and about policy crime. Importantly, a series of large cohort studies have been developed in recent years in both the US (e.g. see Browning et al., 1999; Elliott et al., 1985; Loeber et al., 2001) and Europe (e.g. see Blokland et al., 2005; Farrington, 1995; Tiihonen et al., 1997; Wikström, 2006).

While the developmental processes underlying individual offending have become a key area of interest in criminology, little attention has been given to the question of the distribution of crime at micro places over time. We could identify only four published studies that

[1] This observation is made by Wolfgang (1991), who notes that Christie's dissertation has never been translated from Norwegian and published in English.

specifically examined this issue longitudinally. One study conducted by Spelman (1995) looks at specific places such as high schools, public housing projects, subway stations and parks in Boston, using 3 years of official crime information. Dividing his data set into 28-day periods, Spelman used a pooled time series cross-sectional design to examine the sources of variability over time and across the types of sites examined. His findings again replicate the more general assumption of a concentration of crime at specific hot spots, with the "worst 10 percent of locations and times accounting for about 50 percent of all calls for service" (Spelman, 1995, p. 129). But he also finds evidence of a very high degree of stability of crime over time at the places he examines. Taylor (1999) also reports evidence of a high degree of stability of crime at place over time, examining crime and fear of crime at 90 street blocks in Baltimore, Maryland using a panel design with data collected in 1981 and 1994 (see also Robinson et al., 2003; Taylor, 2001). Finally, Weisburd et al. (2004) and Weisburd et al. (in press) examine crime trends generally and specifically juvenile crime trends longitudinally in Seattle, Washington, the site of the present study as described earlier.

We thought that existing knowledge on the concentration of crime at place, and the initial research reported by Weisburd et al. (2004) regarding developmental patterns of crime in Seattle over a 14 year period, justified a much larger and systematic review of the development of crime at place that would link characteristics of places to trajectories of crime at place. We recognized at the outset that this project would be a difficult one to develop, and in trying to gain knowledge about places over time we were often striking out "in the dark" in trying to collect data in new ways and from sources that had not been the subject of criminological inquiry earlier. In this chapter we describe our approach to the collection of data about places in our site, Seattle, Washington. We begin with a description of Seattle, and the reasons for choosing it as a site for this first large scale longitudinal study of crime at place. We then turn to the definition of our unit of analysis—the street segment—and how we worked to have the theoretical idea of the street segment fit with the empirical realities of the geography of Seattle. Finally we detail the data sources that we used in our study. A retrospective study like ours is by necessity dependent on data that is archived by government or private sources. We think it important at the outset to detail those sources and the data we drew from them.

Why Seattle?

Seattle makes a good choice for a longitudinal study of places for several reasons. First, as a large city it has enough geography, population and crime to undertake a micro level study. Having enough crime has never been a trivial issue but it becomes even more critical as we progress down the geographic cone of resolution to the street segment. Simply put, in a small city or one that had very low levels of crime it would have been difficult to identify significant variation in crime trends at such a low level of geography.

However there are many cities that have robust crime trends, large enough geographies for systematic study, and larger populations. These were key issues but not the most important in finally identifying Seattle as a study site. The distinguishing feature of Seattle was the length of the time for which they had crime data available. Weisburd, Lum and Yang (2004) originally identified Seattle's unusually long crime data record. In preparation for their study, they undertook a nationwide study examining the availability of historical records of large police departments. Seattle emerged as the best candidate (see Weisburd, Lum, & Yang, 2004 for more details). Moreover, Seattle was led at the time of their study and our own by an innovative Chief of Police, R. Gil Kerlikowske, now the Director of the Office of National Drug Control

Policy, who offered to facilitate the collection of data both from the police department and other government sources in Seattle.

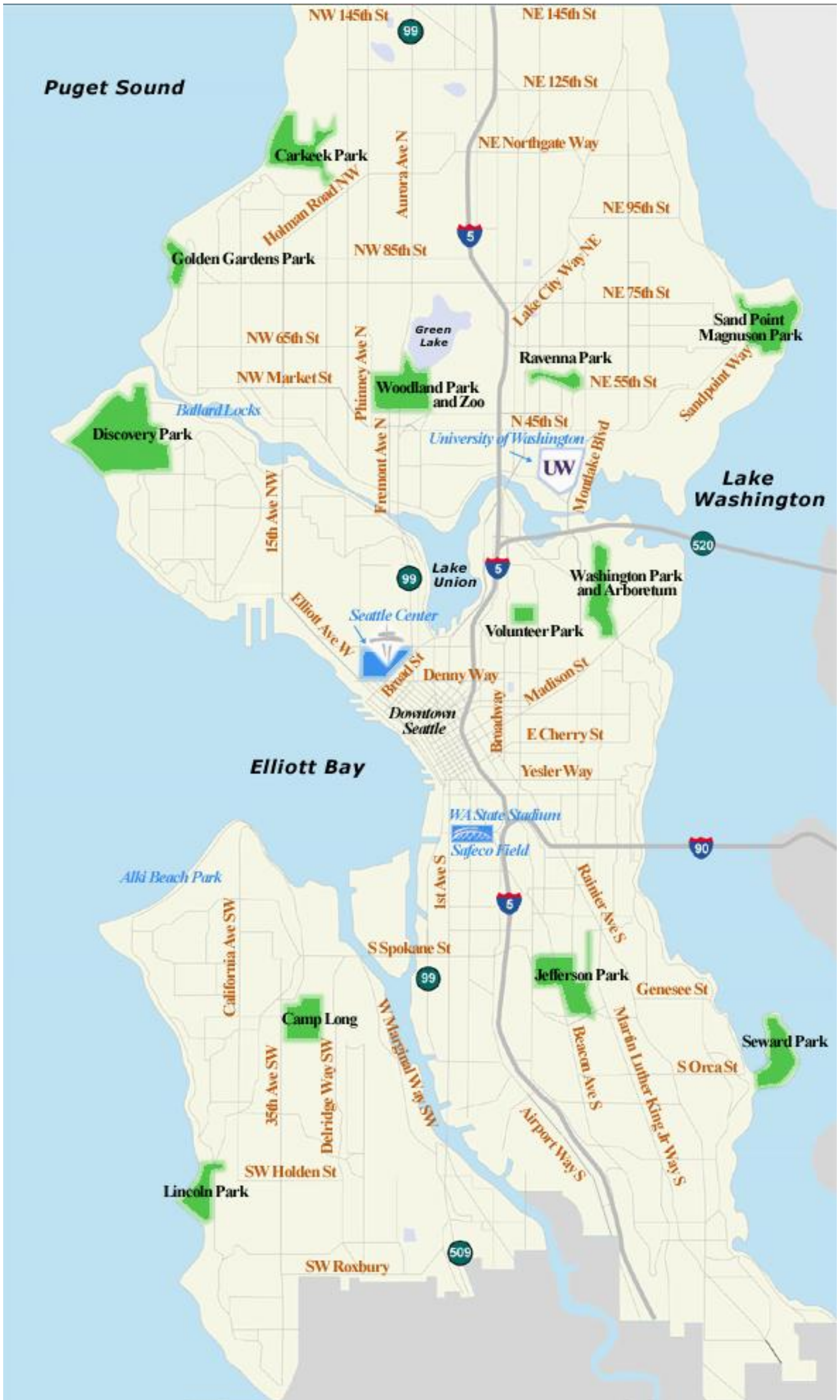
We undertook two major challenges in studying Seattle. The first was the decision to focus on micro level places, and more specifically, street segments as defined in the behavioral settings research (more on this below in the Units of Analysis section). This required that we collect our data at the address-level so that they could be aggregated to the street block. It also required substantial editing to the Seattle street centerline file to ensure our definition of a street block was reflected in the line segments used for analysis.

The second decision was to collect longitudinal data about places to match the time period for which we had crime data. Retrospective data collection of longitudinal information proved to be more challenging than we would have ever dreamed possible. If cross-sectional, the study could have been completed with substantially less time and effort. However, cross-sectional data would not have allowed us to explore our core hypotheses.

Seattle, Washington

Seattle lies on the west coast of the United States. It is bounded on the west by the Puget Sound and on the east by Lake Washington (see Figure 2.1). This unusual geography has significant ramifications for human activity patterns. The western border of the city is permeable only to water traffic (via a ferry system). Automobile and bus traffic can enter Seattle from the east using one of two bridges. It is only on the two shortest borders (on the north and the south) that typical levels of porosity in boundaries are found. This attribute of Seattle cuts down on concerns about spatial edge effects. Seattle is long and thin, giving it a noticeable north-south orientation.

Figure 2.1: Map of Seattle



Source: City of Seattle (http://www.seattle.gov/html/citizen/maps_seattle.htm)

Once inside Seattle, there are additional natural barriers in the form of waterways. The southern section of the city is split northwest to southeast by the Duwamish Waterway (three roads cross it). The northern section of the city is split from the central by a waterway consisting of Salmon Bay, Lake Union, Portage Bay, and Union Bay). There are six roads that cross the northern waterway. These natural barriers are extremely important in understanding human activity patterns. Altogether Seattle is 91.57 square miles in area. About 3.07 square miles is water and the rest is land (Seattle City Government, 2009).

The study period we are using is 1989 – 2004. It may be helpful in understanding our results if we first examine Seattle's profile at the beginning of our study (1990) and in 2000. In 1990, population in the city had begun to rebound for the first time in decades, reaching 516,259. This upward trend continued over the next decade and by the 2000 census there were 563,374 people living in Seattle (U.S. Census Bureau, 1990, 2000).

In addition to an increasing population, the city of Seattle had another unusual characteristic, its racial profile. In 1990, 75.3% of the residents of Seattle (388,858) were white, 10.1% (51,948) were African American, 11.8% (60,819) were Asian or Pacific Islander, and less than 3% were other races (U.S. Census Bureau, 1990). This unusual race distribution persisted in 2000 when 70.1% (394,889) were white, 8.4% (47,541) were African American, 13.1% (73,910) were Asian or Pacific Islander, and once again other races made up less than 3% of the population (U.S. Census Bureau, 2000). According to the U.S. Census Bureau (2000), Seattle has the 10th largest Asian population in the country.

In the time period immediately preceding and during our study, Seattle endured three major economic boom and bust cycles followed by growth periods. These occurred in the early

1980s, early 1990s, and between 2001 and 2004 (HistoryLink.org Online Encyclopedia of Washington State History, 2009). During the early 1990s, Boeing went through yet another round of downsizing. Fortunately, by the end of the decade Boeing seemed to have recovered. Microsoft Corporation continued to grow in size and influence during the 1990s. In 2001, recession hit Seattle harder than it had in at least the previous 30 years (King County Budget Office, 2004). Contractions at Boeing led to massive layoffs. These problems were compounded by the attacks of 9/11/2001 and the dot com bust in 2002. Despite an overall negative economic climate, Seattle continued to add population and in 2004 had an estimated population of 572,600 (Office of Financial Management, 2008).

Unit of Analysis

The development of opportunity-related theories of crime set the stage for an increasing interest in micro level places. Scholars clearly identified the potential role of human activity and the urban backcloth but lacked the data and computing power to test their theories. More powerful computers and desktop geographic information systems enabling the data collection, analysis and display of the large quantities of information needed for micro level analysis served as the catalyst to enable empirical studies at the micro level (Kurtz et al., 1998; Perkins et al. 1993; Taylor et al., 1995; Weisburd et al., 2004). While we think the street segment offers many advantages, the general topic of appropriate spatial units of analysis is receiving increasing attention (see Weisburd et al., 2009).

The geographic unit of analysis for this study is the street segment (sometimes referred to as a street block or face block). We define the street segment as both sides of the street between two intersections.[2] We chose the street segment for a variety of theoretical and operational reasons.

Theoretically, scholars have long recognized the relevance of street blocks in organizing life in the city (Appleyard, 1981; Brower, 1980; Jacobs, 1961; Taylor et al., 1984; Unger & Wandersman, 1983). Ecological psychology in particular has attempted to understand how places function (Barker, 1968; Wicker, 1987). From his observations of places, Barker developed 'behavior settings theory.' Both Barker and Wicker define "behavior settings as small-scale social systems whose components include people and inanimate objects. Within the temporal and spatial boundaries of the system, the various components interact in an orderly, established fashion to carry out the setting's essential functions" (Wicker, 1987, p. 614).

Taylor (1997, 1998) made the case for why street segments (his terminology was street blocks) function as behavior settings. First, people who frequent a street segment get to know one another and become familiar with each other's routines. This awareness of the standing patterns of behavior of neighbors provides a basis from which action can be taken. For example, activity at the corner store is normal during business hours but abnormal after closing. Second, residents develop certain roles they play in the life of the street segment (e.g. the busybody, the organizer, and so on). Consistency of roles increases the stability of a place. On many streets there is at least one neighbor who will accept packages for other residents when they are not at home. Third, norms about acceptable behavior develop and are generally shared. Shared norms develop from interactions with other residents and observations of behaviors that take place on the block without being challenged. Fourth, blocks have standing patterns of behavior that are temporally specific. The mail carrier delivers at a certain time of day, the corner resident is

[2] The original study operationalized street blocks as hundred blocks (Weisburd, Bushway et al., 2004). In this work, we use the street centerline file in GIS as our base and include all the addresses between two intersections.

always home by 5pm, another neighbor always mows their lawn on Saturday. The specific type of frequently occurring patterns of behavior varies by temporal unit of analysis (e.g. daily, weekly and seasonally). Fifth, a street block has boundaries that contain its setting. It is bounded by the cross streets on each end. Interaction is focused inward toward the street. Sixth, street segments, like behavior settings, are dynamic. Residents move out and new ones move in. Land uses shift as residences become stores at street level and remain residential on the upper floors. These types of changes to the social and physical environment of the street segment can alter the standing patterns of behavior.

However, the street segments do not exist in a vacuum. The rhythms of the street are influenced by non-residents who are just passing through and ones who work on the block as well as by the conditions of the surrounding neighborhood in which the street block is situated (Taylor, 1997, 1998). In addition, the combination of residential and nonresidential land uses on a street segment (and the blocks immediately adjacent to a block) as well as the transportation network directly influence the amount and type of activity on a street segment.

Taylor's (1997, 1998) extension of behavior settings theory to street segments offers an eloquent illustration of how street segments function as a key units for informal social control at a micro-ecological level of analysis. In this way, the street segment provides a unit of analysis that 'fits' with both ecological theories and opportunity theories and is capable of illustrating both bottom up and top down processes producing crime events.

Beyond the theoretical reasons for using street segments to understanding how places work, other advantages have been found. First, unlike neighborhood boundaries, street segments are easily recognized by residents and have well-defined boundaries (Taylor, 1988). Second, the small size of street segments minimizes spatial heterogeneity and makes for easier interpretation of significant effects (Rice & Smith, 2002; Smith et al., 2000). Third, processes of informal social control and territoriality (Taylor et al., 1984) are more effective in smaller settings such as street segments. Fourth, significant variations in collective participation in block level organizations have been found across street segments (Perkins et al., 1990).

Operationally, the choice of street segments over smaller units such as addresses (see Sherman et al., 1989) also minimizes the error likely to develop from miscoding of addresses in official data (see Klinger & Bridges, 1997; Weisburd & Green, 1994). We recognize however, that crime events may be linked across street segments. For example, a drug market may operate across a series of blocks (Weisburd & Green, 1995; Worden et al., 1994), and a large housing project and problems associated with it may transverse street segments in multiple directions (see Skogan & Annan, 1994). Nonetheless, we thought the street segment offers a useful compromise because it allows a unit large enough to avoid unnecessary crime coding errors, but small enough to avoid aggregation that might hide specific trends.

In earlier studies using the street segment as a unit of analysis, 'hundred blocks' were used as a proxy for street segments (e.g. see Groff et al., 2009; Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press.; Groff et al., forth.). The hundred block offered a convenient computational method of identifying street segments since in cities like Seattle, street block numbers between one and one hundred for example, indicated a full street between two intersections. However, our own examination of the street grid in Seattle suggested that hundred block ranges were not always confined to a single street segment between two intersections but sometimes spanned street segments.

The errors that would develop in descriptive studies of crime concentrations from this distinction were not serious ones. However, in a study like ours that sought to link characteristics of street segments to their developmental crime patterns, we thought it was important to develop a more precise definition of the street segment that was linked directly to the geography of streets in Seattle. Accordingly we identified street segments in our study using the Seattle street centerline.[3] This was a very time consuming task, but one that brought two benefits. The first was to provide a geographic base to which we could integrate characteristics of the built and social environment. This approach made it much easier for us to link physical and social characteristics of the street segments to developmental crime patterns. Second, it enabled us to more faithfully represent the construct of a 'behavior setting' as both sides of a street between two intersections. Using a geographically-based file ensured the unit of analysis matched the definition of a behavior setting (i.e., both sides of a street between two intersections).

Only residential and arterial streets were included in our study. We excluded limited access highways because of their lack of interactive human activity.[4] This left us with 24,023 units of analysis (i.e., street segments) in Seattle. Arterial streets made up 26.6 percent (n =6,395) of all units of analysis.

Crime Data

We used computerized records of crime incident reports to represent crime. Incident reports are generated by police officers or detectives after an initial response to a request for police service. In this sense, they represent only those events which were both reported to the police and deemed to be worthy of a crime report by the responding officer. In this way, incident

[3] We used the topology editor in ArcGIS 9.2 to identify streets which crossed other streets but did not have a node at the intersection. We also removed nodes where on and off ramps artificially split a street segment prior to an intersection.
[4] The street centerline file we obtained from Seattle GIS included many different line types (e.g., trails, railroad and transit lines to name a few). Our study included only residential streets, arterial streets and walkways/stairs connecting streets.

reports provide a measure of 'true' crime, at least the crime that is reported to the police. Specifically, we include all crime events for which a report was taken except those which occur at an intersection.

There are two main reasons for excluding crime at intersections, one technical and one substantive. Technically, intersections result from the intersection of two or more street segments. Thus, they are 'part of' each street segment. While it is possible to randomly assign the events at intersections to the street segments involved, this strategy has its drawbacks. For example, it could artificially inflate the crime rate for low crime street segments participating in a high crime intersection, especially in a situation where the crime is 'flowing' from other participating segments to the intersection but is mostly unrelated to the low crime segment. However, it is also the case that incident reports at intersections differed dramatically from those at street segments. For example, traffic-related incidents accounted for only 3.77 percent of reports at street segments, but for 45.3 percent of reports at intersections. After excluding intersections, records that lacked a specific address, and records that could not be geocoded, we were left with 1,885,881 incident reports over the 16 years of data we collected (1989-2004).

We exclude these and three other types of records: 1) those whose location was given as a police precinct or police headquarters; 2) those written for crimes that occurred outside city limits; and 3) those which occur on the University of Washington campus.[5] The use of a police precinct's address as a location of a crime is common, according to the Seattle police department, when no other address can be ascertained by the reporting officer. Because we introduced a new unit of analysis in this study (as contrasted with Weisburd et al., 2004), we had

[5] Data on crime from the University of Washington campus were not geocoded and provided to the Seattle Police Department after 2001. .

to re-geocode[6] all the crime events over the study period to the new units of analysis. We were left with 1,697,212 crime records that were then joined to their corresponding street segments so that crime frequencies for each of the 24,023 segments for each year could be calculated.

Characteristics of Street Segments: Opportunity Perspectives

The data collected about each street segment represents one of two (and in some cases both) major schools of criminological thought related to places. One school of thought emphasizes opportunity characteristics and the other emphasizes social disorganization characteristics. The theoretical rationale for including these characteristics is discussed in Chapters 3 and 4 of the report. The purpose of this section is to provide a description of the data used in the study. The temporal resolution of each characteristic is a calendar year (January – December). This resolution matches the crime data. We begin by describing the collection of data of characteristics of street segments associated with "opportunity" theories. We then turn to characteristics reflecting theories of social disorganization.

Based on opportunity theory perspective we collected data on 16 characteristics for each street segment in Seattle (Table 2.1). These characteristics were then aggregated to create the final 10 characteristics we focused on for the analysis (Table 2.2). The 16 source characteristics are discussed next. Overall, the geocoding rate for data sets was very good. It varied from a low of 87% for the business data to a high of 100% for some of the public facilities. Vacant land is

[6] All geocoding was done in ArcGIS 9.1 using a geocoding locator service with an alias file of common place names to improve our hit rate. The geocoding locater used the following parameters: spelling sensitivity = 80, minimum candidate score = 30, minimum match score = 85, side offset = 0, end offset 3 percent, and Match if candidates tie = no. Manual geocoding was done on unmatched records in ArcGIS 9.1 and then in ArcView 3.x using the 'MatchAddressToPoint' tool (which allowed the operator to click on the map to indicate where an address was located) to improve the overall match rate. Research has suggested hit rates above 85% are reliable (Ratcliffe, 2004). Our final geocoding percentage for crime incidents was 97.3 percent.

one non-geocoded data set which contained the highest level of missing data.[7] Retrospective data collection was the single most challenging aspect of the research.

Table 2.1: Roots of Characteristics Used in the Model

Variable	Geocoding Hit Rate	Data Source	Contributes to:
Total public school students with 10 or more unexcused absences and/or flagged as low academic achievers	97.1%	Seattle Public Schools	High Risk Juveniles
Total number of employees at businesses located on the block	87.8%[1]	InfoUSA database of all businesses in Seattle	Employment
Total number of public school students	97.1%	Seattle Public Schools	Residents
Total number of registered voters	99.7%	Labels & Lists Inc.	Residents
Total retail business sales on the block	86.9%	InfoUSA database of all businesses in Seattle	Business Crime Attractors/Crime Generators – Total Sales
Community centers	100%	Fleets and Facilities Department, City of Seattle	Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators
Hospitals	100%	Yellow pages	Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators
Libraries	100%	Seattle Public Libraries	Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators
Parks	97.9%	Fleets and Facilities Department, City of Seattle	Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators
Middle and high schools	100%	Seattle School District	Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators
Street type	N/A	Seattle GIS	Type of street (arterial vs. residential), Static across all years

[7] The historical data related to real property (i.e. value and land use type) was the most problematic to assemble. The final data set had about 20% missing data.

Variable	Geocoding Hit Rate	Data Source	Contributes to:
Total number of bus stops within 2,640 feet of a street block	Came as shapefile	Department of Transportation (Metro Transit Division)	Bus Stops
Percentage of vacant land parcels	N/A[2]	Developed from Historic Assessor's Data (Seattle Planning Department) and parcel boundaries (King County GIS).	Vacant Land
Total number of police stations within 1,320 feet of a street block	100%	Fleets and Facilities Department of the city of Seattle - location source, variable calculated by researchers	Fire and Police Stations
Total number of fire stations within 1,320 feet of a street block	100%	Fleets and Facilities Department, City of Seattle - location source, variable calculated by researchers	Fire and Police Stations
Total amount of watts per street segment	Came as shape file	Seattle Public Utilities	Street Lighting

[1]Since this data set was pulled by zip code there are quite a few records that are outside the city of Seattle but still have Seattle addresses. In addition, some address fields are blank and others have PO Boxes and not street addresses.
[2] Getting the historical information joined to the shape file of parcels required several steps and resulted in an average of 81% of the parcels having land use information.
Note: The geocoding rate listed represents an average across all years.

Public School Students

Data about public school students was obtained from Seattle Public Schools. It includes all public school students from grades 3 – 12. The total number of public school students ranges from a low of 35,857 in 1992 to a high of 37,433 in 2004. The number of juveniles has been relatively stable over the study period with 37,029 registered in 2004. Three analysis variables are developed for use in the study: 1) total number of public school students who reside on each street segment, 2) the total number of students who were considered truant (10 or more absences in a school year) and 3) the total number of students who were considered to be low academic achievers.[8]

The number of students classified as low academic achieving (LAA) is typically three times that of truant students in any given year (mean of 14,366 versus 4,634). The year with the lowest number of LAA students was 2004 (25.11%) and the year with the highest number was 1997 when there were 13,563 (38.2%) LAA students identified. That was also the year with the highest proportion of students classified as LAA. The lowest number of truant students in any given year was 3,581 (9.85%) which occurred in 2004. The highest number occurred in 1994 when there were 6,489 (18.4%) truant students. That was also the year with the highest proportion of students classified as truant.

For our final analysis we created a variable defined as ‘high risk juveniles’ which represented the total number of students who were considered either truant (i.e. they had 10 or more unexcused absences) or were categorized as low academic achievers. The number of high risk juveniles fluctuated from 14,524 in 1992 to a high of 15,908 in 1997 before falling to its lowest level in 2004 (n=11,230).

Businesses

After trying unsuccessfully to obtain business license data, we finally purchased data from InfoUSA. While they had data available from 1998 to 2004, the data were expensive so we purchased every other year (i.e., 1998, 2000, 2002, and 2004). The vendor could only pull data by zip code which meant we obtained quite a few records from outside of Seattle which still had

[8] Data describing the number of public schools students were provided at the hundred-block and geocoded by the researchers to the street segment. The data were for academic years. We refer to each academic year by its earlier calendar year (e.g., data for 1989-1990 are used to represent 1989).

Seattle addresses.[9] We believe the relatively low geocoding rate of 87.8% reflects the influence of businesses located outside Seattle and thus unmatchable. Unfortunately, it was impossible to distinguish between those records that were unmatched because they were outside of Seattle and those that were genuinely unmatched but inside Seattle. Thus the inability to identify records outside of Seattle artificially lowered our match rate; the true rate was in all likelihood much higher. The total number of businesses per year ranged from a low of 32,517 in 1998 to 37,916 in 2000 before dropping again to 34,547 in 2004. The average number of businesses per year was 35,573. We aggregated the geocoded records to street segments and calculated the total number of employees.

Because of the important relationship between retail establishments and crime levels we isolated all businesses that were primarily retail focused and used total retail sales as the measurement of the intensity of retail on a street.[10] Roughly 10 percent of all businesses were retail businesses. The number of retail businesses declined over the time period. The highest number was 3,333 in 2000 followed by 3,331 in 2002. The earliest and latest years were both lower with 3,251 in 1998 and 3,160 in 2004. We then aggregated the total amount of sales for each retail business to the street segment on which it was located.

Registered Voters

Our figures related to voting behavior also were purchased from a vendor, Labels & Lists Inc (Table 2.1). These data were originally collected by the Elections Department for King

[9] The following zip codes were used to define Seattle: 98101, 98102, 98103, 98104, 98105, 98106, 98107, 98108, 98109, 98112, 98115, 98116, 98117, 98118, 98119, 98121, 98122, 98125, 98126, 98133, 98134, 98136, 98144, 98146, 98168, 98177, 98178, 98195, and 98199.

[10] The following North American Industrial Classification (NAIC) codes were used to identify retail businesses: 441 -Motor Vehicle and Parts Dealers; 442 -Furniture and Home Furnishings Stores; 443 -Electronics and Appliance Stores; 444 -Building Material and Garden Equipment and Supplies Dealers; 44612 -Cosmetics, Beauty Supplies, and Perfume Stores; 44613 -Optical Goods Stores; 44619 -Other Health and Personal Care Stores; 448 -Clothing and Clothing Accessories Stores (Retail); 451 -Sporting Goods; Hobby, Book, and Music Stores (Retail); 452 -General Merchandise Stores (Retail); 453 -Miscellaneous Store Retailers (Retail).

County but they do not keep historical records. Thus, we turned to Labels & Lists Inc., which kept historical records back to 1999. From these records we developed a variable that contains the total number of registered voters for each year. This information was used later to help estimate adult residential population.

Public Facilities

The data on the locations of facilities were primarily obtained from the city departments that run them (Table 2.1). Seattle Fleets and Facilities Department was helpful with the police facilities, fire facilities, parks and community centers. Obtaining the current locations was very straightforward. As mentioned earlier, the challenge came when we tried to establish which facilities had opened, closed (even temporarily), or changed location during our study period. The number of each type of public facilities was relatively small and very stable. There were 26 community centers from 1989 to 2003. Two were added in 2004 for a total of 28 community centers at the end of the study period. There were 13 hospitals in Seattle over the entire study period. There were 17 libraries in 1989 and 21 in 2004. Middle and high schools had some minor fluctuations over the years (e.g. closing for remodeling) but in general they showed an increase from 28 facilities in 1989 to 30 in 2004. Except for hospitals, public facilities were distributed across Seattle.

To represent the crime generating effect of public and quasi-public facilities on nearby street segments we calculated a spatial variable using a geographic information system (GIS). This variable represents the number of public and quasi-public facilities (i.e., community centers, hospitals, libraries, parks, and middle and high schools) within a 1,320 foot distance (i.e. a quarter mile) of each street segment. Distance was measured along the street network using ArcGIS Network Analyst extension. Using street network distance was especially important in a city like Seattle which is trisected by waterways. Since these waterways must be crossed using bridges, they represent significant physical barriers to travel.

Police and fire stations were considered separately because they represent the potential guardianship effect of police and fire personnel on the street segment and on nearby street segments (Table 2.1). From 1989 to 2001 there were four police stations. Another station was added in 2002 to increase the number to five stations. There were 33 fire stations throughout the time period. To capture the effect of police and fire stations on nearby street segments we used the same methodology as for public facilities; we calculated a spatial variable using a GIS. This variable captured the number of police and fire stations within a 1,320 foot distance (i.e. a quarter mile) of each street segment. Once again, distance was measured along the street network using ArcGIS Network Analyst extension.

Bus Stops

The number of bus stops in Seattle has been decreasing over the study period (mean = 4,160) (Table 2.1). The highest number existed in 1998 (n= 4,287) and in 2004 there were 4,053 bus stops. While this is a relatively minor drop it is mirrored in the number of street segments with a bus stop, which has also fallen from 3,106 in 2008 to 2,989 in 2004. About one third of those streets experienced a change over the time period (some gained or lost service completely).

Vacant Land

Assembling vacant land information required two separate data sources (Table 2.1). Historical data related to land use codes and value from 1989 – 1999 came from the Planning Department. More recent data was obtained from the King County Tax Assessor's web site (2000-2004). From these data we calculated the percentage of the total number of parcels on each street which was vacant land.

Street Lighting

Information on street lighting was supplied by the Seattle Public Utilities Department and was used to create a total number of watts per street value for 1997 - 2004 (Table 2.1).[11] The number of street poles and their associated lights increased steadily over the time period (from 68,725 in 1997 to 83,709 in 2004). This overall increase is in contrast to variability at the individual street segment level where there was change in both directions. The street lighting wattage decreased on 540 streets (413 were residential and 127 were arterial). Almost all these streets are concentrated in one suspiciously rectangular area in the northeast part of the city. The Utility department had no explanation for this 'dark' area. Wattage increased on 5,420 streets (4,059 were residential and 1,361 were arterial). Street segments with decreasing lighting were spread throughout the city except for west Seattle in which there was no increasing streets.

Street Type

We obtained street type information as part of the street centerline file (Table 2.1).[12] Seattle GIS provided their 2006 street centerline file which we used to develop the units of analysis and to obtain information on street type. We consider two types of streets in the study: arterial and residential (which includes walkways/stairs). Arterial streets are higher traffic streets which have higher speed limits.[13] They collect traffic flowing from residential streets and provide for movement within areas of the city while still enabling access to abutting land uses.

[11] When representing lighting related to a street, we only included light poles that were within 90 feet of the street centerline for residential roads and within 300 feet for arterial roads. The two different thresholds were used because of the difference in the average width of an arterial street and a residential street. After establishing the street poles whose light might reach the edge of the street, we then found the total wattage the street lights associated with each pole and aggregated the total watts by street segment.

[12] We used the 2006 centerline file because the Seattle Planning Department and Seattle GIS department verified there had been no significant changes in the street configuration nor had there been any annexations during the study period.

[13] Information on street classifications was retrieved from the King County Department of Transportation web site at http://www.kingcounty.gov/transportation/kcdot/Roads/TransportationPlanning/ArterialClassificationSystem.aspx. Briefly, arterial streets are those that carry larger volumes of traffic. Residential streets run through neighborhoods and are designed to carry lower volumes of local travel at slower speeds. Walkways are non-vehicular paths or stairways that typically connect two residential streets.

Residential streets also provide access to land uses but they have lower speed limits and are designed to carry less traffic.

Final Characteristics for Analysis

These characteristics were then used to create the final characteristics for analyses reported in the chapters that follow (Table 2.2). Each of the final 10 characteristics represents one of four constructs: motivated offenders, suitable targets, guardianship or accessibility/urban form. All the final data sets have a geographic extent that includes the entire city of Seattle. However, their temporal extent varies. We were able to get only the crime data and the public facilities data over the entire study period. The temporal period of the other characteristics range from four years of coverage to 13 years of coverage.

Table 2.2: Sources and Extents of Opportunity Theory Variables

Variable	Definition	Source	Temporal Extent	Years
High Risk Juveniles	Total number of public school students with 10 or more unexcused absences and/or flagged as low academic achievers	Seattle Public Schools	13 years	1992 - 2004
Employment	Total number of employees at businesses located on the block	InfoUSA database of all businesses in Seattle	7 years	1998, 2000, 2002, 2004
Residents	Composite variable combining the total number of public school students and the total number of registered votes	Seattle Public Schools (public school students), Labels & Lists Inc. (voter registration)	6 years	1999 - 2004
Business Crime Attractors/Crime Generators	Total retail business sales on the block	InfoUSA database of all businesses in Seattle	7 years	1998, 2000, 2002, 2004

Public Crime Attractors/Crime Generators	Calculated variable capturing the total number of Public Facilities within 2,640 feet of a street block	Fleets and Facilities Department, City of Seattle (Community centers), Seattle Public Libraries, Seattle School District	16 years	1989 - 2004
Street type	Type of street (arterial vs. residential), Static across all years	Seattle GIS	Static	2006
Bus Stops	Total number of bus stops	Department of Transportation (Metro Transit Division)	8 years	1997 - 2004
Vacant Land	Percentage of vacant land parcels	Developed from Historic Assessor's Data (Seattle Planning Department) and parcel boundaries (King County GIS).	14 years	1991, 1993, 1995, 1997, 1998, 2004
Fire and Police Stations	Calculated variable capturing the total number of police or fire stations within 2,640 feet of a street block	Fleets and Facilities Department	16 years	1989 - 2004
Street Lighting	Total amount of watts	Seattle Public Utilities	8 years	1997 - 2004

Characteristics of Street Segments: Social Disorganization

Based on social disorganization theories we collected nine characteristics for each street segment in Seattle at the address level of analysis (Table 2.3). These characteristics were then aggregated to create the final eight characteristics we focused on for the analysis (Table 2.4). The geocoding rate varied from a low of 93.3% for the illegal dumping incidents to a high of 100% for the public housing units. One notable deficiency was related to the poor join rate for the data regarding residential property values and type of land use.[14]

[14] The historical data related to real property (i.e. value and land use type) was the most problematic to assemble. The final data set had about 20% missing data.

Table 2.3: Roots of Characteristics Used in the Model

Variable	Geocoding Hit Rate	Data Source	Contributes to:
Residential property value	N/A[1]	Developed from Historic Assessor's Data (Seattle Planning Department) and parcel boundaries (King County GIS).	Socio-Economic Status (as represented by residential property value)
Type of land use	N/A[1]	Developed from Historic Assessor's Data (Seattle Planning Department) and parcel boundaries (King County GIS).	Mixed Land Use
Total number of illegal dumping and litter incidents	93.3%	Seattle Public Utilities	Physical Disorder
Total number of public housing units	100%	Seattle Housing Authority	Housing Assistance
Total number of Section 8 housing vouchers	99.7%	Seattle Housing Authority	Housing Assistance
Total number of public school students with 10 or more unexcused absences	97.1%	Seattle Public Schools (public school students)	Truant Juveniles
Racial Heterogeneity of public school students	97.1%	Seattle Public Schools (public school students)	Racial Heterogeneity
Percent of active voters represented in each street	99.7%	Labels & Lists Inc. (voter registration)	Percent of Active Voters
Distance from geographic center of Seattle	N/A[2]	Seattle GIS	Urbanization

[1]Getting the historical information joined to the shape file of parcels required several steps and resulted in an average of 81% of the parcels having land use information.
[2] No street centerline file was available for 1989 so we used the same one throughout the study period.

Residential Property Value

Assembling residential property value for Seattle required two separate data sources (Table 2.3). Historical data related to land and building value for 1989 – 1999 came from the Planning Department and more recent data was obtained from the King County Tax Assessor's web site (2000 - 2004). From these two data sets we calculated a weighted index variable to represent the ranked property value on each street segment. To create this variable, we first ranked all the property values in the city from 0 to 10 with 10 being the highest value. In order to separate the single family housing from multi-family dwellings, we ranked these two groups separately. Then we combined the ranks of single-family housing (SF) and multi-family housing (MF) into a final value that represents the property value of a street. We also weight the ranks by percentage of housing type in the given street so the composite score also reflects the proportion of the type of property. This variable contributed to SES (Table 2.4).

Land Use Type

Similarly, assembling land use information required two separate data sources (Table 2.3). Historical data related to land use codes from 1989 – 1999 came from the Planning Department. No historical data related to land use was available from the King County Tax Assessor's web site; 2004 data were available however and those were used. From these two data sources we calculated the percentage of the total of each type of land use on each street segment. Finally, we created a dichotomous variable representing those streets with percent residential land use between 25% and 75 % which also have nonresidential land uses present (e.g. commercial, institutional, industrial etc. but not solely water or vacant land). Streets meeting this criterion were coded as mixed land use. This variable contributed to Mixed Land Use (Table 2.4).

Physical Disorder

Data documenting physical disorder incidents was collected from the Seattle Public Utilities department (Tables 2.3 and 2.4). The incidents in this database were generated from problems noticed by both inspectors (self-initiated), reports from other agencies, and from citizens calling the hot line or emailing the agency to report illegal dumping problems. The physical disorder measure includes: illegal dumping, litter, graffiti, weeds, vacant buildings, inoperable cars on the street, junk storage, exterior abatement, substandard housing and minor property damage. The type of dumping and litter items recorded in the database consists of things like tires, appliances, yard waste, mattresses, and freezers, to list just a few. This database covers the time period from 1992-2004. But the information was not consistently gathered for 1992. Therefore, this study only uses information from 1993 to 2004. There were 42,331 incidents in the original database and 93.3% of them were successfully geocoded.

Public Housing

The total locations of public housing communities and the total number of units in each community were collected from the Seattle Housing Authority (Table 2.3). Several of the large communities reported one total number of units for the entire complex (High Point, New Holly and Rainier Vista). For these, we divided the total number of units by the number of street segments which participated in the development and allocated the resulting number of units to each street in the development. There were 5,857 public housing units from 1989 – 1997. In 1997, the number dropped to 5,299 units and stayed there until 2002 when it dropped again to 4,218. Two subsequent changes occurred in the last two years of the study period: first a reduction to 3,838 units in 2003 and then a slight increase to 3,896 units in 2004. This variable contributed to the composite variable of Housing Assistance (Table 2.4).

Section 8

We obtained information on the allocation of Section 8 vouchers in Seattle from the Seattle Housing Authority (Table 2.3). Section 8 housing vouchers can be used to rent any apartment for which the management will accept the vouchers. Vouchers allow individuals to rent market rate apartments for reduced cost with the voucher bridging the gap between what the individual can pay and market rate rent. The number of vouchers has increased from 1,674 to 2,250 between 1998 and 2004, a 34.4% increase. The minimum number of vouchers on a given street was 0 across all years while the maximum ranged from a low of 125 in 2003 to high of 152 in 1999. This variable contributed to the composite variable of Housing Assistance (Table 2.4). The presence of public housing units and Section 8 voucher holders show where the disadvantaged populations are located.

Truant Juveniles

Data about truant juveniles was obtained from Seattle Public Schools as part of the public school's student database (Tables 2.3 and 2.4). Truant juveniles were defined as the total number of students with 10 or more unexcused absences in a school year (see earlier section on public school data for more information). The lowest number of truant students in any given year was 3,581 (9.85%) in 2004. The highest number occurred in 1994 when there were 6,489 (18.4%) truant students. That was also the year with the highest proportion of students classified as truant.

Racial Heterogeneity

Racial heterogeneity measurement was estimated using information that was part of the Seattle Public School's student database (Tables 2.3 and 2.4). The data contain racial identification of all students enrolled in Seattle's public schools from 1992 to 2004. Four racial groups were identified in this study including white, black, Asian, and Hispanic. The probabilities of each racial group encountering another out-group member were then computed and averaged to form an overall racial heterogeneity index. The detailed computation process of the variable is described in Chapter 3.

Percent of Active Voters

The variable Percent Active Voters was drawn from the voting database (Tables 2.3 and 2.4). The data include not only the registered voters' voting behaviors (whether they voted or not in the given year) for the current year but also their past voting frequency dating back to

1990. To differentiate active voters from the rest, we compared each registered voter's short-term average voting behavior to the population's short-term voting average in the most recent two years. In any given year, if a person had an average short-term voting behavior greater than the mean of Seattle's registered voters, then we assigned this person an active voter status. On each street, the number of active voters is divided by the number of total registered voters to get the percent of active voter. This value is used as a proxy of residents' willingness to participate in public affairs.

Distance from City Center

The distance from city center was calculated from each street segment to the geographic center of Seattle (Tables 2.3 and 2.4).[15] This measure represents the degree of urbanization of each street. The geographic center of Seattle was located at 331 Minor Ave N.[16] Distance was measured along the street network using the ArcGIS Network Analyst extension. Using street network distance was especially important in a city like Seattle which is trisected by waterways. Since these waterways must be crossed using bridges, they represent significant physical barriers to travel.

Final Characteristics for Analysis

These characteristics were then used to create the final characteristics for analyses reported in later chapters (Table 2.4). Each of the final eight characteristics represents one of two theoretical dimensions. The structural dimension includes socioeconomic status, mixed land use, urbanization, housing assistance, physical disorder, and racial heterogeneity. The

[15] We also considered using the cultural center of Seattle but we could find no documentation regarding a cultural center. The librarians at the Seattle Public Library identified the Westlake Center (4th Ave. and Pine St) which opened in 1988 as the cultural center (personal conversation, 2008). Since the two addresses are only 3,650 feet (a little less than three-quarters of a mile) apart as the crow flies, we went with the geographic center which was a known fact.

[16] The geographic center of Seattle is located at N 47° 37.271 W 122° 19.986 which translates to 331 Minor Ave N (see http://www.waymarking.com/waymarks/WM29A8).

intermediating dimension of the effects of structural factors on crime includes unsupervised teens and willingness to intervene in public affairs.

The spatial and temporal extent of each characteristic as well as its definition is included in Table 2.4. All the final data sets have a geographic extent that includes the entire city of Seattle. However, their temporal extent varies. We were not able to obtain any of these characteristics for the entire study period. The temporal coverage of other characteristics ranged from a low of four years of coverage for concentrated disadvantage to a high of 13 years for physical disorder. For the sake of brevity, only the one composite variable that is new to the discussion is described below.

Housing Assistance

The variable called Housing Assistance consists of the total number of public housing units plus the total number of Section 8 vouchers in use on a street segment. We created this variable to capture the total number of housing units on each street segment receiving some type of housing assistance (Table 2.4).

Table 2.4: Social Disorganization Variables Spatial and Temporal Extent

Variable	Definition	Temporal Extent	Years
Socio-Economic Status (as represented by residential property value)	To create this variable, we first ranked all the property in the city from 1 to 10 with 10 being the highest value. In order to separate the single family (SF) housing from multi-family (MF) dwellings, we ranked these two groups separately. Then we combined the ranks of SF and MF into a final value that represents the property value of a street. We also weigh the ranks by percentage of housing type in the given street so the composite score of SES also reflects the proportion of the type of property.	Covers 6 years over a 14 year period.	1991, 1993, 1995, 1997, 1998, 2004

Variable	Definition	Temporal Extent	Years
Mixed Land Use	Dichotomous variable representing those streets with nonresidential land use (e.g. commercial, institutional, industrial etc. but not solely water or vacant land) and between 25% and 75 % residential land use	Covers 6 years over a 14 year period.	1991, 1993, 1995, 1997, 1998, 2004
Physical Disorder (count)	Total number of reported physical disorder incidents	12 years	1993 - 2004
Housing Assistance	Composite variable of the total number of public housing units and the total number of Section 8 vouchers in use.	7 years	1998 - 2004
Truant Juveniles	Total number of public school students with 10 or more unexcused absences	13 years	1992 - 2004
Racial Heterogeneity (students)	The probabilities of each racial group to encounter another out-group member	13 years	1992 - 2004
Percent of Active Voters	Percent of active voters represented in each street	6 years	1999 - 2004
Urbanization	Distance from geographic center of Seattle	Static	2006

Conclusions

This section provided an introduction to our study site, Seattle, Washington. It also explained the theoretical and operational roots of our choice of a street segment as the unit of analysis. The rationale for our dependent variable of crime incidents was supplied and described. Finally, the characteristics of the street segments were introduced. The next two sections provide an in-depth description of the theoretical basis for our choice of these characteristics and the distribution of the characteristics across street segments in Seattle.

Chapter 3: Social Disorganization and Social Capital at Micro Places

As described in Chapter 1, social disorganization theory has played a central role in place-based understandings of crime in criminology. But the impact of social disorganization on crime has been described at much higher units of analysis than our interests in the study of crime and place in Seattle. Social disorganization theorists have focused their concerns on "communities" and "neighborhoods" not on street segments or even small groups of street segments. Even Shaw and McKay (1942 [1969]), who began their investigation of juvenile delinquency with the addresses of the youths they studied, focused their theoretical interests on the general patterns of delinquency in large areas of the city. Are indicators of social disorganization at the street segment level relevant to understanding variability in crime at place, or rather is the influence of such factors relevant only at the higher levels of geography that social disorganization theorists have ordinarily studied? To answer this question, we must first ask whether there is variability in the distribution of characteristics of social disorganization at the street segment level.

In this chapter we explore the distribution of characteristics of social disorganization across street segment in Seattle. Prior studies have, for example, noted that a very large proportion of crime in the city is found at a very small number of places that have been identified as crime hot spots (Pierce et al., 1986; Sherman et al., 1989; Weisburd & Green, 1994; Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press). Is the same true for the concentration of evidence of social disorganization at street segments? Are there, for example, hot spots of social or physical disorder? If there are, of course, this then raises the question of whether hot spots of social disorganization and hot spots of crime occur in the same places (a question we will review in later chapters). Similarly, do we find evidence of variability across geography in the concentration of characteristics of social disorganization? Social disorganization theorists have ordinarily seen characteristics reflecting this perspective as occurring at a neighborhood level. This would suggest that there is relatively little variability in such traits within neighborhoods. But if such traits vary greatly within neighborhoods and across street segments then it would seem reasonable to begin to examine how variability in social disorganization at the street segment level affects developmental patterns of crime at that level.

As far as we are aware, ours is the first study to examine the salience of social disorganization theory at a micro place unit of analysis. In this context, we present in this chapter the first systematic review of how characteristics of social disorganization concentrate and distribute across street segments in an urban context. We find overall that social disorganization at the street segment level evidences strong concentrations across the city and that such concentrations are not necessarily limited to specific larger geographic contexts such as neighborhoods. There are hot spots of social disorganization at a micro place unit of analysis, and these hot spots evidence a significant degree of spatial dispersion. Our findings provide a strong basis for asking whether the distribution of social disorganization at the street segment level is related to developmental patterns of crime at street segments later in our report.

Structural and Mediating Variables of Social Disorganization

Indicators of social disorganization have generally been divided into two main domains: the structural characteristics of places and the intermediating mechanisms that govern these places (e.g. see Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Lowenkamp et al., 2003; Osgood & Chambers, 2000; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson et al., 1997). We identify information that represents critical structural characteristics of places including socio-economic status (SES), physical disorder, racial heterogeneity, mixture of land use, urbanization, and concentration of disadvantage. All of these factors have been used widely in past literature to represent the level of social organization of places. Since mediating factors are variables that represent the ability of places to regulate activities that occur within them, we include variables such as the presence of unsupervised teens and voting participation. These variables demonstrate levels of social control, social capital, and the capacities of collective efficacy. Variables are categorized under several major themes of social disorganization theory in Table 3.1.[1]

[1] Chapters 3 and 4 examine the distribution of characteristics across all 24,178 street segments (i.e., including the University of Washington campus).

Table 3.1: Theoretical Concepts Represented by the Data

Structural Dimensions (Variables within dimension)

• SES
  ○ Property Values
  (Weighted ranking of single- and multi-family housing)
 	
• Public Housing / Assistance
 	
• Mixed Land Use
 	
• Racial Heterogeneity
  ○ Race of Public School Students
 	
• Distance to Downtown
  ○ Urbanization
 	
• Physical Disorganization
  ○ Physical Disorder

Intermediating Dimensions (Variables within dimension)

• Unsupervised Teens
  ○ Truant Juveniles (grades 3 – 12)
 	
• Willingness to Intervene in Public Affairs
  ○ Voting Participation (Percent of Active voters)

In the following sections, we review the distribution of each dimension of social disorganization theory in terms of three main concerns: 1) prevalence or the extent of concentration of the characteristic; 2) variability across time and 3) spatial distribution.

Structural Variables

The first group of variables represents the physical or social characteristics evidenced at places. According to social disorganization theorists, a place with a high crime rate is usually a disorganized place with dilapidated buildings, abandoned cars, boarded windows, and population heterogeneity (Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]; Bursik, 1984). The physical presentation of a place in this context indicates the nature and quality of the environment. Furthermore, social disorganization theorists go beyond the emphasis on physical environment and argue that the lack of homogeny in a place further reduces the likelihood that people will be willing to work with each other to improve the conditions. In the following section, we review the theoretical foundation of each of the variables we collected and then present the distributions of these variables across places and over time.

Socio-Economic Status: Property Values

In the original version of social disorganization theory, Shaw and McKay (1942 [1969]) contend that the concentration of industry and businesses in the downtown area makes it an undesirable place to live. People who cannot afford to move out of town ended up in the transitional zone—the area between the industrial center and the residential area. Thus, the transitional area tends to contain low socio-economic status residents, high crime rates, and other social illnesses. In social disorganization theory, the socio-economic status (SES) of residents is an important indicator of crime ridden areas. Even in recent social disorganization theory, SES is still used widely to represent resources and capabilities of residents to invest in the community where they live (e.g. see Bellair, 1997; Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Veysey & Messner, 1999). In this study, we measure SES using the average property values (combined land and building value data) of each street, using it as a proxy to represent the average socio-economic status of residents on each street in Seattle.[2]

As mentioned in Chapter 2, about 80 percent of the streets have detailed records about housing values and land use. The majority of the areas in Seattle are used for residential purposes. Among all the streets with valid information, 19,425 street segments have at least one residential building (88 percent). For example, in 1989 out of the 17,152 streets with any

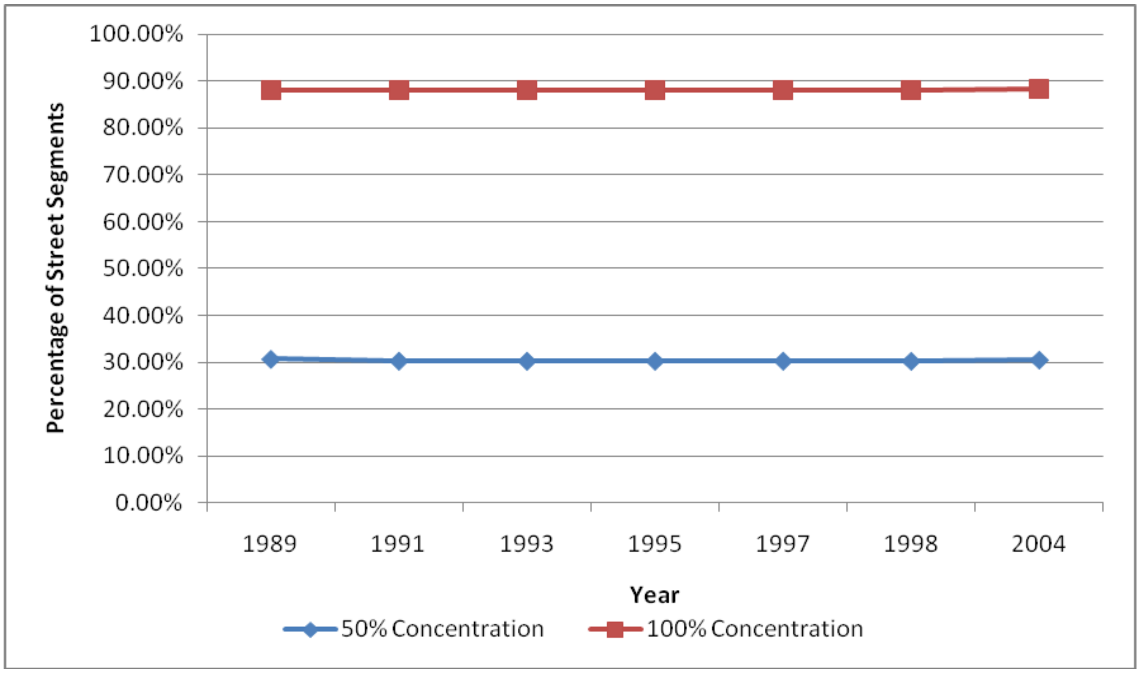
[2] Specifically, we use the combined land and building value data because local experts felt it was the most reliable field in their historical data set.

residential building, 16,052 streets had single family houses while only 3,482 streets had multi-family residential buildings.

One complication of using the raw property value data for the residential areas is that it includes both single family housing and multi-family dwellings. If we simply compare property values without addressing the differences between single family houses and multi-dwelling buildings, the results will be misleading. Single family houses tend to be worth less than high rise buildings simply because of the size of the land or physical construction; however, people who live in single family houses are more likely to own their homes. To take into account the impact of both single family dwellings and multi-family dwellings, we rank single family housing and multi-family housing separately and then create a composite to represent the SES of the street. To achieve this, we separately rank averaged property values for single family housing and multi-family housing, assigning each street a rank between 0 and 10 based on the average values of properties. For example, streets with the highest 9 percent of single family building values received a rank of 10 while streets with the lowest values received a rank of 0. The same procedure was repeated for multi-family housing. Finally, the ranks of each street on the single family property value and multi-family property value were then weighted by the percentages of the type of housing of a given street and then combined to create a property value index to represent the SES of a street.

Based on the social disorganization tradition, we want to first understand whether high SES (or low) street segments, like other factors we review, are concentrated in limited areas or spread randomly throughout the city. By default, the property values are only present in the streets with residential dwellings. Thus, the following analyses will focus only on the 19,425 streets (88 percent) with valid information on residential building values in Seattle. In the following descriptive analyses, we can see the changes in property value throughout the study period. From Figure 3.1 below, it is clear that the cross-sectional concentration rates of property index value remain extremely stable over time. The 50 percent concentration rate of the property value for each year ranges from 30.30 percent to 30.72 percent, a very narrow range. About 30 percent of street segments account for about 50 percent of the wealth in the city.

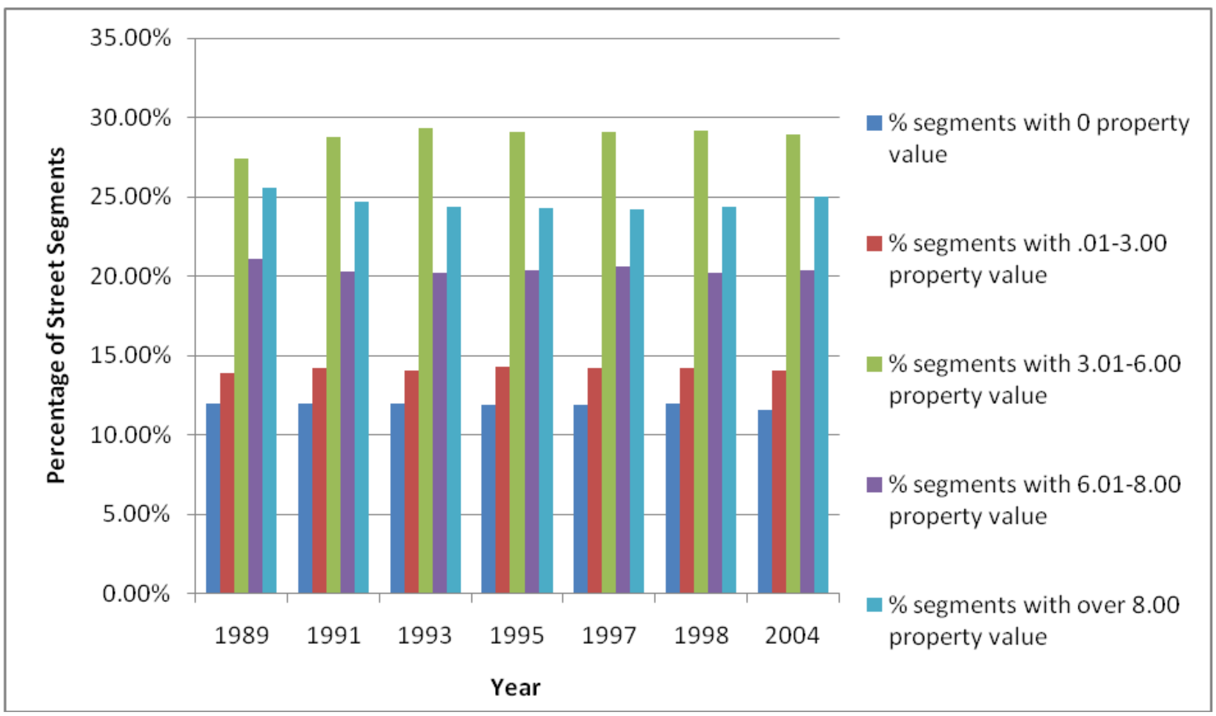
Figure 3.1: Concentration Graph of Property Value Index



Though the concentration rate seems to be stable when we employ cross-sectional measurement, the within subject variability of property value index varies over time. Using repeated measures analysis, we conclude that the within subject effect is significant ($F = 23.230$,$df = 1.816$). The average property value does vary over time.

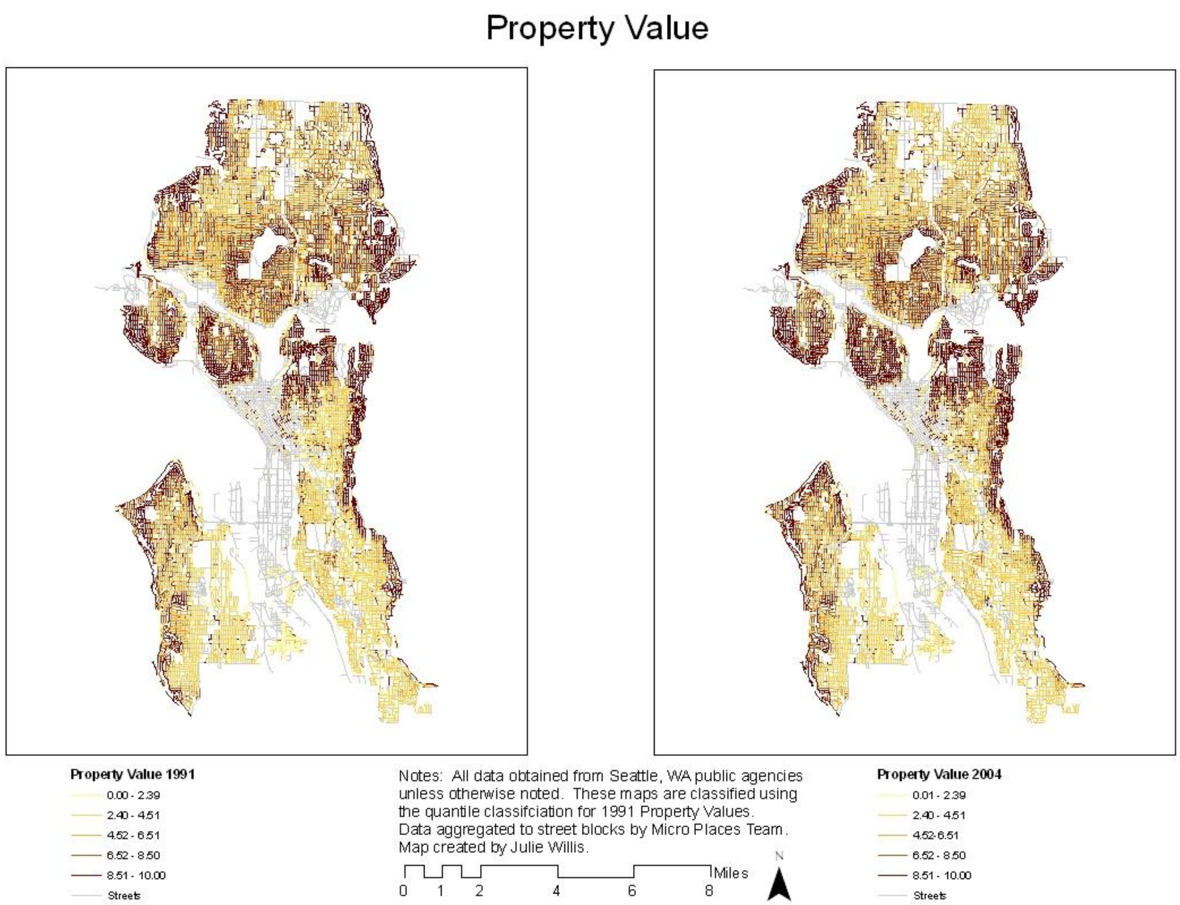
Next, we further show the detailed composition of the annual distribution of the property value index (see Figure 3.2). The natural break down of the index results in five groups: no values, the bottom 30 percent, the middle 30 percent (30-60 percent), the second highest 20 percent (60-80 percent) and the highest 20 percent group (80-100 percent). For each year, there are about 12 percent of streets with building values unreported or reported as zero (out of 19,425 street segments). About 14 percent of street segments have a property value between .01 and 3.00. The percent of street segments that have a property value between 3.01 and 6.00 ranges from 27 to just over 29 percent. This mid-range property value category accounts for the largest number of segments. About 20.5 percent of street segments, the second most prevalent group, have a property value between 6.01 and 8.00. The percentage of street segments with a property value of over 8.00 varies between 24 and 26 percent.

Figure 3.2: Frequency Distributions of Property Value Index



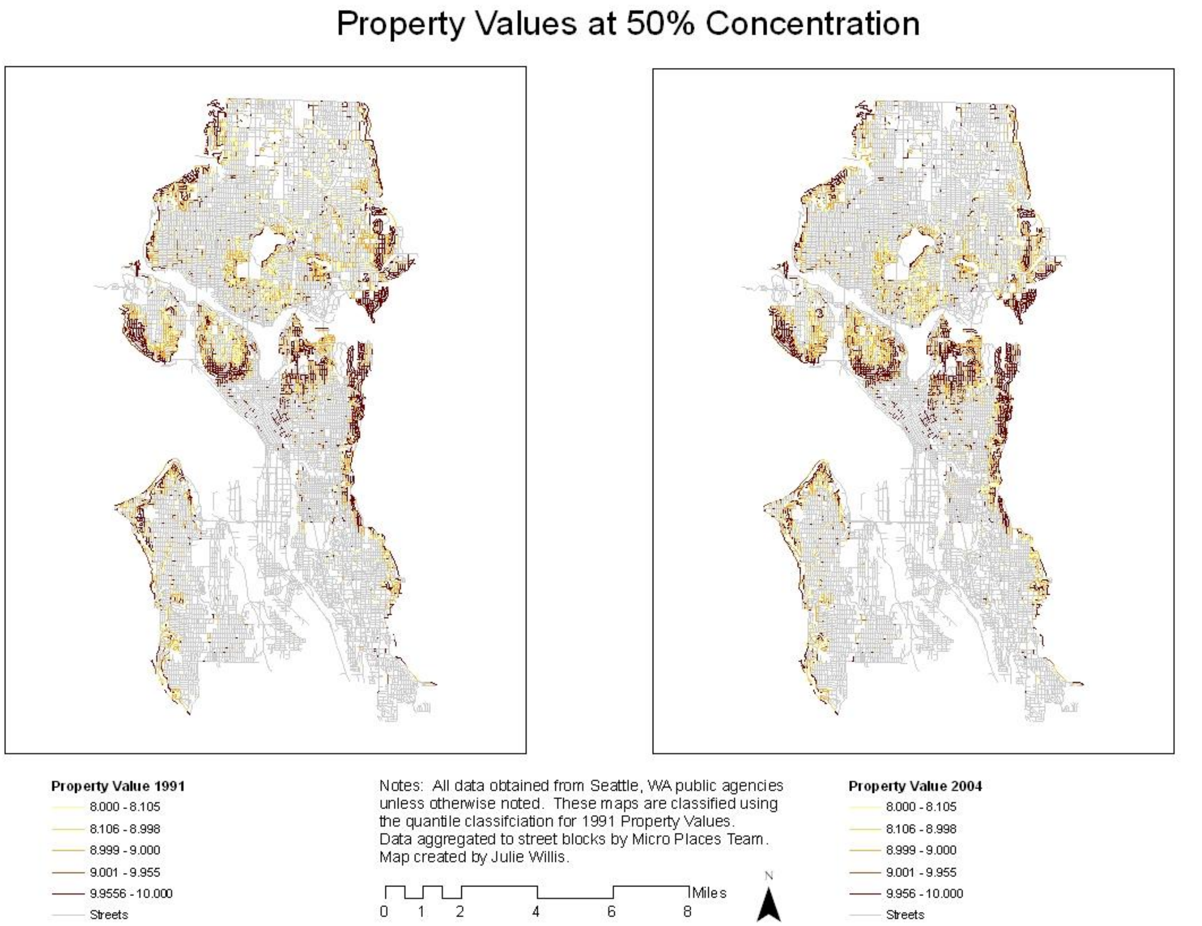
Similar to the conclusions of Chicago School almost a century ago, quantile maps show that the streets in the outskirts of Seattle enjoy higher property values and the values decrease when one gets closer to the center of the city, except for some parts of the downtown area of the city (see Figure 3.3). To examine if the geographic patterns of variables change over time, we took the moving average of the first two years of data and the last two years of data and compared them. We follow the same approach throughout the chapter when we introduce results of geographic analyses.

Figure 3.3: Quantile Maps of Property Value Index



The quantile maps shown above reveal the general distribution of property values while the following concentration maps highlight the wealthiest part of Seattle (see Figure 3.4). Properties with the highest values are found in the largest concentrations along the coasts of Seattle, the Lake Washington Ship Canal, and Green Lake.

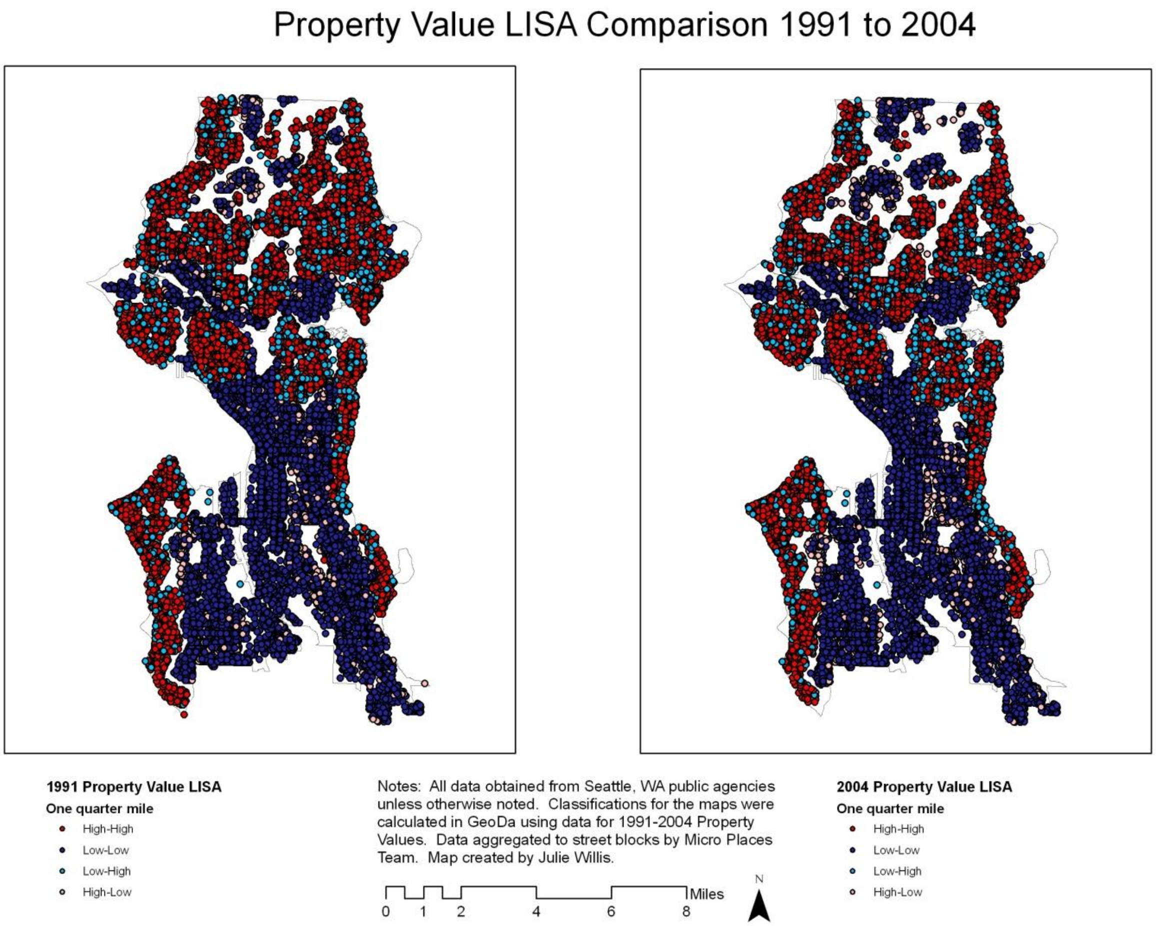
Figure 3.4: Maps of Concentration of Property Values



In general, LISA maps tell us whether the concentration of a trait on one street segment is similar to or different from the concentration of a trait on nearby streets. We used one-quarter mile as the criterion for all the LISA analyses generated in this chapter. This means that each street segment is considered in terms of the surrounding three-four street segments. The average length of a street segment in Seattle is approximately 400 feet; if all the surrounding streets are about average, a quarter mile distance (1,320 feet) is just over three street segments. Only street segments that have a statistically significant relationship to nearby street segments are depicted on the map. If the concentration of a variable on one street segment is significantly similar to the concentration of the same variable on a nearby street segment, the two are positively spatially auto-correlated. Positive spatial autocorrelation can describe either a situation in which street segments with high concentrations of a trait are near other street segments with high concentrations or a situation in which street segments with low concentrations of the variable are near other street segments with low concentrations. If the concentration of a trait on one street segment is significantly different from the concentration on another nearby street segment, the two street segments are negatively spatially auto-correlated. Negative spatial autocorrelation can describe either a situation where street segments with high concentrations of a trait are near street segments with low concentrations of the same trait or one in which street segments with low concentrations of a variable are near street segments with high concentrations of the same variable.

In the case of property value, the LISA maps reveal large areas of generally positive spatial autocorrelation that is statistically significant (see Figure 3.5). The LISA analysis confirms the concentration of high value street segments along the coasts and in the northern part of the central section and the northern sections of the city. Generally, we can see the red dots (representing high value properties surrounded by other high value properties) are clustering in the north and along the coast. Interestingly, there are often street segments dominated by low value properties sprinkled among them. The blue dots (representing low value properties near other lower value properties) are concentrated in the south. Similarly, there are also street segments dominated by high value properties sprinkled among them but with far less frequency.

Figure 3.5: LISA Maps of Property Values (1991 vs. 2004)



Housing Assistance: Public Housing and Section 8 Vouchers

The variable Housing Assistance represents the concentration of truly disadvantaged populations. Public housing communities and Section 8 vouchers both represent types of public housing assistance. Thus, we combine the two data sets and create a composite score which represents the sum of the number of public housing units and number of Section 8 vouchers distributed. To aid in the understanding of the composite variable, we describe each database separately first before we introduce the composite score.

Public Housing

Identifying the locations of public housing is a very straightforward way to show the geographic distribution of the population who are at the bottom of the wealth spectrum. Instead of using census information to identify the areas where residents' salaries fall below the poverty line, the information on public housing tells us where truly disadvantaged people live. In Seattle, there are different types of housing projects consisting of high rise units (approximately 75-300 units per building) and four garden communities (community style: approximately 525 units). High rise buildings were built in the 1970s; garden communities were built in the 1940s, and some have been renovated and redeveloped over time. The structures and locations of public housing in Seattle have been fairly stable, especially within our study period. However, when change did occur, the magnitude was very large. For example, the total number of units decreased from 5,856 in 1989 to 3,896 in 2004, which represents a decrease of 33.4 percent. Additionally, less than 1 percent of streets in Seattle have public housing units on them (around 200 streets).[3]

Based on social disorganization theory, we would predict that the locations of public housing overlap with crime hot spots, an issue we examine in Chapter 7. Due to the lack of resources and investment devoted to these areas by residents, collective efficacy and systemic social control perspectives (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson et al., 1997; Sampson & Wilson, 1995) both predict these areas to be extremely disadvantaged and thus, plagued with crime problems.

[3] Some of the communities report individual addresses while others report only one aggregate figure even when the development stretches across several streets. If we try to analyze the individual unit reporters then the housing data will be intrinsically clustered. Using a typical spatial statistic would not produce meaningful results. Another issue is the problem of a large development that reports on one total number of units even though the development stretches across several street segments. We decided that for each large development in the study period, we would allocate a number of units to each street by dividing the total number of units by the number of streets in each development. This is the reason why there are fractional numbers on the legends of the maps.

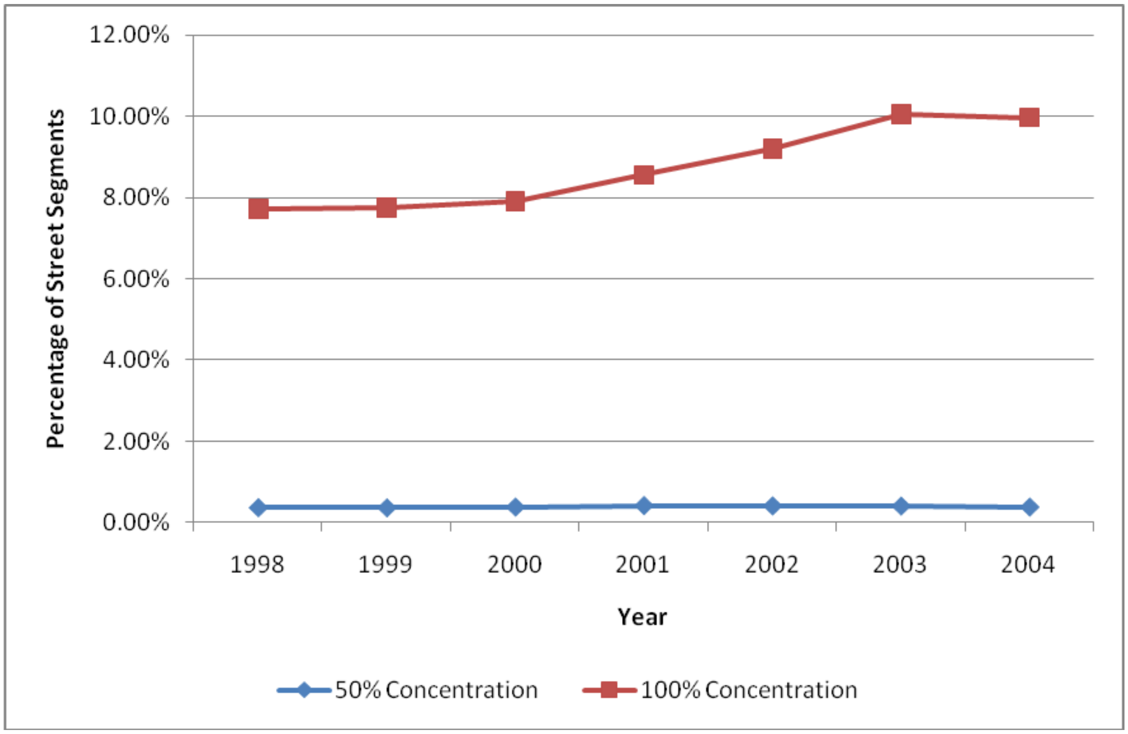
Section 8 Vouchers

Similar to the public housing variable, the number of Section 8 housing vouchers represents the concentration of the disadvantaged population. Section 8 vouchers can be used to rent any market rate apartment from which the management accepts the vouchers for a reduced cost with the voucher making up the difference in cost. The number of vouchers used in Seattle increased slowly for the first three years of our study period from 3,583 in 1998 to 3,869 in 2000 but then almost doubled between 2001 and 2004. The average number of vouchers over the whole time period was 4,670. Nonetheless, we want to emphasize that a place with a concentrated disadvantaged population still can have high levels of social control or collective efficacy if residents share close relationships and care/trust each other. The determinants of collective efficacy of places will be reviewed in a later section.

Housing Assistance

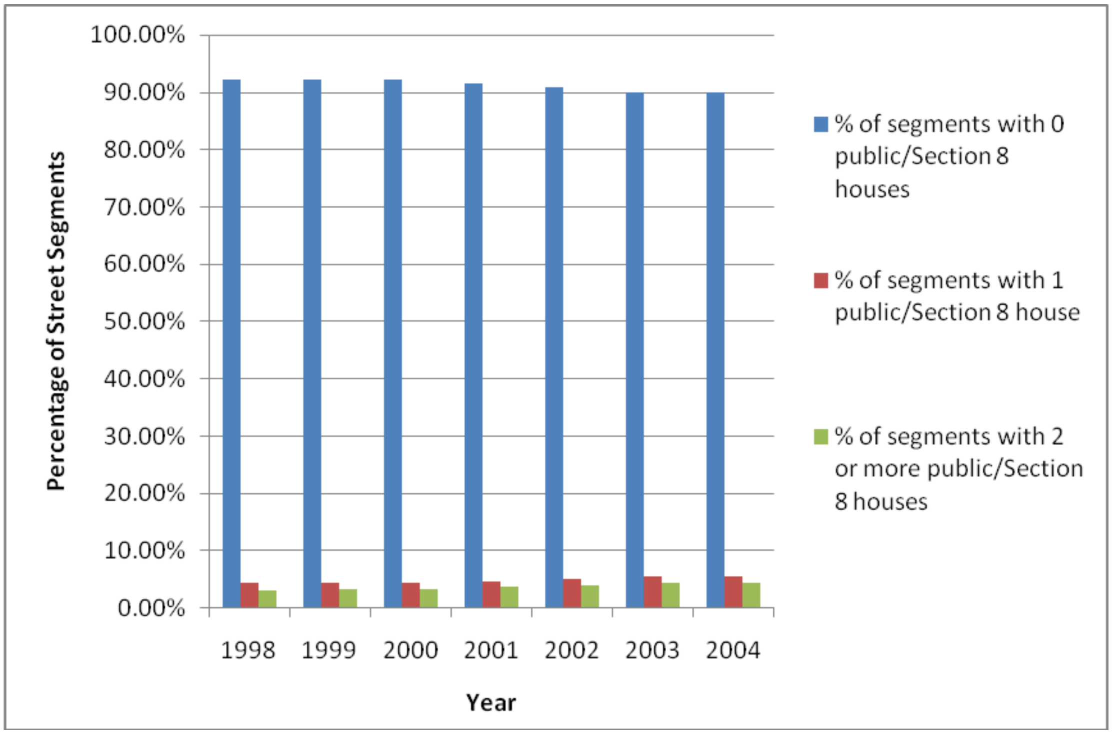
Again, the locations of public housing, along with Section 8 voucher information, are important elements that measure aspects of concentrated disadvantage in this study. Thus, we combine these two measures into a composite score “housing assistance” to highlight the locations of the truly disadvantaged population. As indicated by Figure 3.6, the housing assistance composite score is extremely concentrated with 50 percent of housing assistance consistently found on about 0.4 percent of the total Seattle street segments. The concentration line for 100 percent of the housing assistance variable shows a gradual increasing trend from 1998 to 2003 moving from 7.7 to 10.1 percent of total street segements followed by a leveling off in 2004. Because public housing is a very stable phenomenon, the increase in the 100 percent concentration line of the housing assistance variable is probably a result of fluctuations in the distributions of Section 8 vouchers. According to a repeated measures test, the within subject effect is significant (F = 12.060 ,df = 1.817). The amount of housing assistance does vary over time.

Figure 3.6: Concentration Graph of Housing Assistance



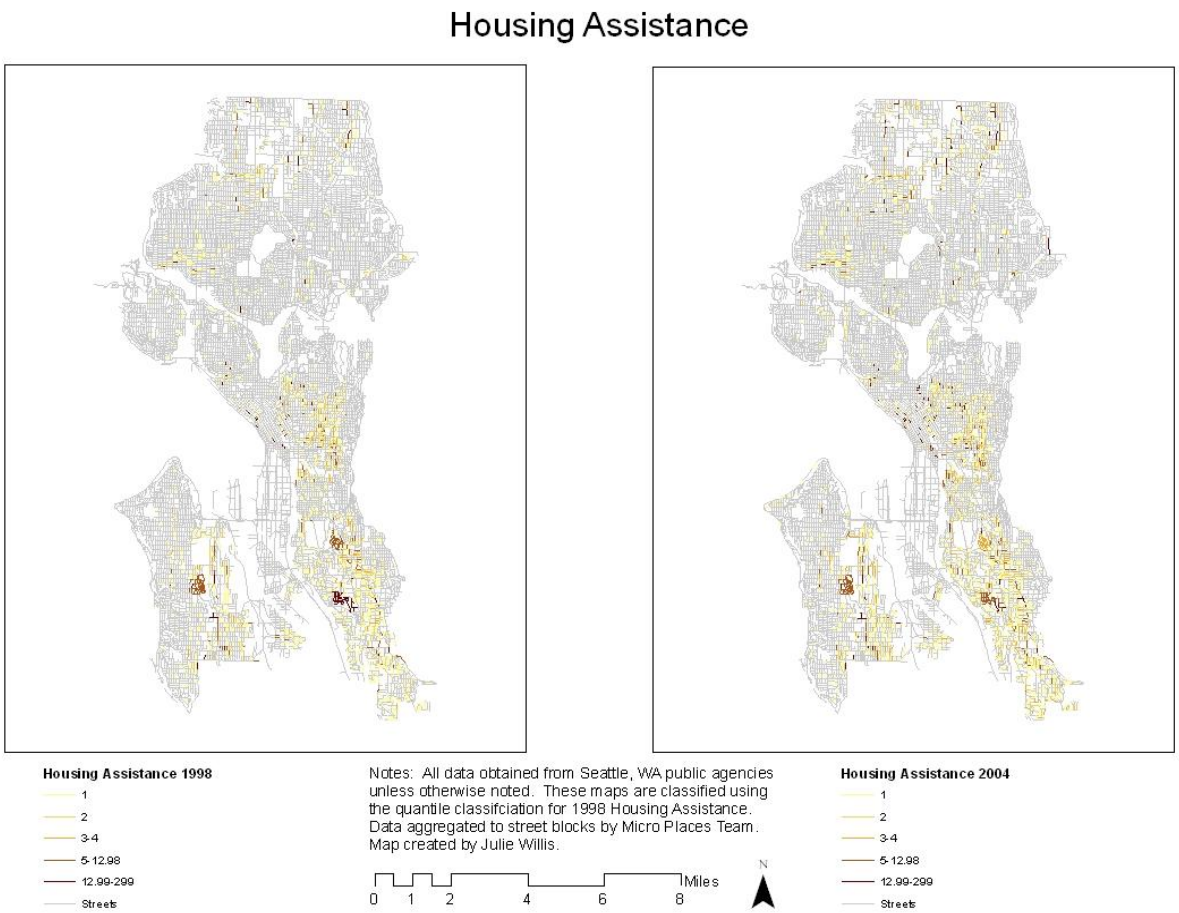
Between 1998 and 2004, the percentage of segments with 0 housing assistance was between 89 and 93 percent of the total Seattle street segments, showing a gradual decline from 1998 to 2003 and a leveling off in 2004 (see Figure 3.7). The majority of the street segments in Seattle do not have any public housing or Section 8 voucher housing. But the distribution graph shows that the percentage of streets with no housing assistance has been reduced over time. The percentage of street segments with one public housing or Section 8 housing unit is consistently between 4 and 6 percent of total street segments. The percentage of street segments with two or more public housing or Section 8 housing units is between 3 and 4 percent over time and shows a slow but steady increase from 1998 to 2003 before leveling out in 2004.

Figure 3.7: Frequency Distributions of Housing Assistance



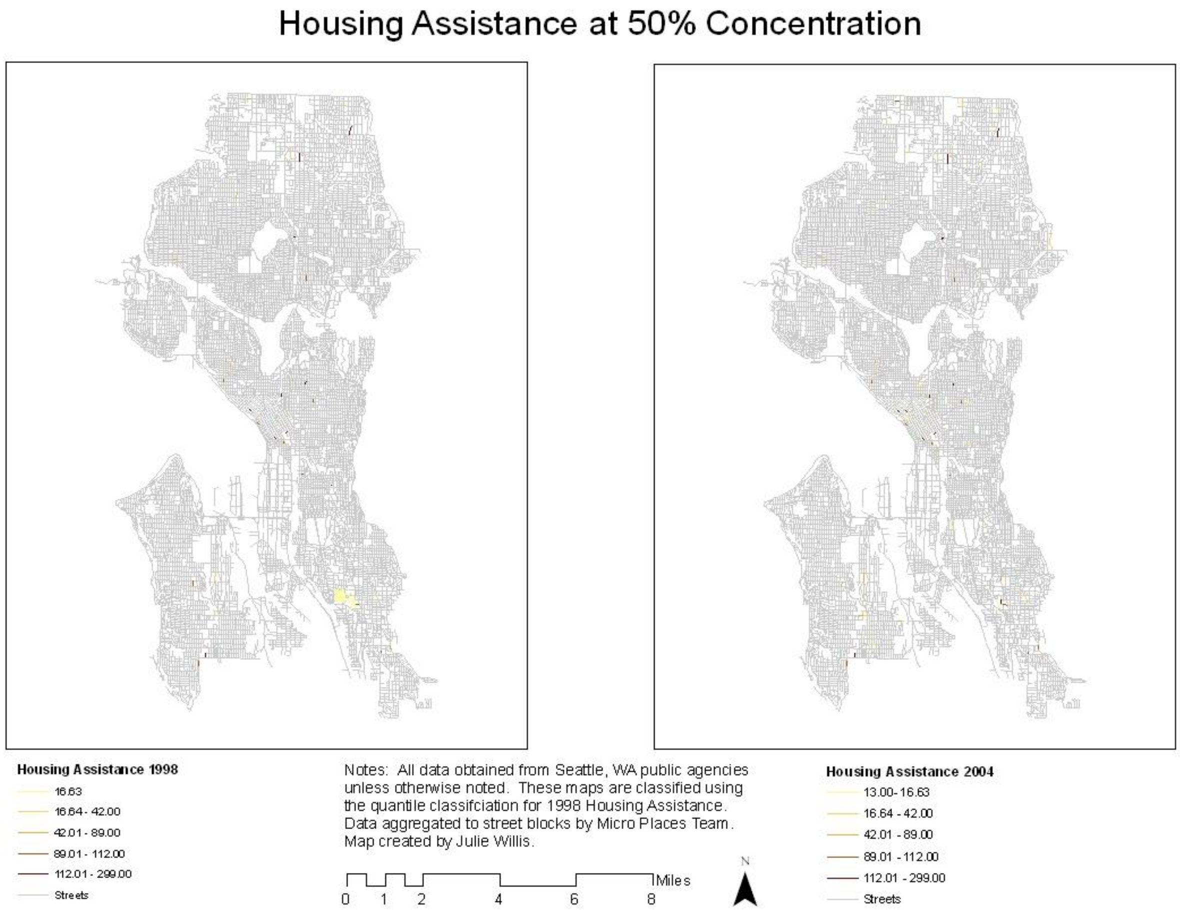
The quantile maps of housing assistance per street segment indicate areas of concentration in the north sector, the central sector and in north-south swaths in the south sector (see Figure 3.8). Compared to the locations of public housing above, it seems like the housing assistance program extends beyond the areas where public housing units are present.

Figure 3.8: Geographic Locations of Housing Assistance



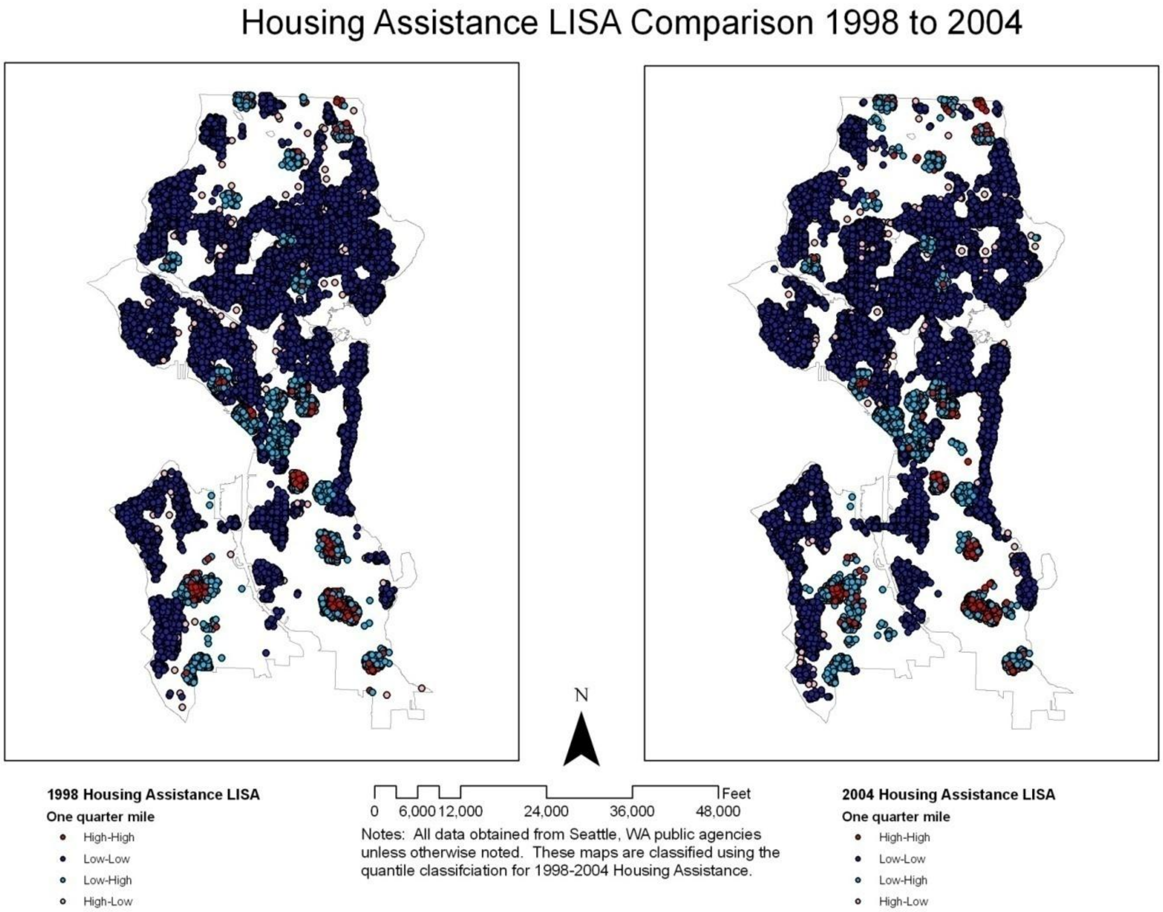
But if we only focus on the streets with the top 50 percent concentration of housing assistance, then the maps below now show a more spatially concentrated pattern (see Figure 3.9). In sum, the maps provide evidence of the dispersion of high housing assistance street segments across the city of Seattle; housing assistance is not clustered in just a few neighborhoods of the city.

Figure 3.9: Concentration Maps of Housing Assistance



The LISA maps more clearly identify the areas where streets with high numbers of public assistance units are interspersed with streets that have little or no housing assistance on them (see Figure 3.10). The maps also clearly identify the sections of the city with little or no housing assistance units at all (the dark blue areas). The spatial pattern of housing assistance is very stable over time, as the stability in the number of public housing units and Section 8 vouchers would predict.

Figure 3.10: LISA Maps of Housing Assistance 1998- 2004



Mixed Land Use

Type of land use has also been argued to shape crime rates of places under social disorganization perspectives (e.g. see Sampson & Groves, 1989). Places with a mixture of different land uses are assumed less likely to establish strong ties among residents, while places with mainly residential units are expected to evidence stronger ties among residents and have significantly lower crime rates (Roncek, 2000). These arguments can be examined using data collected in Seattle. In 1989, among all streets, 83.6 percent are at least partially used for residential purposes while 3.6 percent of areas are used for commercial purposes.

A key issue in assessing mixed land use is the lack of consensus on what level of mixture of land use is required to reach a tipping point that creates a high risk of increasing crime. Thus, there is no clear guideline to differentiate between homogeneous land use and what is considered mixed land use from the prior literature. The common practice is to define any place with less than 100 percent of total area used for residential purposes as including mixed land use (e.g. see Sampson & Groves, 1989; Wilcox et al., 2004). We used a more conservative measure of mixed land use with a threshold of 25 percent and 75 percent. The percent of residential land use had to be between 25 to 75 percent to be defined as mixed land use in our study

Table 3.2 describes mixed land use over time. Like the property value variable, the data between 1999 and 2003 are missing and thus are not included in the analysis. Over time, only about five percent of the total streets are classified as including mixed land use

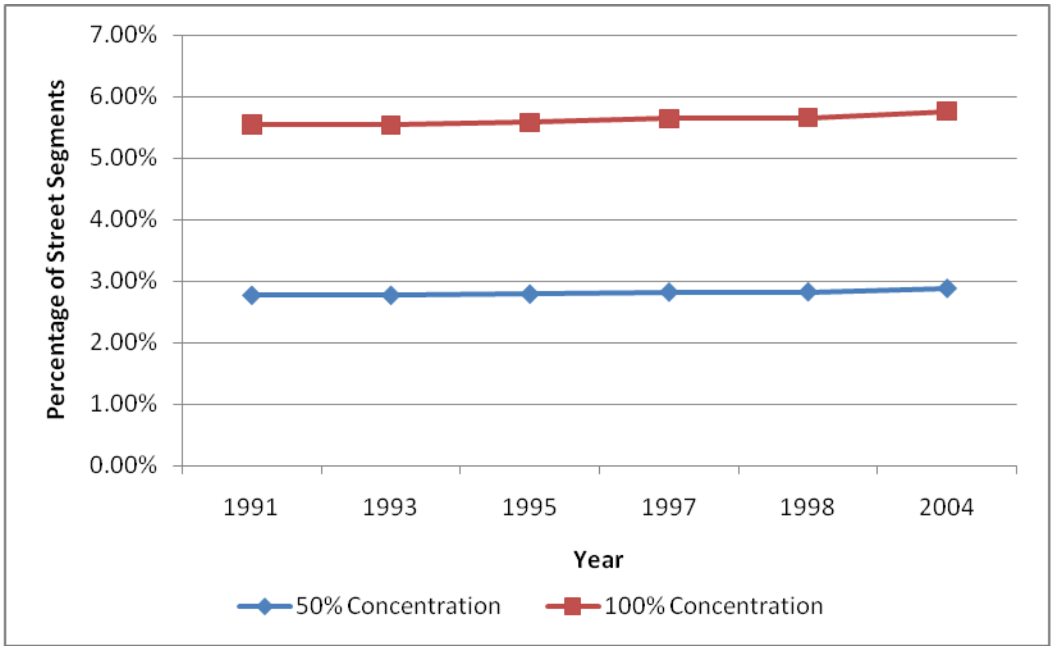
Table 3.2: Descriptive Statistics of Variable Representing Mixed Land Use **(**N = 19,635)

	1991	**1993**	**1995**	**1997**	**1998**	**2004**
Mean	.055	.055	.056	.056	.057	.058
Std. Dev.	.2288	.2287	.2295	.2308	.2310	.2330
Min.	0	0	0	0	0	0
Max	1	1	1	1	1	1

Mixed land use is an extremely concentrated phenomenon. As shown in Figure 3.11, less than three percent of street segments account for over 50 percent of segments with mixed land use. All the segments meeting the definition of mixed land use are found on around five to six percent of streets in Seattle. The percentages of mixed land use have been increasing in a steady fashion, but with a very minimal degree of increase (a 0.22 percent increase over 14 years).

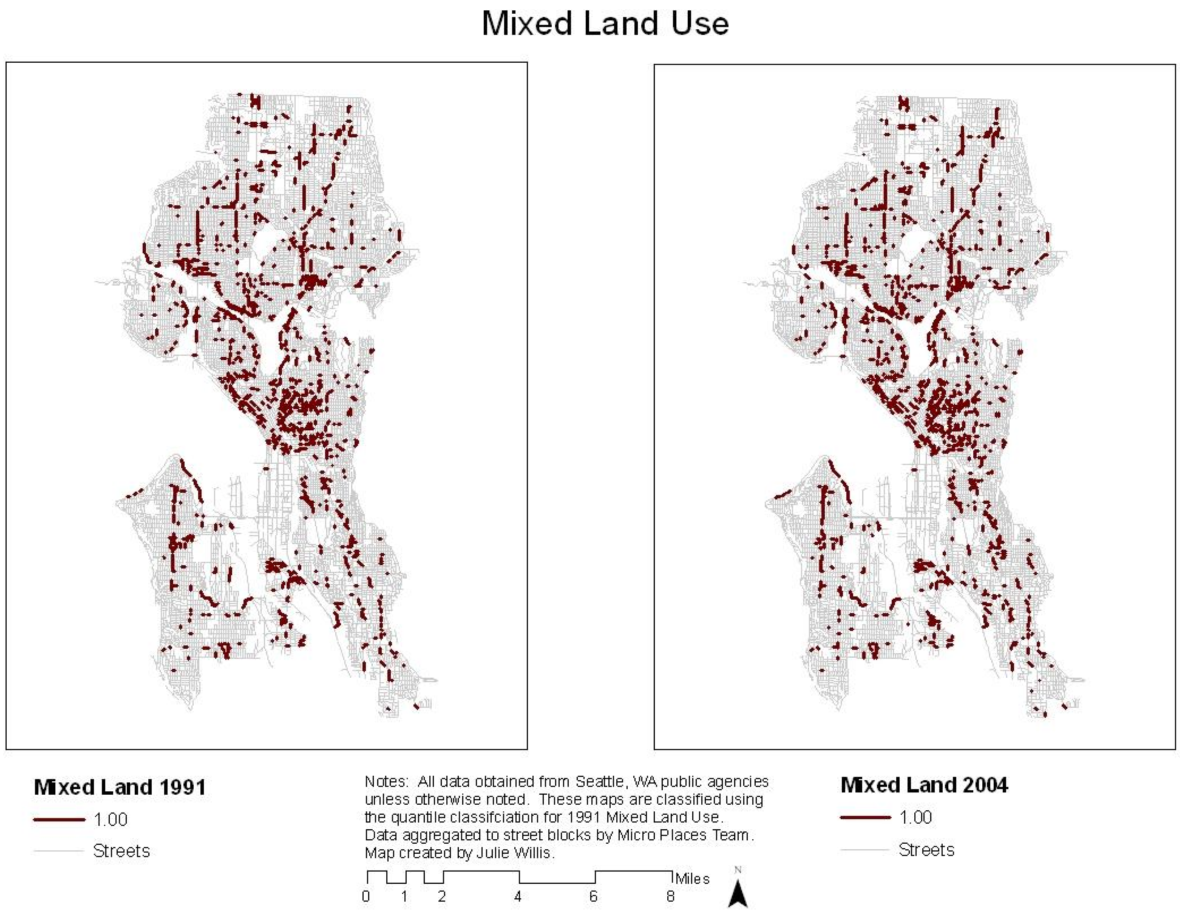
From the repeated measures analysis, there is a statistically significant change over time of the nature of land use of each street (F = 5.551, df = 1.499).

Figure 3.11: Concentration Graph of Mixed Land Use



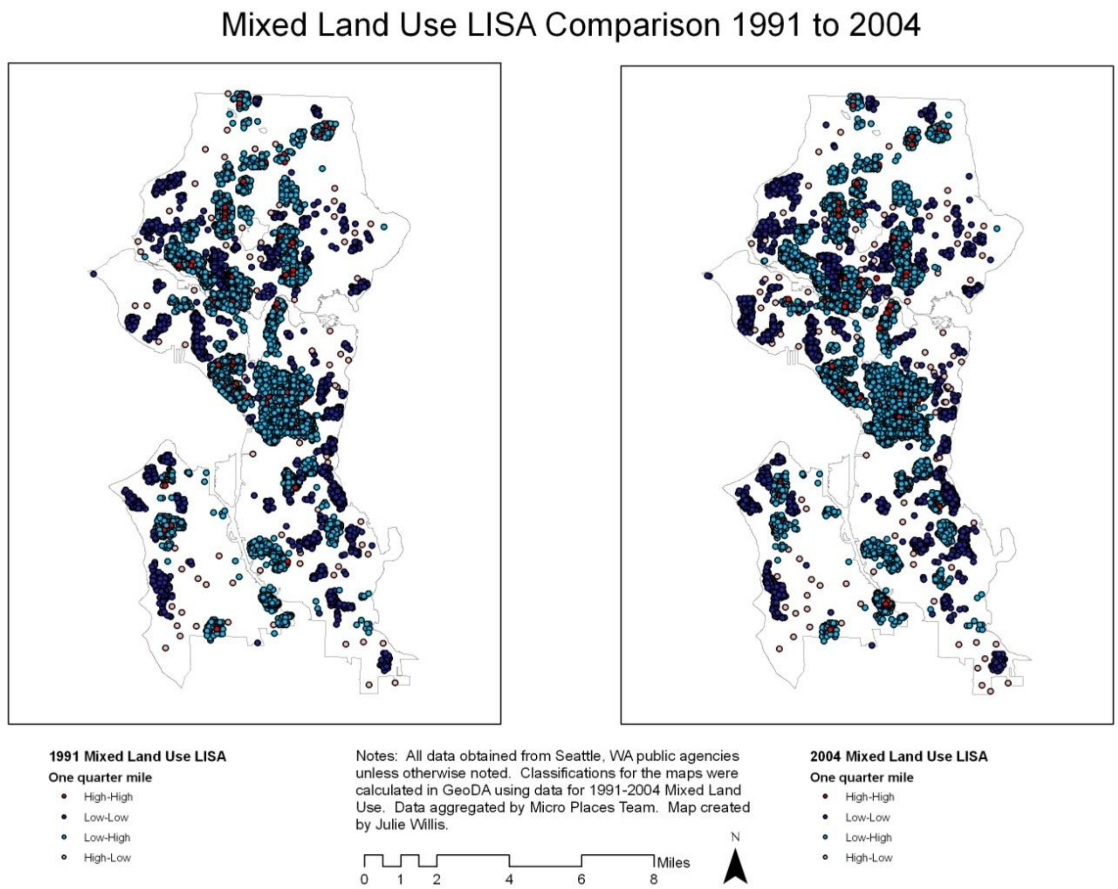
The results of geographic analyses are presented below. The first set of maps show where the streets with mixed land use are located (see Figure 3.12). As expected, mixed land use streets consist of higher volume streets often termed collector roads or arterials. Mixed land use streets are found most frequently in the center and northern sections of Seattle. Comparing the two maps below, it is obvious that the distribution patterns did not change much from the mean of 1999-2000 to the mean of 2004-2005.

Figure 3.12: Geographic Distributions of Streets with Mixed Land Use



The LISA maps below (see Figure 3.13) indicate the extent to which there is spatial correlations in the presence of mixed land use street segments. It is uncommon that a street with mixed land use is close to another street with mixed land use. However, it is common that streets with a single purpose of usage are surrounded by streets with mixed usage.

Figure 3.13: LISA Maps of Mixed Land Use of 1991 and 2004



Population Heterogeneity

Like many big cities in the U.S., Seattle is racially diverse. Unlike most of the big cities in the United States, however, Seattle has a large Asian population and a lower than average percentage of African American and Hispanic populations. According to the 2000 census, among Seattle's population, 70.1 percent is Caucasian, 8.4 percent is African American, 5.3 percent is Hispanic and 13.1 percent is Asian (the national average of Asian population in the US is 3.64 percent, Reeves & Bennett, 2004).

In social disorganization theories, racial heterogeneity has long been considered as a factor contributing to low social control (Kornhauser, 1978; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Bursik & Grasmick, 1993). A place with a more heterogeneous racial composition tends to be less cohesive and have a lower level of social control as the racial difference can sometimes become a barrier for people to communicate and identify with each other. Thus, residents are less likely to develop a strong tie and as a result, the population turnover rate is high. This can also be a result of a natural selection process, as places with more racial heterogeneity tend to have more rental properties or affordable housing. Consequently, crime tends to occur at places that are more heterogeneous, even if racial make-up itself might not lead to a high crime rate (Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]).

In prior studies, the percentage of blacks (or minority residents) has traditionally been used as an indicator of racial heterogeneity (see Blau & Blau, 1982; Messner, 1983). Williams (1984) pointed out that the relationship between the percentage of blacks and homicide rates is actually an inverted-U shape, not linear. The reason behind the phenomenon is simple: when a place has a high percentage of minority residents, it is actually more homogeneous than heterogeneous as minorities become the dominant group at that place. After passing the tipping point, the high percentage of minority residents actually leads to a more stable social control system and a lower crime rate. To support this argument, Williams reanalyzed data from Messner (1983) and Blau and Blau (1982) with the new specification and the performance of models improved substantially (variance explained increased 14 percent).

However, using the pure percentage of blacks can be a flawed approach. With the changes of population composition in the United States, using a percentage of blacks to represent population heterogeneity has become more and more problematic. As of the year 2000, Hispanics have surpassed blacks and have become the largest minority group in America. Additionally, Seattle has a disproportionate Asian population compared to the nationwide average. Thus, we follow an approach used by Smith et al. (2000) and Smith and Jarjoura (1988) and define racial heterogeneity using a probability-based approach. They multiply the percentage of whites by the percentage of non-whites to indicate the probability that two randomly selected individuals from an area will be members of different racial groups. To take into account the multi-racial feature of Seattle, we use the same formula mentioned above but further modify the approach to incorporate the racial dynamics in Seattle. Four racial groups were identified in this study including white, black, Asian, and Hispanic. The probabilities of each racial group to encounter another out-group member were then computed and averaged to form an overall racial heterogeneity index. The racial heterogeneity index was created based on the following equation

$$HETEROGENITY_j = \{(\%WHITE_j * \%NONWHITE_j) + (\%BLACK_j * \%NONBLACK_j) + (\%ASIAN_j * \%NONASIAN_j) + (\%HISPANIC_j * \%NONHISPANIC_j)\}/4$$

* j denotes year of information.

The overall index represents the level of heterogeneity of each street segment. To capture the complexity of racial heterogeneity in Seattle, a racial heterogeneity index was created by the method detailed above. Each street is assigned a score where the lowest possible score is 0, indicating no racial heterogeneity in the street, and the highest possible score is .1875 which represents a scenario of an extremely heterogeneous environment. After examining the data carefully, a cut-off point of .12 was chosen to distinguish streets that we consider are heterogeneous from streets that are more homogeneous.

Because census data are not available at the street segment level, we draw information on racial composition from data provided by the public schools in Seattle. We recognize at the outset that these data do not provide an accurate accounting of the overall racial composition of Seattle residents. For example, Seattle is estimated to be about 70 percent white in 2000 by the census bureau. In our data, about 40 percent of the students are defined as white in the same year. Nonetheless, we think that the student data provide the best method available for identifying racial heterogeneity at the street segment level. In this case, our interest is not in identifying an accurate portrait of the overall weighting of race in the city but rather the extent to which there is heterogeneity of race at the street segment level.

Based on the information of public school students, the overall racial compositions remain very stable over time (see Table 3.3). In Seattle's public schools, white students account for about 41 percent of the student population, 22-24 percent of students are Asians, 23 percent are blacks, around 7-11 percent of students are Hispanics, and around 3 percent of students are American Indians. It is worth noting that the Hispanic student population has shown a steady increase over the 12 years examined, starting from only 7 percent and then reaching 11 percent by the end of the series. Additionally, Asians and blacks are over-represented in the student population while whites are underrepresented compared to the general population in Seattle (see U.S. Census, 2000).

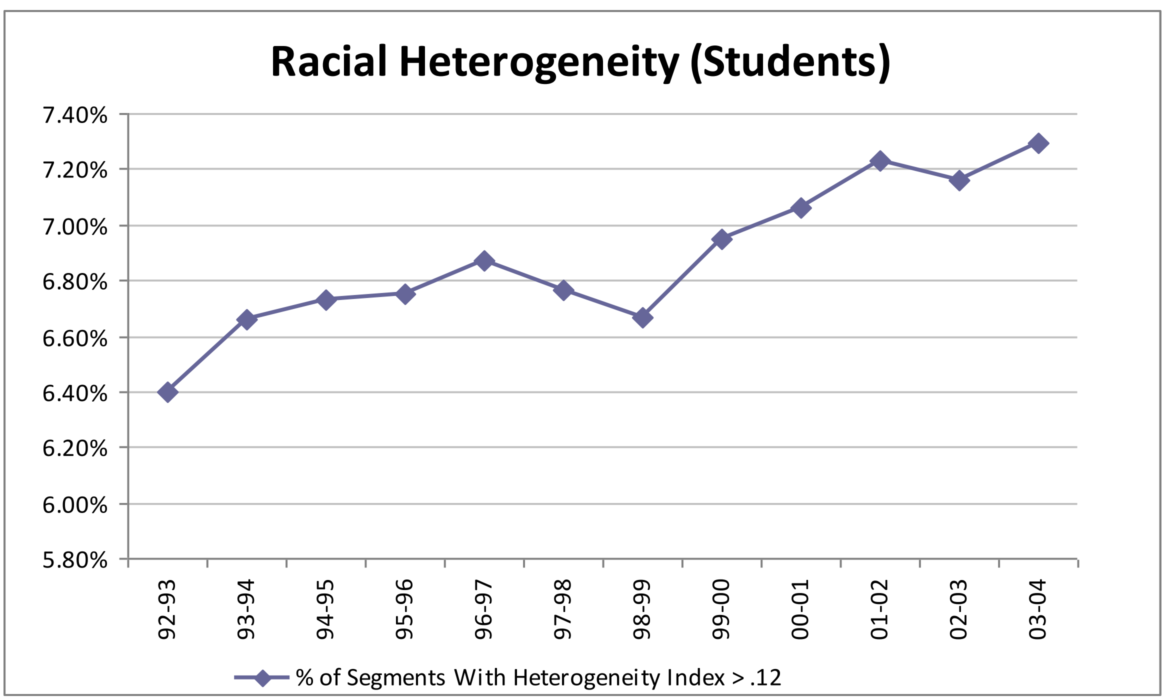
Table 3.3: Descriptive Statistics of Racial Distribution of Seattle's Public School Students from 1993 to 2004

Year		*White*	*Asian*	*Black*	*Hispanic*	*American Indian*	*Total*
1993							
	Sum	14,368	8,438	8,039	2,496	1,183	**34,524**
	Mean	0.594	0.349	0.332	0.103	0.049	
	Std. Dev.	1.596	1.804	1.485	0.542	0.326	
1994							
	Sum	14,599	8,604	8,110	2,604	1,208	**35,125**
	Mean	0.604	0.356	0.335	0.108	0.050	
	Std. Dev.	1.655	1.789	1.154	0.570	0.330	
1995							
	Sum	14,724	8,629	8,010	2,701	1,178	**35,242**
	Mean	0.609	0.357	0.331	0.112	0.049	
	Std. Dev.	1.630	1.750	1.526	0.595	0.315	

Year		*White*	*Asian*	*Black*	*Hispanic*	*American Indian*	*Total*
1996							
	Sum	14,676	8,580	7,959	2,920	1,177	**35,312**
	Mean	0.607	0.355	0.329	0.121	0.049	
	Std. Dev.	1.569	1.638	1.521	0.639	0.326	
1997							
	Sum	14,784	8,636	8,083	3,133	1,198	**35,834**
	Mean	0.611	0.357	0.334	0.130	0.050	
	Std. Dev.	1.552	1.594	1.533	0.682	0.322	
1998							
	Sum	14,678	8,566	7,985	3,134	1,136	**35,499**
	Mean	0.607	0.354	0.330	0.130	0.047	
	Std. Dev.	1.556	1.560	1.528	0.696	0.314	
1999							
	Sum	14,720	8,420	7,967	3,234	1,135	**35,476**
	Mean	0.609	0.348	0.330	0.134	0.047	
	Std. Dev.	1.590	1.449	1.700	0.731	0.317	
2000							
	Sum	14,806	8,479	8,385	3,337	1,148	**36,155**
	Mean	0.612	0.351	0.347	0.138	0.047	
	Std. Dev.	1.602	1.437	2.006	0.741	0.339	
2001							
	Sum	14,744	8,267	8,396	3,619	1,108	**36,134**
	Mean	0.610	0.342	0.347	0.150	0.046	
	Std. Dev.	1.602	1.359	2.002	0.846	0.311	
2002							
	Sum	14,887	8,315	8,438	3,862	1,084	**36,586**
	Mean	0.616	0.344	0.349	0.160	0.045	
	Std. Dev.	1.557	1.351	1.863	0.872	0.313	
2003							
	Sum	14,940	8,281	8,466	3,924	1,046	**36,657**
	Mean	0.618	0.343	0.350	0.162	0.043	
	Std. Dev.	1.567	1.340	1.858	0.862	0.303	
2004							
	Sum	14,801	8,204	8,354	4,020	975	**36,354**
	Mean	0.612	0.339	0.346	0.166	0.040	
	Std. Dev.	1.595	1.326	1.752	0.891	0.298	

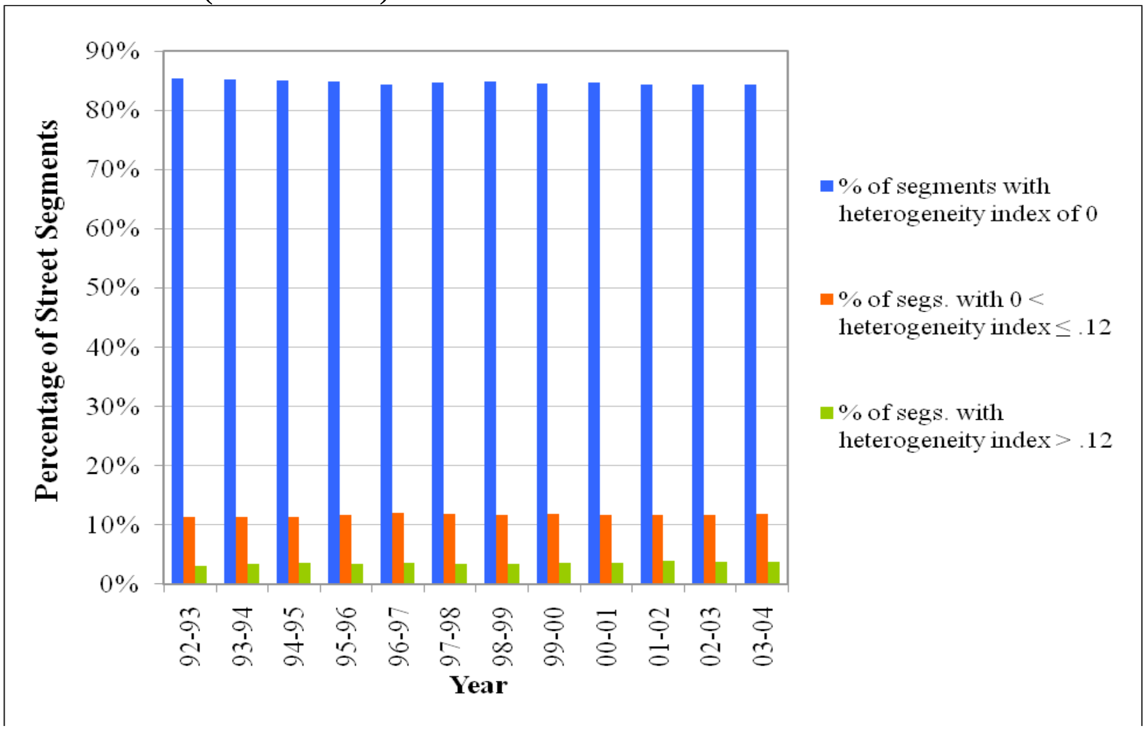
As mentioned earlier, we computed the racial heterogeneity index for all street segments in Seattle where any public school students live. We did not create a 50 percent and 100 percent concentration graph for this variable because it simply makes no sense to compute the concentration of a coefficient. Thus, the following graph merely shows the trend line of racial heterogeneity from student records (see Figure 3.14). In sum, the percentage of racially heterogeneous street segments (with a heterogeneity index greater than 0.12) was fairly stable at between 6 percent and 7.5 percent of Seattle street segments from the 1992-1993 to the 2003-2004 school year. Based on the results of repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 42.757, df = 6.679) and thus, the average racial heterogeneity value does vary over time.

Figure 3.14: The Trend of Racial Heterogeneity from 1992/1993 to 2003/2004 (school year)



The frequency distributions of the racial heterogeneity index show an extremely stable long term pattern. Between the 1993 and the 2004 school year, the percentage of segments with a racial heterogeneity index of 0 is consistently between 84 and 85.5 percent of total Seattle street segments. In other words, the majority of the streets in Seattle are homogeneous. Between 11 and 12 percent of the street segments have some levels, but not substantial, racial heterogeneity (coefficient greater than 0 but less than or equal to .12) during the study period (See Figure 3.7). The percentage of street segments with a racial heterogeneity index of greater than .12 is consistently between 3 and 4 percent of total segments from 1993 to 2004 (See Figure 3.15). In this sense, there are clearly hot spots of racial heterogeneity in Seattle during the study period.

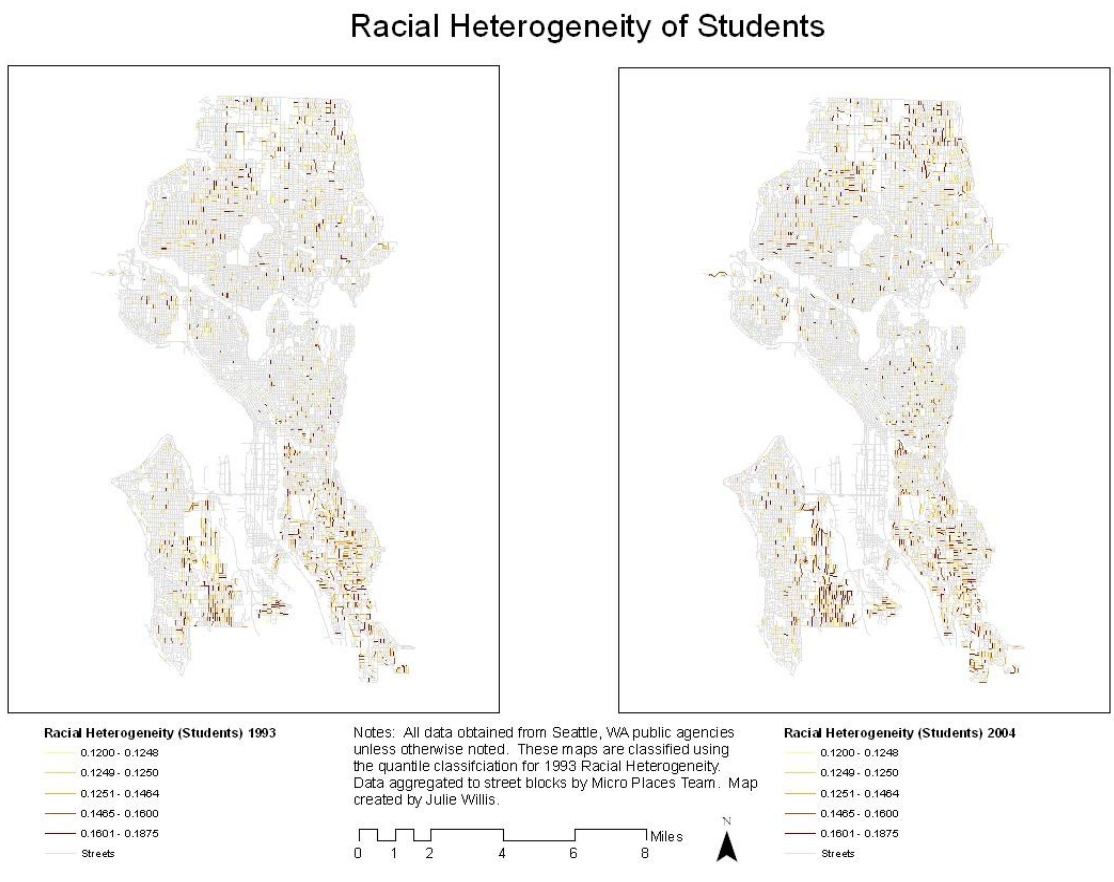
Figure 3.15: Frequency Distributions of Racial Heterogeneity Index, Racial Heterogeneity Coefficient .12 (Student Data)



Note: The two street segments with an index score of .13 in 94-95 were included in the 0 < index ≤.12 group

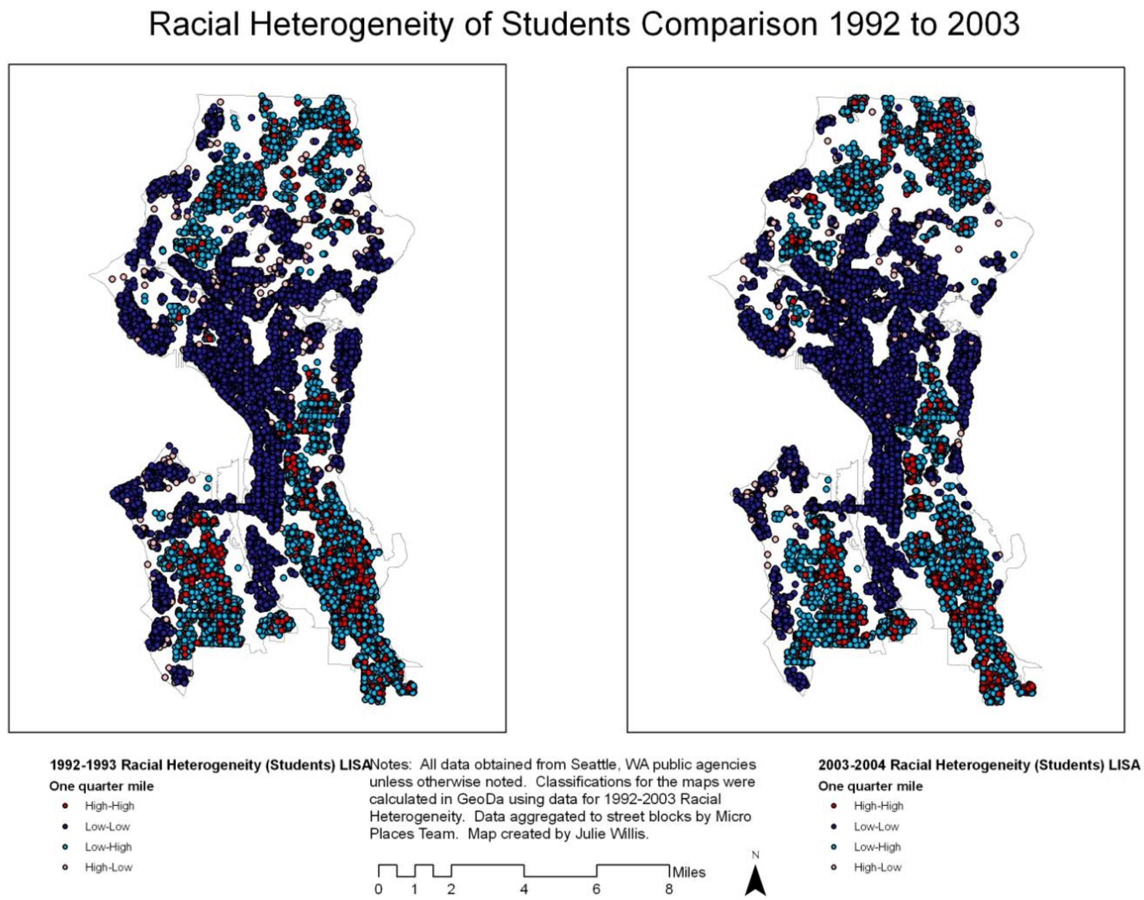
The quantile maps below show the distributions of most racially heterogeneous streets in Seattle based on public school student records (see Figure 3.16). Street segments that are very heterogeneous are found throughout the city of Seattle with the exception of downtown and the industrial area in the southern section. The highest densities are in the southeastern and southwestern sections. The northern section also has quite a few street segments that are heterogeneous. However, there are very few dots that appeared in the northern section. As far as temporal change, the northern and southwestern sections seem to have increased in heterogeneity over the study period.

Figure 3.16: Geographic Distribution of Racial Heterogeneity (Student Data)



The patterns described based on the quantile map are even easier to see in the LISA maps (see Figure 3.17). There are large swaths of positive (low-low) spatial autocorrelation. There are also large swaths of negative spatial autocorrelation (highly heterogeneous street segments surrounded by more homogenous street segments) intermixed with positive spatial autocorrelation (high-high) revealing concentrations of places of high heterogeneity. The northern, east central, southwestern and southeastern sections all follow the latter pattern.

Figure 3.17: LISA Maps of Racial Heterogeneity (Student Data)



Distance to City Center (Urbanization)

The quantile map of distance to the center of the city[4] (Figure 3.18) is provided to assist with visualizing the quantile breaks. The center of the city, the area with the light color, indicates the most urbanized area in Seattle. The degree of urbanization goes down with the outward pattern just as we see in the classic concentric patterns proposed by the Chicago School. The darker it gets, the less urbanized is the place.

---

[4] The geographic center we used is per website (http://www.waymarking.com/waymarks/WM29A8 which indicated N 47° 37.271 W 122°).

Street distance was calculated from the geographic center of Seattle to every street segment using street distance. This method takes into account the road network when calculating distances. This translates to 331 Minor Ave N as the city center.

Figure 3.18: Distance to the Center of Seattle

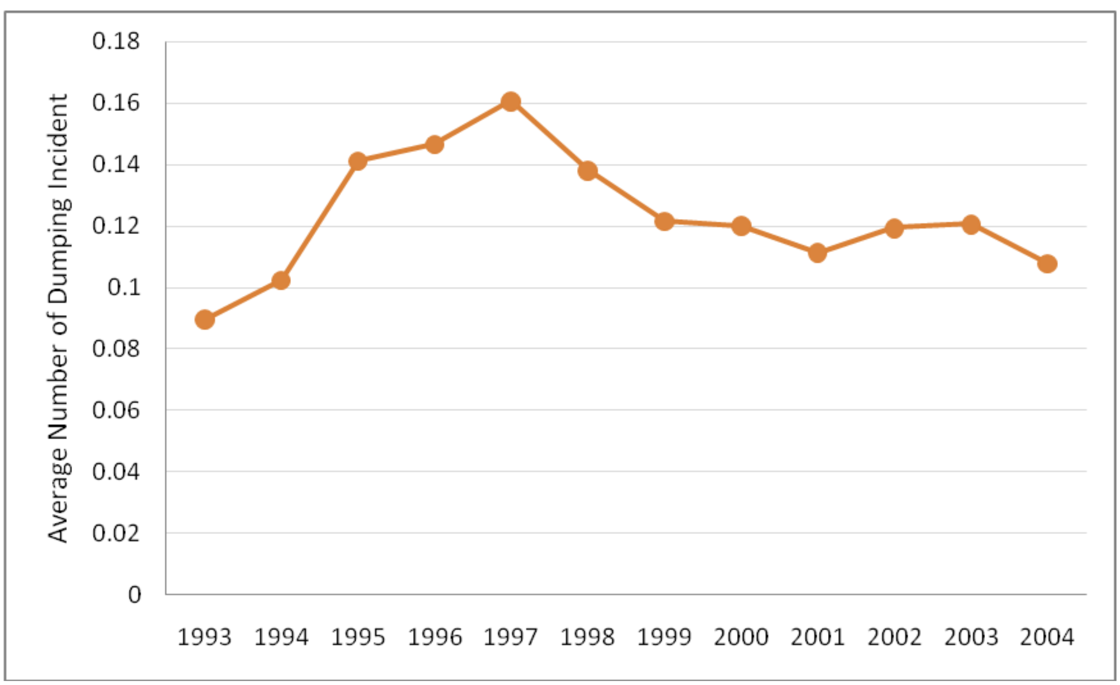
Physical Disorder

Another important variable in our analysis measures the physical condition of street segments. Social disorganization theory argues that a disorganized place includes litter, abandoned buildings, broken windows, etc. (Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]). Thus, physical conditions can be viewed as proxies for the level of organization of places.

Data on physical disorder were provided by the Seattle Public Utility Service and contained information from 1993 to 2004. The data base included the frequency and volume of physical disorder reported to the authority on each street. Physical disorder measured included illegal dumping, litter, graffiti, weeds, vacant buildings, inoperable cars on the street, junk storage, exterior abatement, substandard housing and minor property damage. The sources of information included residents' reports, inspectors' reports, and other agencies' information filed to the Seattle Public Utility Service.

From Figure 3.19 we can see that the trend of physical disorder reports in Seattle looks like a classic boom and bust cycle with a long and fairly steady increase that reaches a peak in 1997 and then trails off dramatically until the end of the series (see Figure 3.19).

Figure 3.19: Trend of Physical Disorder from 1993-2004



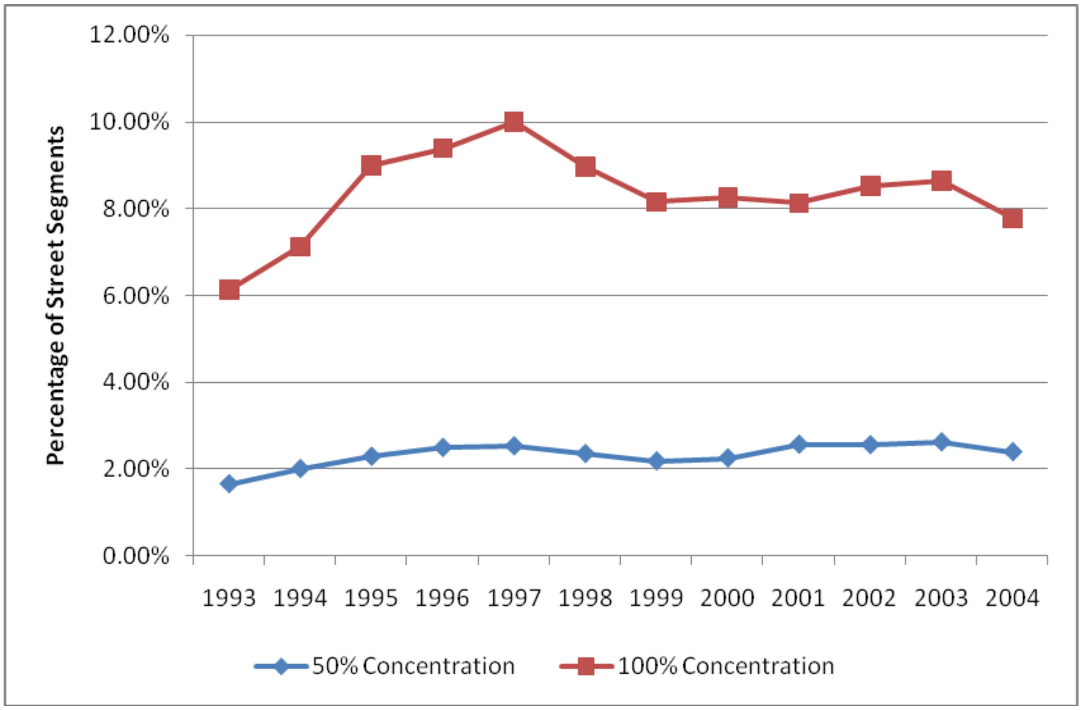
The summary statistics for physical disorder are shown in Table 3.4. The changing nature of the trend is also confirmed by the repeated measures analysis. According to the repeated measures analysis results, the means of number of physical disorder incidents do not stay the same over time and the differences reach statistical significance at the .001 level (F = 48.600, df = 10.090).

Table 3.4: Descriptives of Physical Disorder

Year	Minimum	Maximum	Sum	Mean	Std. Deviation
1993	0	16	2161	.09	.459
1994	0	13	2472	.10	.460
1995	0	38	3412	.14	.626
1996	0	15	3542	.15	.574
1997	0	12	3885	.16	.624
1998	0	17	3336	.14	.568
1999	0	13	2935	.12	.510
2000	0	27	2901	.12	.528
2001	0	11	2687	.11	.447
2002	0	11	2882	.12	.477
2003	0	10	2913	.12	.470
2004	0	26	2601	.11	.488

Similar to the mixed land use variable, physical disorder incidents are found to be extremely concentrated (see Figure 3.20). Over 50 percent of incidents were found on between 1.5 and 3 percent of street segments. The concentration line for 100 percent of the physcial disorder measure shows more variation over time, ranging from 6.1 percent in 1993 to 10.0 percent in 1997. In total, between 6 and 10 percent of streets account for all the physical disorder incidents in the city over time. Overall, the percentage of street segments shows a increase from 1993 to 1997, then a decline to 1999 and a fairly stable trend until 2004.

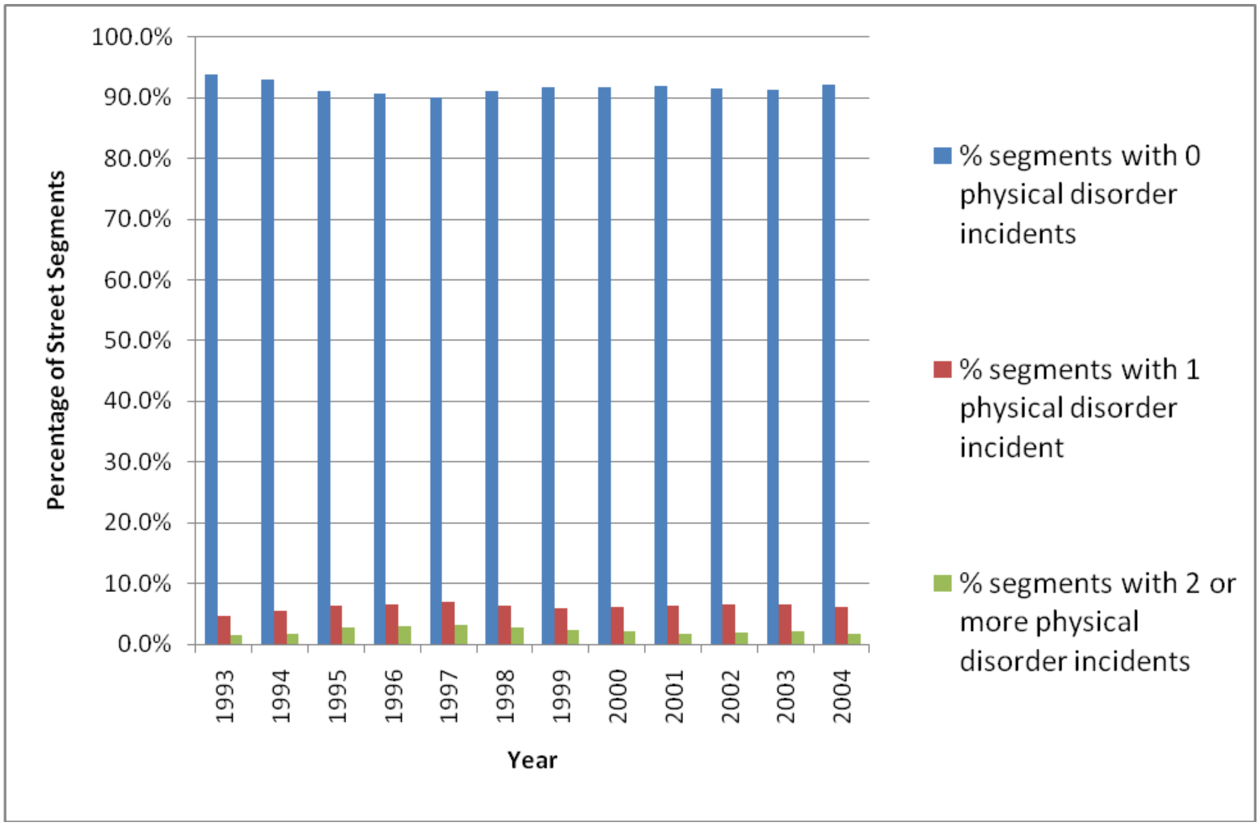
Figure 3.20: Concentration Graph of Physical Disorder Incidents



The frequency distributions of physical disorder incidents remained quite stable over the study period. Over 90 percent of streets had no physical disorder incidents, about 6 percent of streets had 1 incident, and about 2 percent of streets had 2 or more incidents per year.

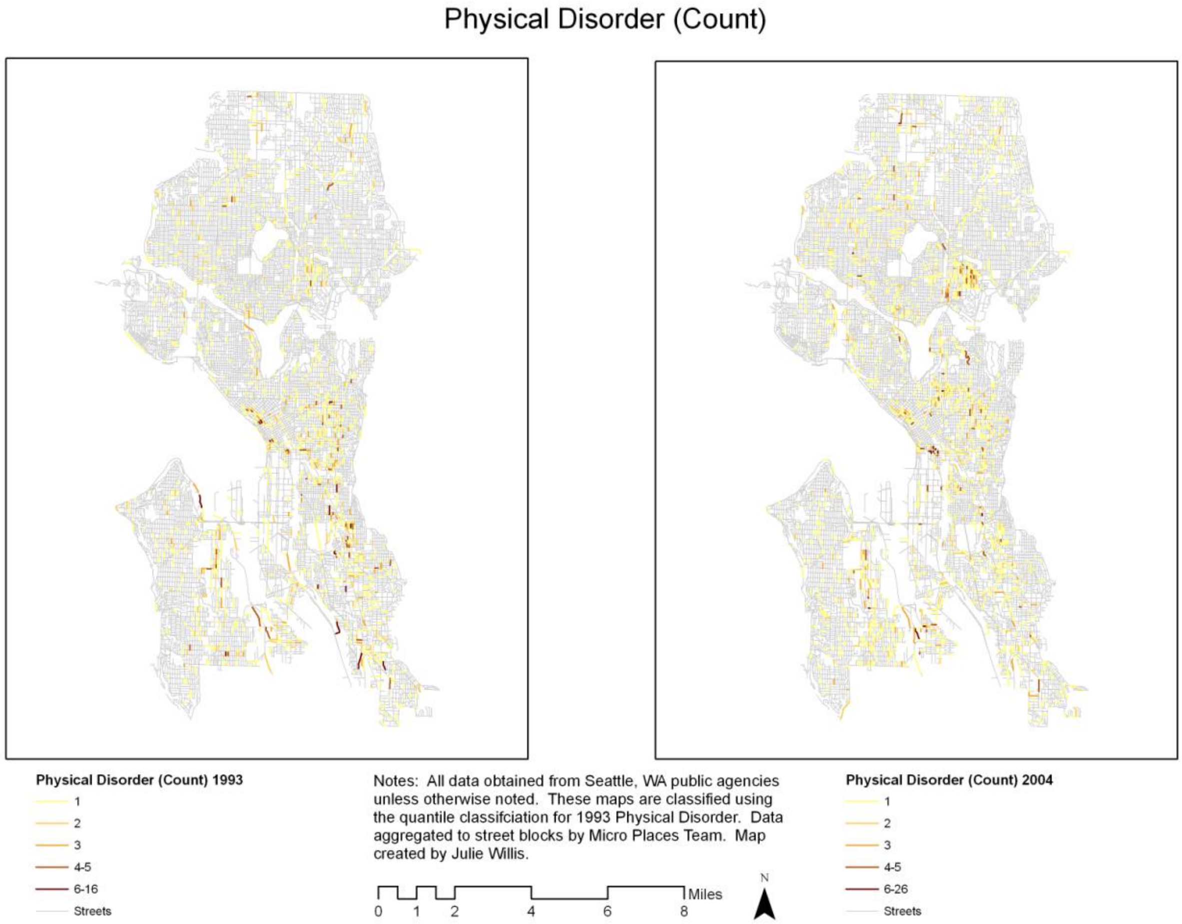
The percentage of street segments with no reports of physical disorder declined from 1993 to 1997 and then increased slightly before remaining relatively stable through 2004. The percentage of street segments with 1 disorder incident ranges from 4.5 to 7.0 percent of total street segments, showing an increase from 1993 to 1997 followed by a slight decline and then a stable trend from 1998-2004. The percentage of street segments with 2 or more reports of physical disorder ranges from a low of 1.5 percent in 1993 to a high of 3.1 percent in 1997 and shows a similar trend of increase followed by decline and relative stability (see Figure 3.21).

Figure 3.21: Frequency Distributions of Physical Disorder Over Time



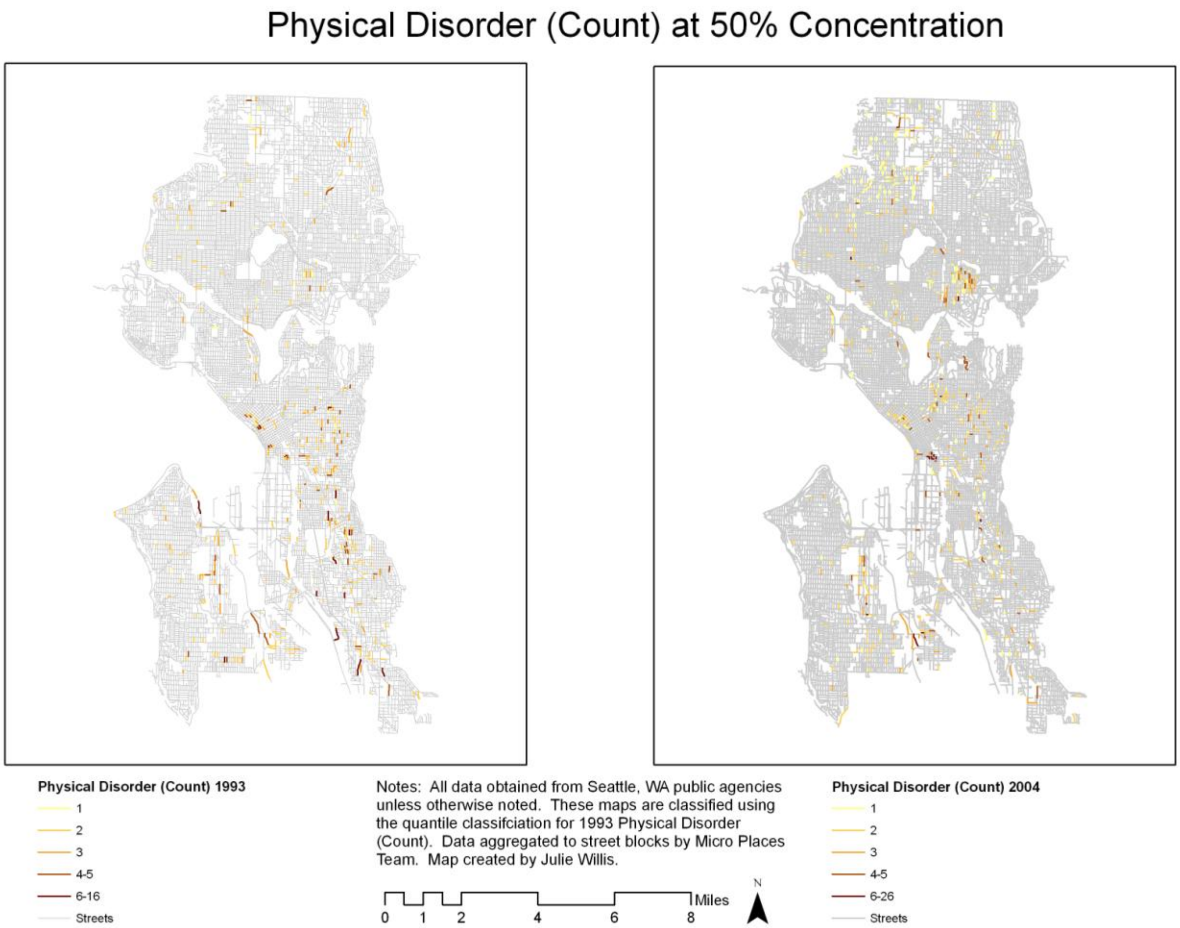
According to Figure 3.12 physical disorder is widespread in Seattle (see Figure 3.22). However, the quantile map indicates there are areas with higher numbers of reports of disorder. These areas include the center and southeastern sections. A new area of concentration appears in the south central part of the northern section in the years of 2004-2005.

Figure 3.22: Geographic Distribution of Physical Disorder Incidents (1993 vs. 2004)



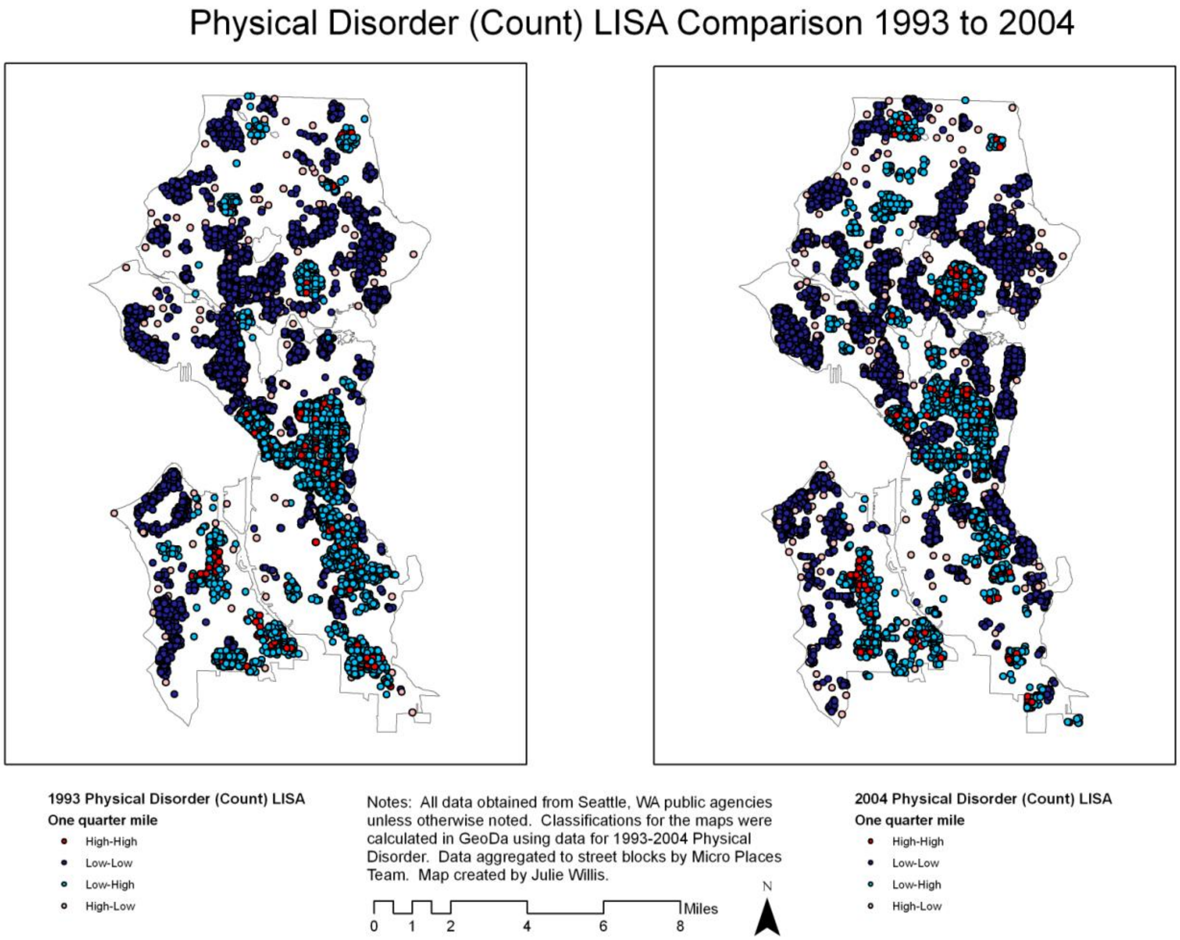
The 50 percent concentration maps below provide a visualization of the street segments that account for half of all reports of physical disorder (see Figure 3.23). These two maps indicate that street segments with the highest number of incidents seem to have shifted somewhat from the southeastern sector to one particular area in the south central portion of the north sector of the city. Otherwise the overall pattern of higher concentration in the center section remains consistent over the time period.

Figure 3.23: 50 Percent Concentration Maps of Physical Disorder Incidents



The LISA maps make the patterns even clearer (see Figure 3.24). The concentration of high incident streets surrounded by other high incident streets is easy to see (red dots). The concentration in the northern sector that seemed to appear in 2004 actually already had emerged in 1993; the pattern just became much more significant in 2000.

Figure 3.24: LISA Maps of Physical Disorder Count (1993 vs. 2004)



Intermediating Variables

After the 1970s, the popularity of social disorganization theory declined, and the classic theory was criticized as being tautological because crime can be viewed both as a proxy of social disorganization and a result of the social disorganization of places (see Bursik, 1988). Research findings indicate that the relationship between the structural variables and crime is not linear, but conditioned by the level of social control at place (Hayslett-McCall, 2008). To address this problem, recent conceptualizations of social disorganization theory generally incorporate social control or similar concepts as the mediating mechanism linking the structural characteristics and outcome variables like crime (see Bursik, 1988; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson & Wilson, 1995). The mediating mechanism generally represents the level of systemic networks, kinship, and social control necessary for a place to effectively exercise strong social controls. The common factors identified in prior studies to operationalize the concepts include participation in local organizations (Taylor et al., 1984; Sampson & Groves, 1989), willingness (or perception of responsibility) to intervene in public affairs (Taylor et al., 1984; Sampson et al., 1997), local friendship networks (Sampson & Groves, 1989), mutual trust (Sampson et al., 1997), and unsupervised teens (Sampson & Groves, 1989). These variables are believed to condition the effects of structural disadvantage on local crime problems. By incorporating the mediating factors, social disorganization theorists argue that social disorganization is now "clearly separable not only from the processes that may lead to it….but also from the degree of criminal behavior that may be a result" (Bursik, 1988; cited in Sampson & Wilson, 1995, p. 46).

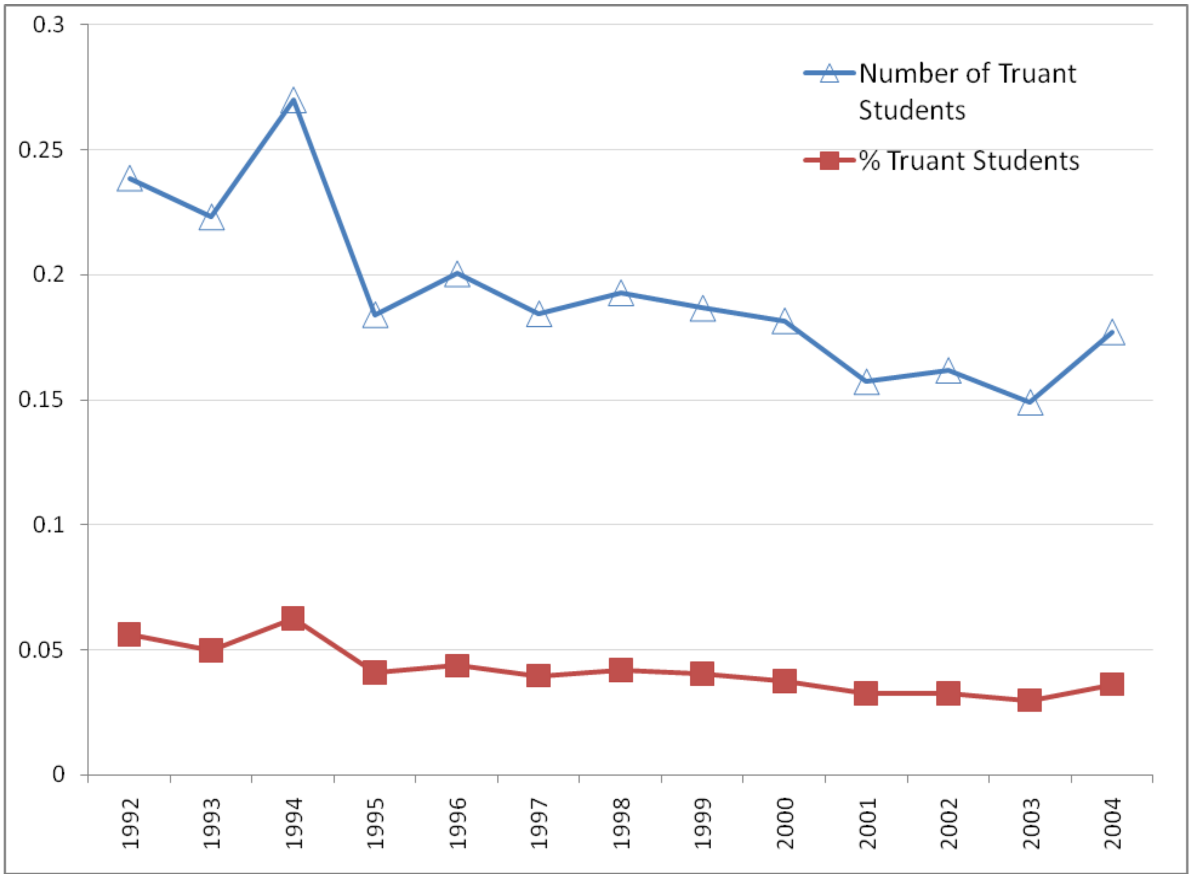
In this study, we include the number of unsupervised teens, and percent of active voters to represent local social control as well as collective efficacy on each street segment.

Unsupervised Teens

This concept was first conceptualized by Sampson and Groves (1989, p. 778), who argue that "communities that are unable to control street-corner teenage groups will experience higher rates of delinquency than those in which peer groups are held in check through collective social control." It is not because these street-corner teenagers are all "criminals" but the appearance of unsupervised teens in the street corner is evidence of the lack of social control in a community. Accordingly, a community with fewer kids wandering on a street during school time is better at controlling its residents than a community with many truant students unattended—assuming they have equal student populations. In this study, we use the number of truant students on each street to represent the concept of unsupervised teens. When identifying truant students, we use the public school student data described in the earlier section. To determine truancy, we followed the definition used by Seattle's Department of Education, which considers a student who has more than 10 unexcused absences in a school year to be truant.

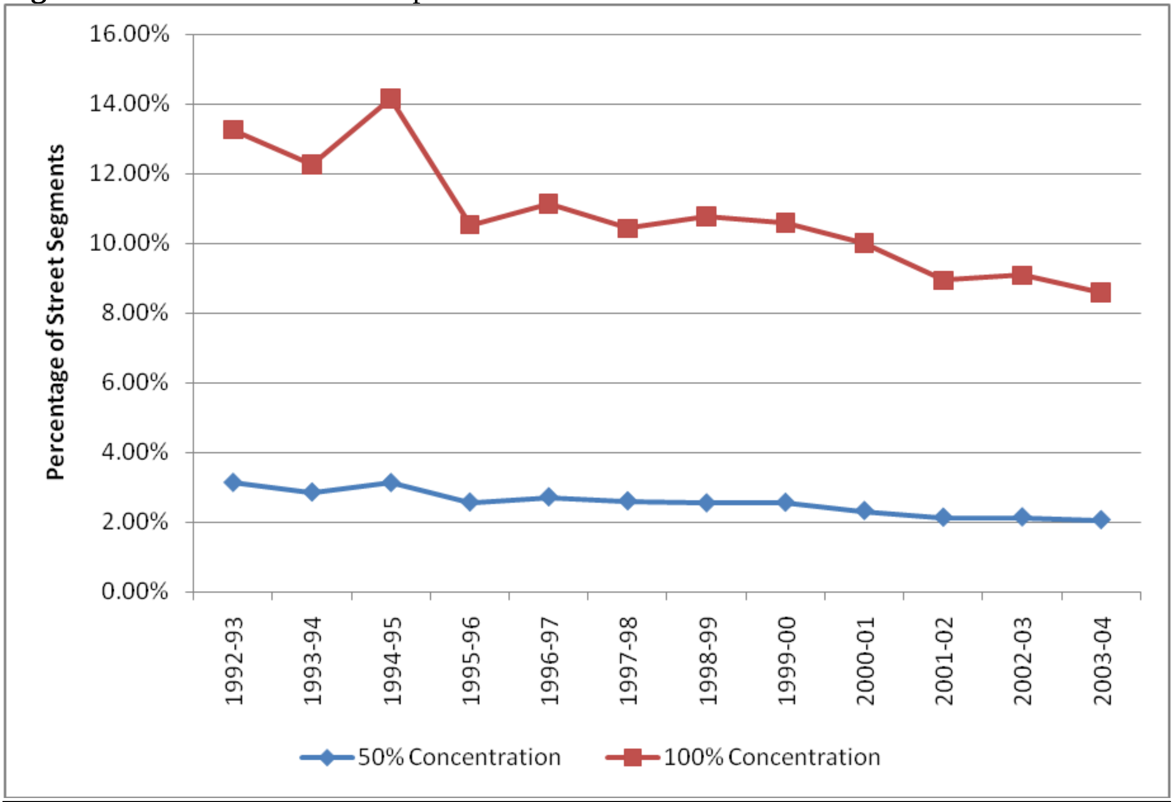
Figure 3.25 shows two trends regarding student truancy—number of truant students and percentage of truant students relative to all students on a street. The average number of truant students living on a specific street segment has been declining during the 13 year period, except for the 1994-1995 school year. According to the results of repeated measures tests, there has been a significant change in the total number of truant students on streets over time. Similarly, the percentages of truant students per street follow the same pattern as the number of truants per street.

Figure 3.25: Number and Percentage of Truant Students on Streets



From Figure 3.26 it is clear that truancy is also a highly concentrated phenomenon. Fifty percent of truant students are consistently found to live on between 2 and 3.5 percent of the total street segments. All of the truant students are found on between 8 and 14.5 percent of the total street segments over time. The percentage shows a sharp decline from 1994-1995 and then a very slow decline until 2003-2004. According to the results of the repeated measures test, the number of truant juveniles on each segment changed over time (F = 100.612 ,df = 6.821).

Figure 3.26: Concentration Graph of Truant Students



Furthermore, the prevalence rate of truancy seems to get lower over time in Seattle (see Figure 3.27). Between 1992-1993 and 2004-2005, the percentage of segments without any truant students increased from 86.7 percent to 91.4 percent. Streets with one truant student also declined from 8.4 percent in 1992-1993 to 5.7 percent in 2003-2004. The percent of streets with four or more truant students dropped from 2.2 percent of the city to 1.3 percent of the city. Generally speaking, the truancy problem has been improving in Seattle, except for the year of 1994-1995 where we observed a small peak in the number of truant students.

Figure 3.27: Frequency Distributions of Truant Students

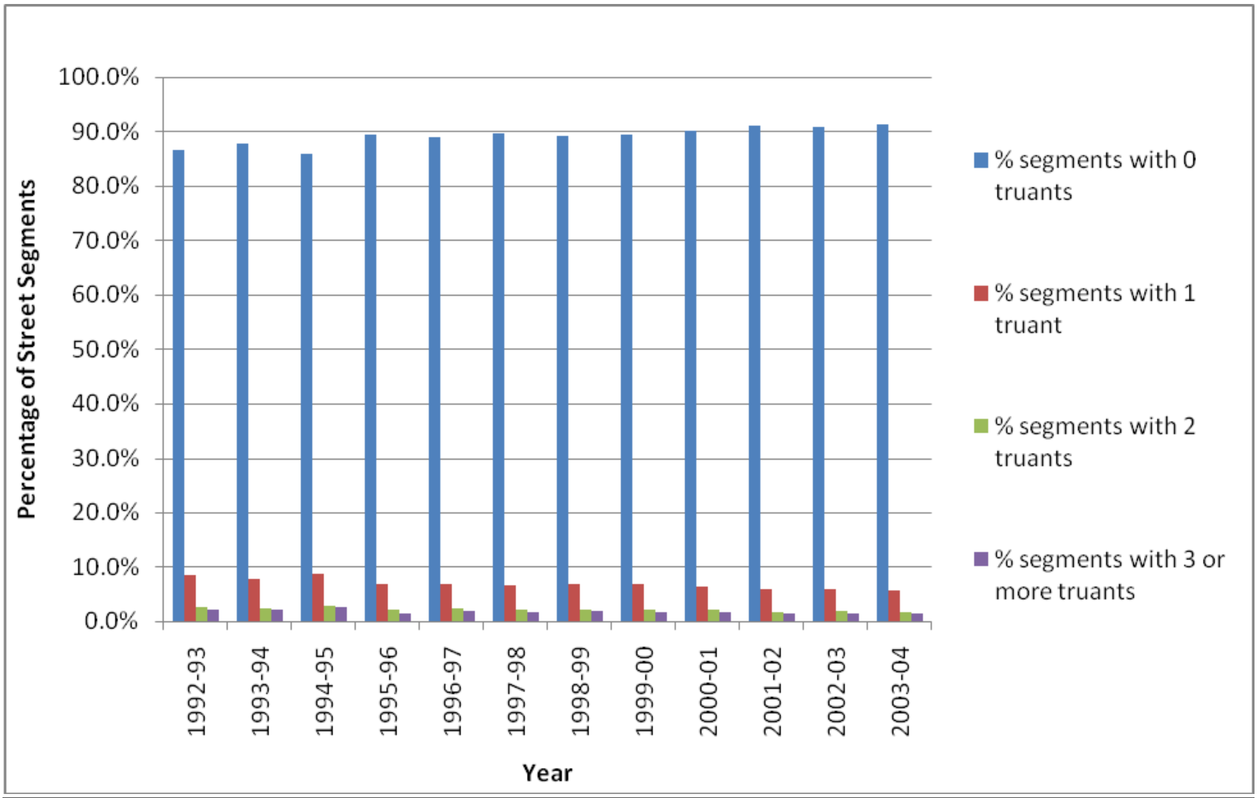
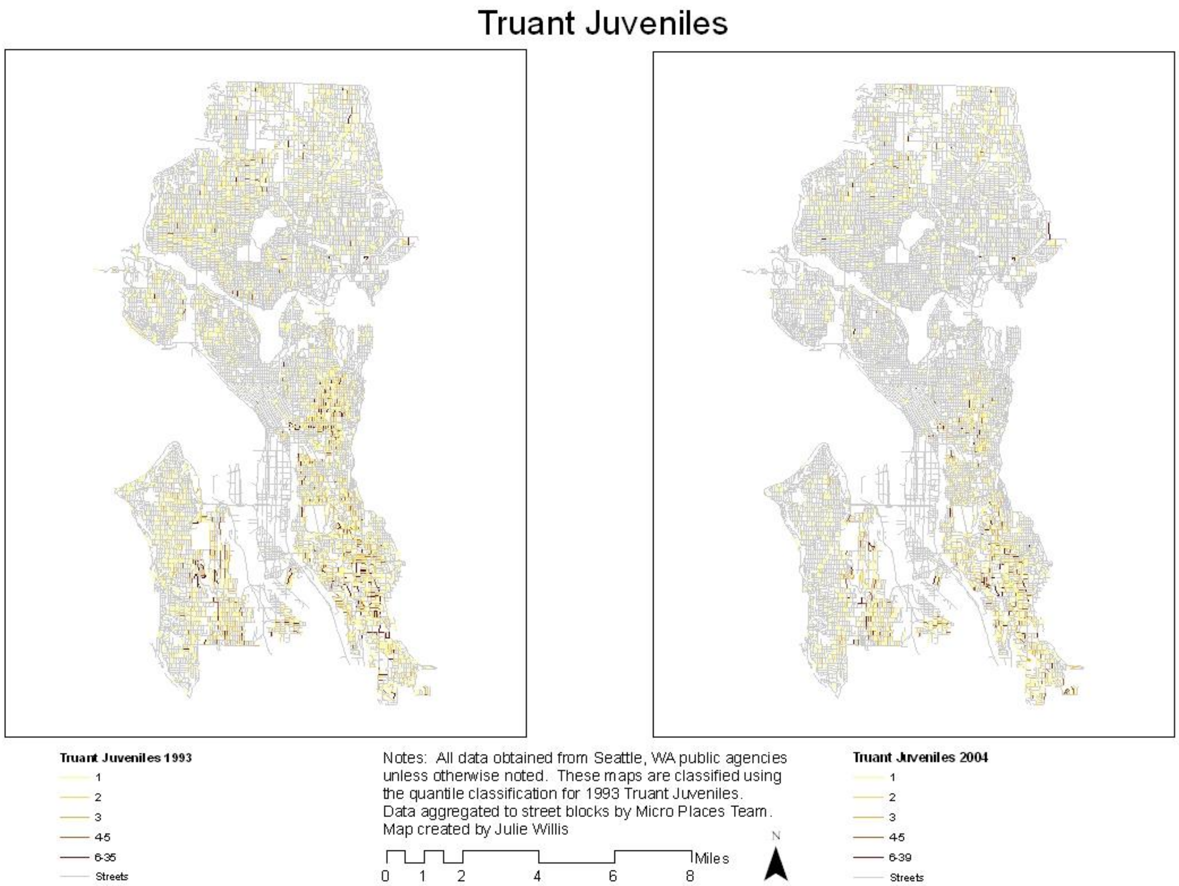


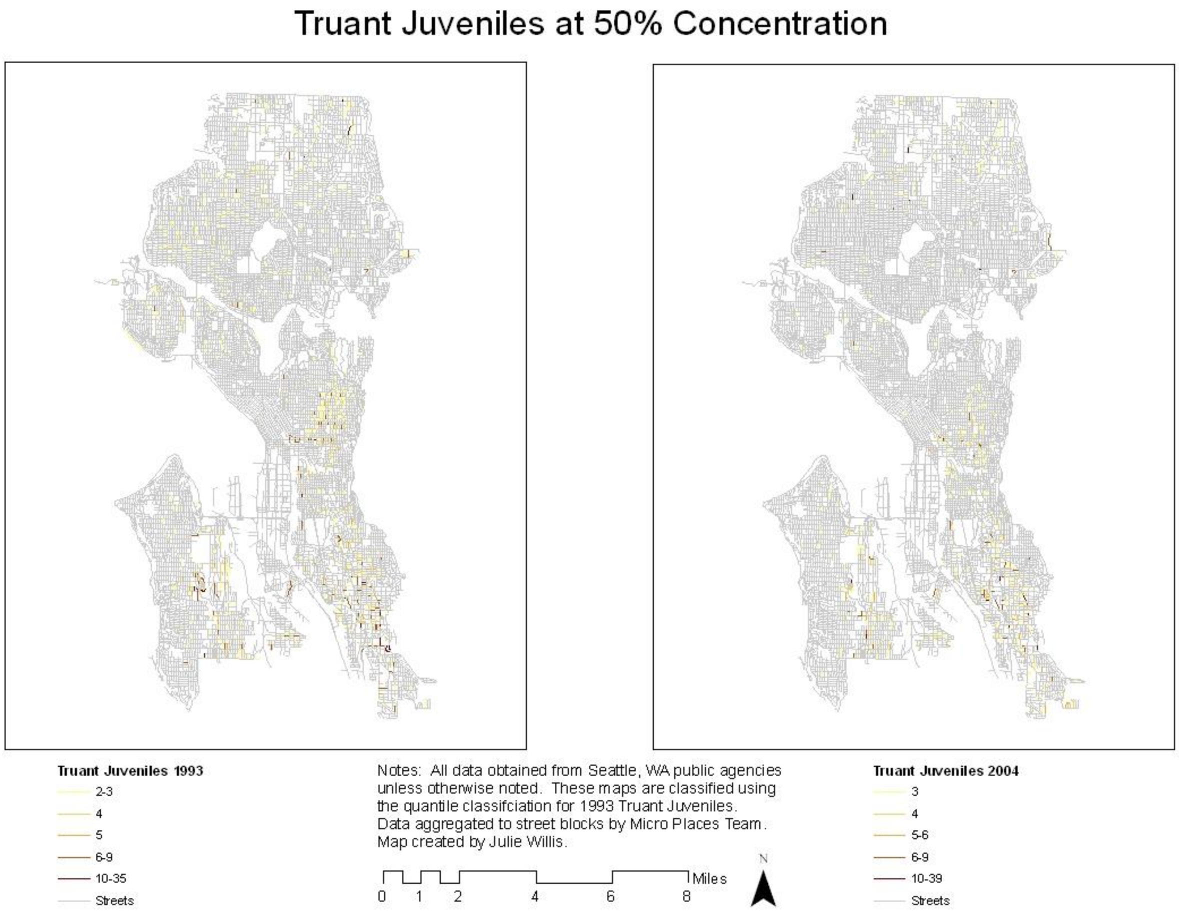
Figure 3.28 indicates that truant juveniles are found all over Seattle, but the highest concentrations are in the central and southeast sectors, followed by the southwest and north sectors (see Figure 3.28). The central and southeast sectors have large sections where many streets in close proximity to one another have more than one truant juvenile and other nearby streets fall into the highest categories with four or more truant juveniles.

Figure 3.28: Geographic Distributions of Truant Juveniles



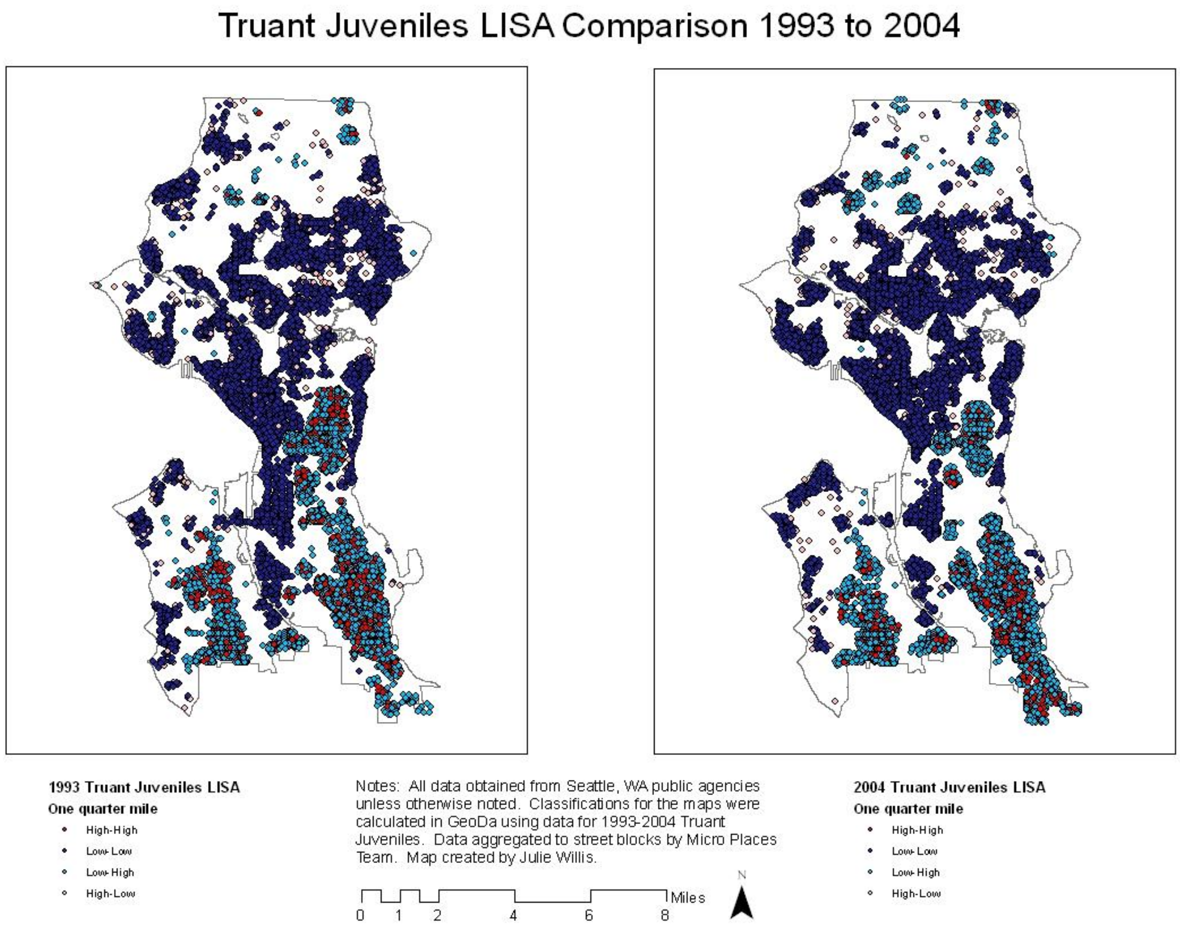
The 50 percent concentration maps provide a look at those street segments that account for 50 percent of all truants (see Figure 3.29). Most of these street segments are found in the southeastern sector of the city. However, there are distinct temporal changes between the 1992 and the 2004 pattern of truant juvenile home addresses. In 1992, the central sector of the city had many contributing street segments, but in 2004 there were only a few. Also, in 1992 there were isolated contributing street segments found all over the northern sector of the city, but again in 2004 there were only a few. The losses in the central and north sectors translated into gains in the south, especially the southeast sector.

Figure 3.29: Geographic Distributions of 50 Percent Concentration of Truant Juveniles



The LISA map suggests tremendous street segment to street segment variation consisting of both negative (light blue) and positive (red) spatial autocorrelation in the high truant areas of the south and the central sections in both years (see Figure 3.30). It also reveals the more isolated nature of high truant street segments as instances of negative spatial autocorrelation (light red). Finally, streets with none or very few truants surrounded by other streets with none or very few truants appear as large areas of positive spatial autocorrelation (dark blue). These areas often have a few high truant streets which are significantly different than the streets surrounding them (light red).

Figure 3.30: LISA Maps of Truant Juveniles



Collective Efficacy: Willingness to Intervene in Public Affairs

In a later revision of social disorganization theory, Sampson and colleagues (1997) extended the concept of social control to emphasize the capacity of a community to realize common values and regulate behavior within it through cohesive relationships and mutual trust among residents (see also Sampson, 2004). Sampson and colleagues believe that the key factor determining the crime rate of places is a sense of good community, or collective efficacy of a community. A community with strong collective efficacy is characterized by "high capacities for collective action for the public good" (St. Jean, 2007, p. 3).

Voting Participation

One important indicator of collective efficacy is residents' willingness to participate in public affairs. In the past, voting behavior has been used as a proxy to represent residents' conformity to social control. For example, Coleman (2002) used voter turnout rates to predict local crime rates at the county level. He argued that voting turnout rates are reasonable measures of residents' conformity to social norms; thus, they can represent the strength of social control at places. In the study, he found an inverse U-shaped relationship between voter turnout rates and burglary rates. Thus, places with the highest and lowest voter turnout rates have low level of burglary rates. That is, residents are not active in voting at places with either the least or highest amount of problems, apparently for different reasons. Based on the result, Coleman suggests that voter turnout rates are reasonable proxies for social conformity and should be included regularly in studies of crime and ecology. Voting participation and home ownership are two closely related constructs as they both show residents' investment in places (Friedrichs & Blasius, 2003). Specifically, Dreier (1994) found that the average voting rate of homeowners is 69 percent compared to the 44 percent voting rate of renters. Thus, it is reasonable to conclude that residents show their willingness to engage in public affairs and concerns about the environment by voting in elections because they are shareholders at local places.

The total number of registered voters has fluctuated in Seattle between 1999 and 2004, but the magnitude of change is not large (see Table 3.5 below). The number increased slowly for the first four years from 383,226 in 1999 to 418,673 in 2002. After 2002, the total number of registered voters declined. An average of 74 percent of streets per year had at least one person registered as a voter. This percentage remains relatively stable throughout the six years. There were about 22 voters per street per year considering only the streets with any voter. The mode of voter distribution is two per street for all the years in the study. The majority of streets (about 75 percent) have less than 30 voters. There are few streets with extremely high numbers of voters (i.e. 409-803) and this is probably a result of having high rise buildings on the given streets. There are a little fewer than five percent of the streets with only one voter.

Table 3.5: Descriptive Statistics for Only Those Study Streets with Any Voter

	1999	2000	2001	2002	2003	2004
Mean	21.40	22.32	23.12	23.18	21.84	19.46
Std. Dev.	27.20	28.97	30.43	30.48	27.73	22.58
Min.	1	1	1	1	1	1
Max	513	680	782	803	605	409
Sum	383,226	401,486	416,589	418,673	392,982	345,671

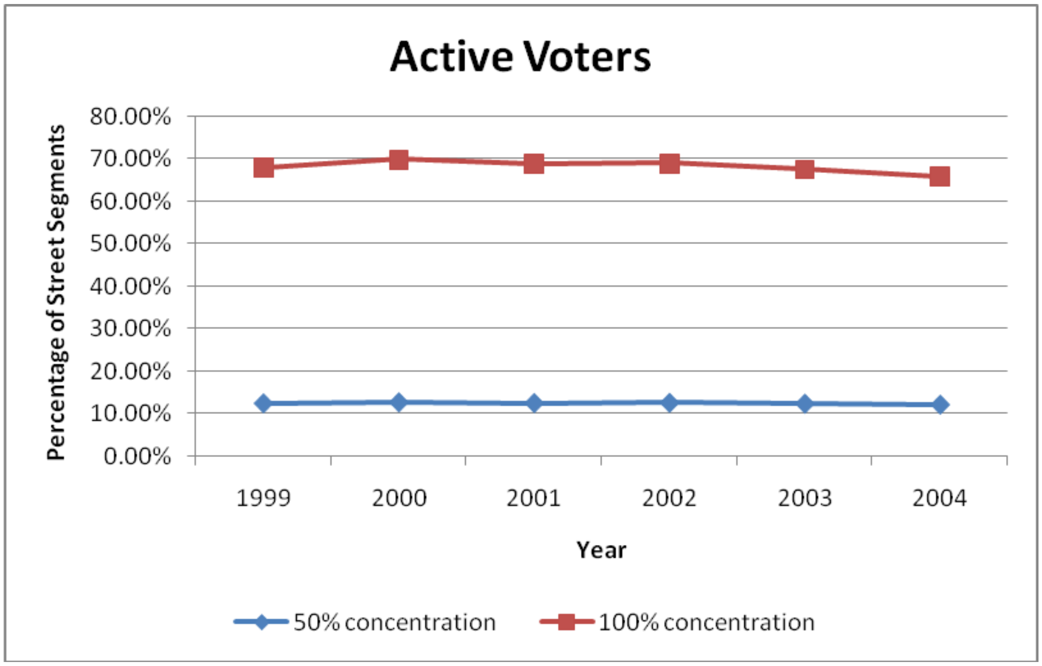
We define active voters as people who voted more frequently than the average voter in Seattle. We use a moving average of the two previous years' voting behavior to identify active voting behavior. In Table 3.6, we summarize the characteristics of both the number of active voters and the percentage of total voters that are active. From 1999 to 2004, the average number of active voters increased slightly and then declined afterwards until the end of the series. On average, there are around seven active voters per street and a little less than 40 percent of the voters on each street are active voters. The range of the variable distribution is wide; some streets have more than 300 active voters while other streets have none.

Table 3.6: Descriptive of Active Voter and Percentage of Active Voter from 1999 to 2004

Year		*Number of Active Voters*	*Percentage of Active Voter*	*Total Voters*
1999				**383,226**
	Mean	7.49	37.30%	
	Std. Dev.	11.53	0.32	
	Min-Max	0-330	0-100	
2000				**401,486**
	Mean	8.87	42.29%	
	Std. Dev.	13.39	0.33	
	Min-Max	0-353	0-100	
2001				**416,589**
	Mean	7.89	37.08%	
	Std. Dev.	12.03	0.31	
	Min-Max	0-336	0-100	
2002				**418,673**
	Mean	7.92	36.95%	
	Std. Dev.	12.08	0.31	
	Min-Max	0-348	0-100	
2003				**392,982**
	Mean	6.95	34.00%	
	Std. Dev.	10.77	0.30	
	Min-Max	0-338	0-100	
2004				**345,671**
	Mean	6.11	32.19%	
	Std. Dev.	9.68	0.29	
	Min-Max	0-340	0-100	

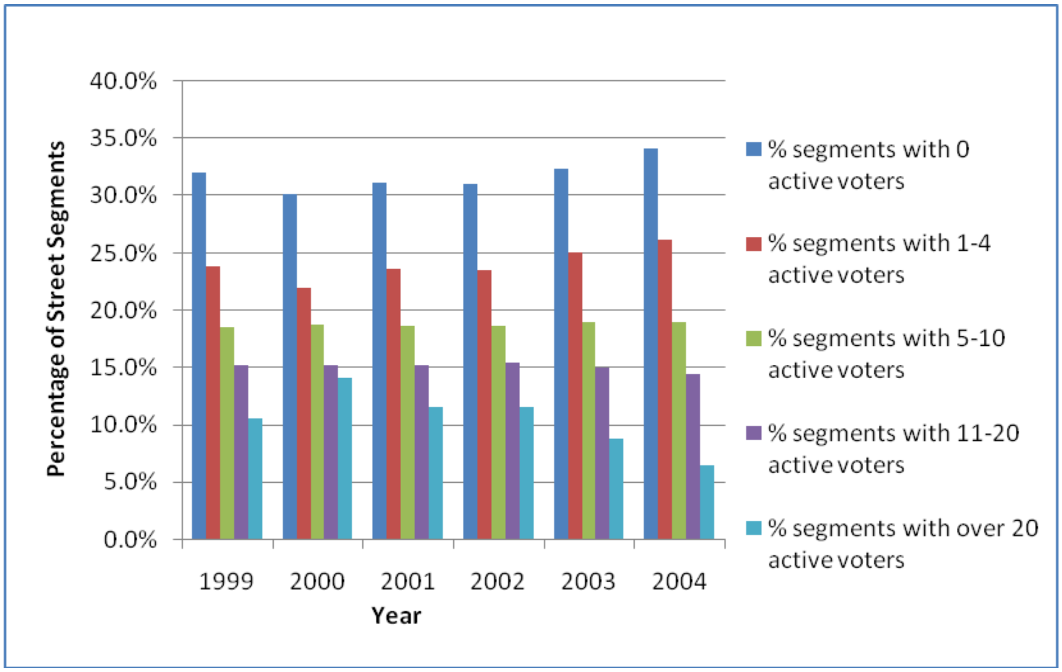
When we identify the concentration patterns of active voters, we find that 50 percent of the total active voters consistently lived on between 12 and 13 percent of Seattle's street segments (see Figure 3.31). The percentage of street segments where 100 percent of voters resided ranged from 68 to 70 percent. In 2003 and 2004, there is a slight decline, but there is no substantial change over time. The finding that active voters are found to reside in the majority of Seattle's residential streets provides us with confidence that the number of active voters can be a reasonable representation of the strength of collective efficacy on each street. Using a repeated measures test, the average number of total active voters did vary over time (F = 3766.574 ,df = 2.406).

Figure 3.31: The Trends of Active Voters from 1999 to 2004



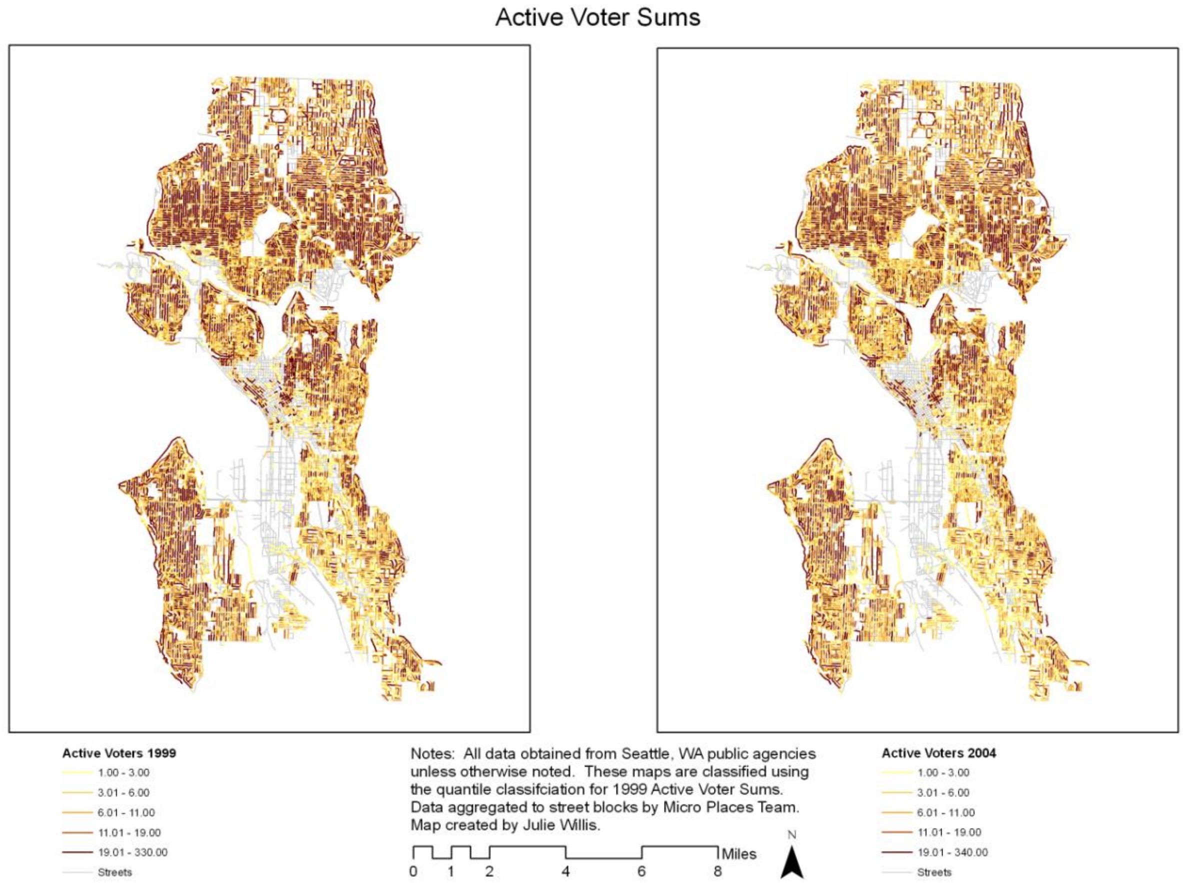
Between 1999 and 2004, between 30 and 35 percent of the total street segments in Seattle had 0 active voters; the percentage of street segments with between 1 and 4 active voters ranged from just under 22 percent to just over 26 percent; between 18 and 19 percent of street segments had 5 to 10 active voters; and about 15 percent of street segments had between 11 and 20 active voters. The percentage of street segments with more than 20 active voters showed the least consistency over time ranging from 6.4 percent in 2004 to 14.1 percent in 2000 (see Figure 3.32).

Figure 3.32: Frequency Distributions of Active Voters



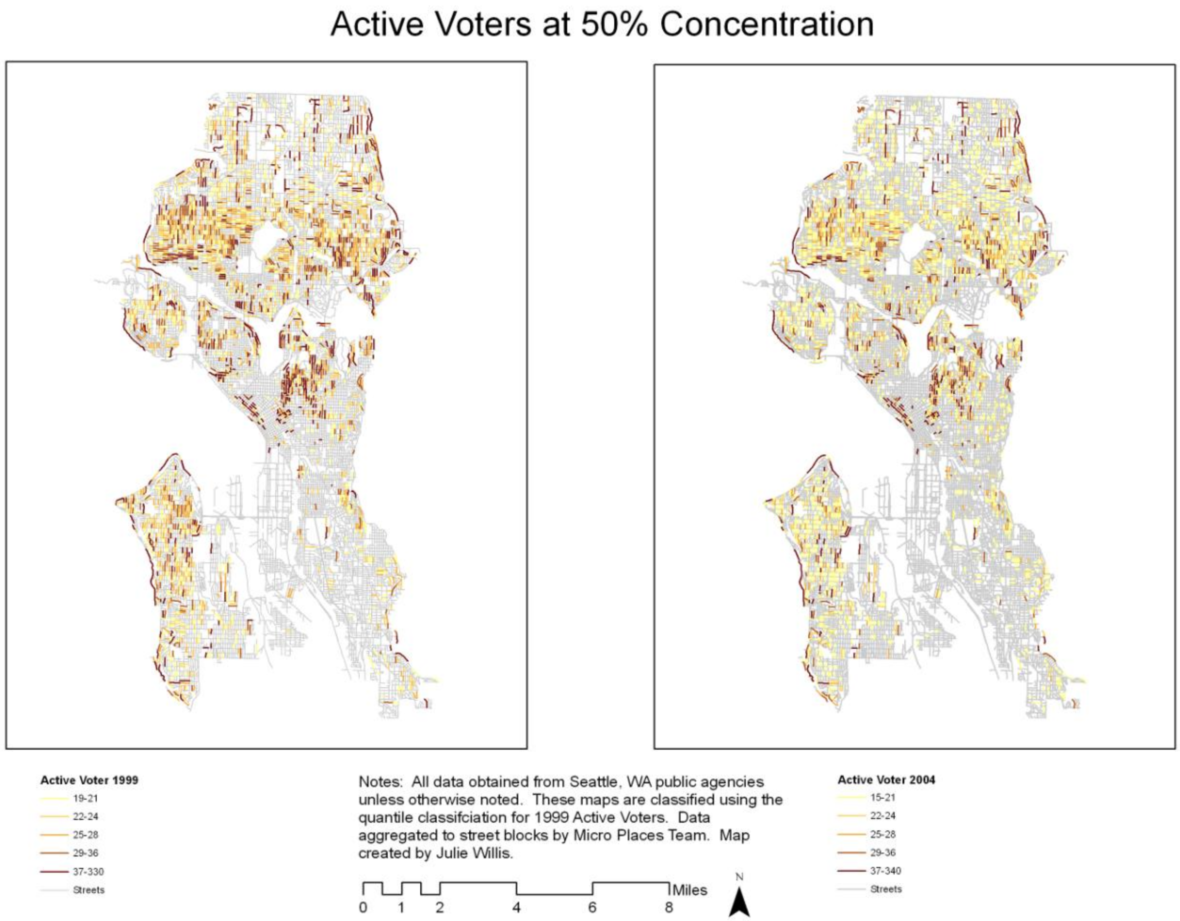
The quantile maps below indicate that the largest numbers of active voters are found in the north sector (see Figure 3.33). There are also concentrations of street segments with high numbers of active voters in the coastal part of the southwest sector and in the central sector on the edge of the downtown core. The distribution of active voters is widespread and generally reflects the population distribution (see Figure 4.11 in Chapter 4).

Figure 3.33: Geographic Distributions of Active Voters



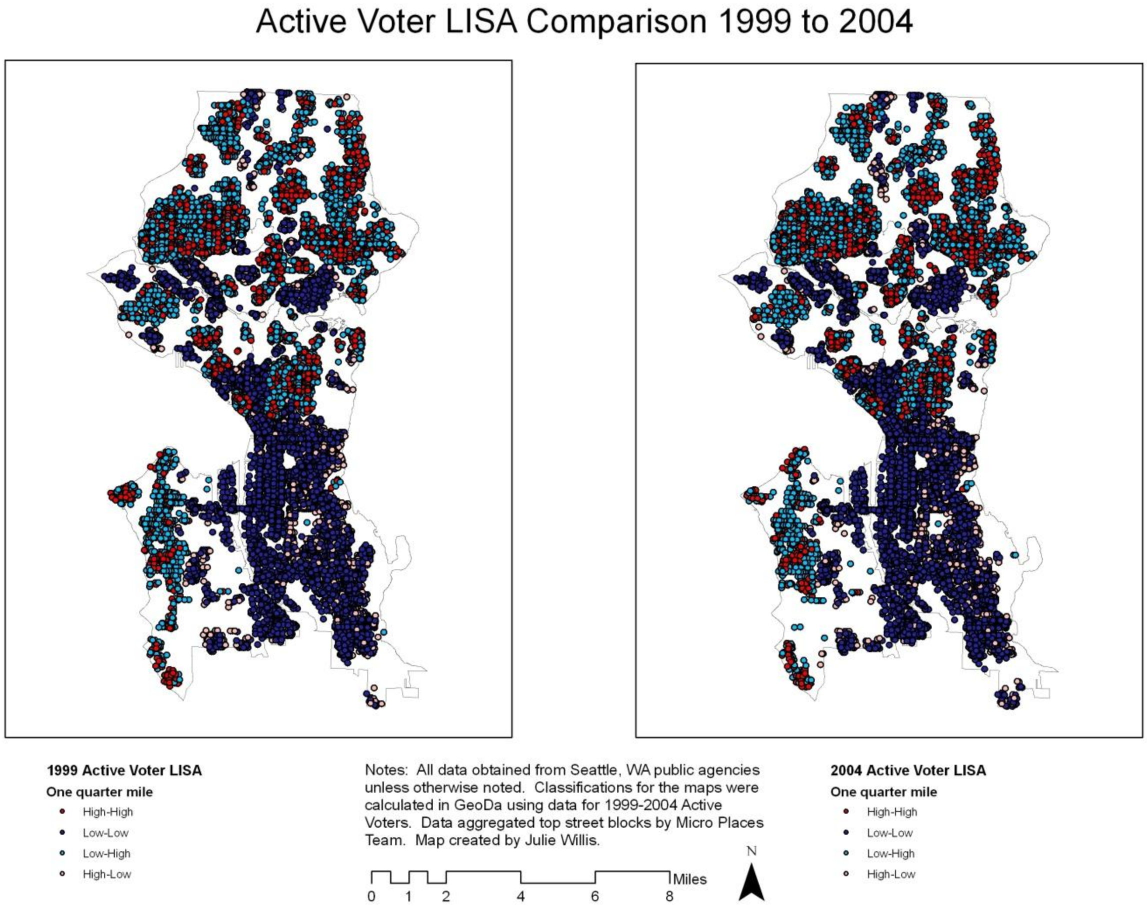
The 50 percent concentration maps reinforce the earlier pattern but make it more visible. This map clearly shows the concentration of active voters in the north sector with other notable concentrations in the central and southwest sectors of the city (see Figure 3.34).

Exhibit 3.34: Geographic Distributions of 50 Percent Concentration of Active Voters



The LISA maps provide additional detail within the high concentration sectors (see Figure 3.35). In the north sector, street segments with high numbers of active voters are often in proximity to other street segments with high numbers of active voters. However, they are also significantly associated with street segments having lower numbers of active voters. Thus, even within areas of generally high voting activity there are street segments with low voting activity. The southeast sector, which has generally the lowest number of active voters, shows up as more uniform (dark blue) but also has a few isolated street segments with high numbers of active voters (light red).

Figure 3.35: LISA Maps of Active Voters Data



Conclusions

Much is known about the distribution of social disorganization and social capital at macro geographic levels across the urban landscape (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson, 1985; Sampson et al., 1997; Sampson et al., 2002; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson & Morenoff, 2004; Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]; Shaw et al., 1929). However, our research is the first we know of to examine this distribution at a micro place level such as the street segment. The findings of this chapter are we believe ground breaking, in that they suggest both a concentration of traits of social disorganization at the micro place level, and provide significant evidence of the variability of social disorganization at street segments across the city landscape.

Looking both at structural and mediating variables we find that there are hot spots of social disorganization at the street segment level. Moreover, such hot spots are not found only in specific neighborhoods. Rather they are often distributed across the city landscape. In turn, we found strong evidence of spatial independence of social disorganization at street segments. While there are sometimes clusters of street segments with specific traits in what may be termed communities or neighborhoods, there is also significant street by street variation in such concentrations.

Together these findings raise intriguing questions about the relationship between social disorganization and crime at the street segment level. Are hot spots of social disorganization located in the same places as hot spots of crime? Does street level variability in social disorganization relate to developmental trends of crime at place? Moreover, we found evidence of temporal trends in the levels of social disorganization over time. Do those trends predict developmental trends in crime at street segments over time?

In Chapters 6 and 7 we will explore these relationships between social disorganization and crime at street segments. But our findings so far provide a strong basis for testing social disorganization theories at micro places. Those who have studied criminology of place have generally ignored social disorganization theories in favor of the opportunity and rational choice perspectives we review in the next chapter. Our data so far suggest that social disorganization may have more salience for understanding the criminology place than scholars have so far recognized.

Chapter 4: Variation in Opportunity Factors for Crime across the Urban Landscape

Most study of the criminology of place has relied upon opportunity theories (e.g. see Cohen & Felson, 1979) as an explanation for why crime trends vary at places and as a basis for constructing practical crime prevention approaches (see Eck, 1995; Sherman et al., 1989). The main assumptions of this perspective are that specific characteristics of places such as the nature of guardianship, the presence of motivated offenders, and the availability of suitable targets will strongly influence the likelihood of criminal events (see also Felson, 1994). Studies examining the factors that predict crime at micro places generally confirm this relationship (see Roncek & Bell, 1981; Roncek & Maier, 1991; Smith et al., 2000). Opportunity theories, in turn, place emphasis on the context of crime at place, identifying specific characteristics of urban environments that facilitate or discourage criminal activity (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1984; 1981 [1991]; Cohen & Felson, 1979).

Given the sustained interest in opportunity theories by scholars who have studied micro crime places, we would expect to observe significant variability in the characteristics of places at the street segment level. Interestingly, there have been very few descriptions of the variation in opportunity factors for crime at place, as contrasted with studies of the distribution of crime at place. To what extent do crime opportunities concentrate at hot spots? And do they show strong street to street variability? Is there strong variation in the developmental patterns of opportunities over time? These questions are key to understanding the role of opportunities in crime causation at places, but they have been given little empirical attention to date.

We draw from two of the most comprehensive opportunity theories (Perkins et al., 1993, p. 30), crime pattern theory (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1984) and routine activity theory (Cohen & Felson, 1979), to construct the set of street-level characteristics associated with crime. This chapter describes the spatio-temporal distribution of crime-related place characteristics across individual street segments in Seattle, Washington. We divide the characteristics into four main categories: 1) motivated offenders; 2) suitable targets; 3) guardianship; and 4) accessibility/urban form. Characteristics in each category are discussed individually and then as a group.

Classifying Opportunity Measures

We are interested in the variation of characteristics across space as it relates to the uneven distribution of people and in particular, of potential offenders and targets. The distribution of people across places is driven by the uneven distribution of opportunities for housing, employment, and recreation as well as access to the transportation network among places. But people are not stationary; they move about the city in the course of the day, and those movements tend to have a routine structure to them. Previous research has identified the combination of the places an individual visits frequently and the routes taken among those places as his or her activity space (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Horton & Reynolds, 1971). Activity spaces are dynamic; they grow and change over time in response to changes in the physical environment and the lives of individuals.

Some places are anchors in the activity spaces of individuals (i.e., they are visited frequently) (Golledge, 1978; Golledge & Stimson, 1997; Rengert, 1989). Anchor places act as 'jumping off' points. Individuals tend to know more about the area surrounding an anchor point than they would around a route between two places. Anchor points also promote the acquisition of knowledge about places near them and new routes to and from other nodes in an activity place. For example, every person's activity space typically has a home anchor point and a work place or school anchor point. We tend to know more about the areas surrounding these places. Some people have additional anchor points such as a significant other's apartment, or a relative's house through which they begin to learn about the areas surrounding those anchor points. Individuals also have nodes that they visit regularly but not as consistently or for as a long a duration as they would an anchor point. In sum, activity spaces are both a reflection of and the underpinning for, the uneven distribution of people across places (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Hägerstrand, 1970; Horton & Reynolds, 1971). Since motivated offenders and suitable targets are simply subsets of the total population, if we can quantify who it likely to frequent a place, we can quantify the potential number of **motivated offenders** and **suitable targets**.

The grouping of opportunity related characteristics into four categories allow us to describe both the concentration of people at a place and the potential roles those people might take on while there (i.e., motivated offender or suitable target). Since the calculus of crime has factors that take into account the situational characteristics, especially as they relate to **guardianship**, we include characteristics to quantify the amount of guardianship at a place. Finally, the number of people at a place is a function both of the attractiveness of a place and also its accessibility. Thus, we include measures of **urban form and accessibility**. These measures control for why a particular route among two places might be chosen over an alternative route.

Traditionally, facilities have played an important role in understanding crime. A typical approach has been to examine the effect of facilities on nearby places. At the start of this undertaking, we scoured the literature for types of facilities that had been identified as crime attractors or crime generators. We also included facilities that were related to the provision of public safety services (e.g., police and fire stations).

Using this list, we began collecting information about the number and location of these types of facilities for each year of our study period. As described below, what we found is that most types of facilities are fairly stable over time. When the number of facilities increases it is typically an accretive process rather than a churn process. Thus while new library locations are added, the original ones remained where they were built. Facilities with these spatio-temporal properties include: community centers, fire stations, hospitals, libraries, parks, police stations, and schools. These facilities have low numbers to begin with and do not change rapidly. Other types of facilities are distributed more widely across places and tend to be less stable, especially locally. For example, while the number of fast food restaurants across the entire city may remain fairly stable or increase, the opening and closing of 20 percent of those locations each year has a far greater proportional impact on the streets that are near locations that close or open.

Place characteristics which are grouped under the accessibility/urban form category describe how easy it is to get to a place and how likely someone is to use or be aware of places because they are along an arterial route or have opportunities for public transportation. These characteristics of a place describe how likely it is to be a part of the routine activity spaces of both potential targets and potential offenders.

Table 4.1 classifies each opportunity-related characteristic by the theoretical construct it describes. Sometimes a characteristic consists of only one type of data but other times a characteristic is composed of several data items.

Table 4.1: Theoretical Concepts Represented by the Data

Characteristic	**Composition**
Motivated Offenders	
• High risk juveniles	• Truant or low academic achieving juvenile residents
Suitable Targets	
• Employment • Residents • Retail business-related Crime generators/Crime attractors • Public facilities as Crime generators/Crime attractors	• Number of employees • Total juveniles + total registered voters • Total sales for retail businesses • Number of public facilities within 1,320 feet ○ Community centers ○ Hospitals ○ Libraries ○ Parks ○ Schools
Accessibility/Urban Form	
• Type of street • Bus stops	• 1= arterial, 0 = residential • Total number of bus stops
Guardianship	
• Vacant Land • Police station/Fire station • Street lighting	• Percentage of vacant land • Number of Police or fire stations within 1,320 feet • Watts per foot of lighting

The first major group of place characteristics has to do with the number of **motivated offenders** who might live at a place. To measure the number of likely offenders who live on a street segment we use a subset of the juvenile population that we term high risk juveniles. Since these juveniles are more likely than other age groups to be involved in crime (Cohen & Felson, 1979), we use the total number of juveniles in grades three through twelve who live at a place and who have low academic achievement and/or are classified as truants.[1]

The second major group of characteristics captures the likely number of **suitable targets** at a place. We recognize that the total number of people at a place consists of both motivated offenders and/or suitable targets.[2] However, since we have no specific way to separate them, we include all measures that capture the total number of people at a place under suitable targets. These characteristics include those that describe the resident population and those that describe visitors. We represent the total resident population by combining two proxy measures, total number of residents who attend public school and total number of residents who are registered to vote. Characteristics that capture how easy it is to get to a place are in the next grouping (i.e., accessibility/urban form).

The size of the non-resident population is determined to a large extent by the attractiveness of a place. The greater the attractiveness, the greater the likelihood that people (both offenders and targets) will know about the place and visit it. The more offenders and targets at a place, the greater the likelihood that a target will be at the same place and time as a motivated offender. Nonresidents fall into two main categories, visitors and employees. Visitors are those that are attracted to a place to use the facilities and businesses. The following types of facilities tend to attract a large number of visitors to a place and thus are considered crime generators: community centers, hospitals, libraries, parks, retail and service businesses, and schools (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1995). We use the presence of such facilities to represent the visitor population.

---

[1] Students with ten or more unexcused absences in a school year are classified as truants (See http://www.seattleschools.org/area/truancy/index.htm).

[2] The same population that we are characterizing as suitable targets could also be considered potential guardians under routine activity theory (Cohen & Felson, 1979). We do not differentiate between the two.

Employment provides a different measure of the number of non-residents likely to be at a place routinely. These non-residents have the place as an anchor in their activity spaces. To capture this type of non-resident we are use total employment across all types of business sectors. Our measure captures the total number of non-resident employees who would routinely come to a place.[3] Together, public facilities and employment are used to capture the relative number of nonresidents at places.

Two final characteristics are captured under the third category of **accessibility/urban form**. These characteristics describe how easy it is to get to a place and how likely someone is to use or be aware of places because they are located along an arterial street or are easily accessible by public transportation. They also describe how likely a specific place is to be a part of the routine activity spaces of both potential targets and potential offenders. The variables used in this category are type of street (i.e., residential versus arterial) and the number of bus stops.

The fourth major group of place characteristics describes the level of **guardianship** at a place. Guardianship is important to several opportunity theories including crime pattern theory (Clarke & Cornish, 1985); routine activity theory (Eck, 1995) and rational choice theory (Felson, 2001, 2002). Guardianship can be provided by formal (i.e., people who are connected to a place or a person) and informal guardians. More recent research has identified two types of formal guardians by their specific role in a given situation; the roles are place managers (Wilson & Kelling, 1982) and intimate handlers (Sampson & Raudenbush, 2001).

Characteristics such as percentage vacant land, presence of fire and/or police stations, and the amount of street lighting describe both informal and formal guardianship at a place. The presence of police and fire stations serves to increase the level of formal guardianship on the

[3] Technically our measure does not account for people who live and work on the same street segment. However, we feel any inflation of our estimates of people on the street due to 'double counting' of this population is minor.

street and on surrounding streets that are used for ingress and egress from the facilities. Simply having a fire or police station on the street segment increases the trips by formal guardians to and from the place. Those types of facilities can also serve as focal points for increased community activism.

We include a measure of vacant land since vacant lots are sometimes an indicator of decline (although they can indicate the beginning of a process of revitalization), often becoming receptacles for trash and debris. This increases the perception of place users that a place is not safe, and provides a place to commit crime. Street lighting's relationship to crime and guardianship is complicated; in general, lighting makes people feel safer and thus they may act as if they are safer by going out of them homes more often. Such behavior increases the number of 'eyes on the street' (Jacobs, 1961) and in doing so increases the amount of informal surveillance and potential guardians.[4]

Description of Spatio-Temporal Variation in Opportunity Factors

In Chapter 3 we relied on the LISA statistic to characterize the distribution of social disorganization constructs across Seattle. But in this chapter the measures examined often involved the distribution of facilities. In those cases we examined the degree of clustering in the distribution of facilities across space. Modifications are made where necessary because of low numbers of observations. Our analysis of the opportunity factors begins with a description of the characteristic and its distribution across street segments in Seattle. The first step is to aggregate each characteristic to the street segment (our unit of analysis) along which it occurs. This involves producing a value representing the number or frequency of the variable that existed on the street for each year in the study period (only the years for which we were able to collect data are represented).

[4] For a comprehensive review of the literature on street lighting see Farrington & Welsh (2002).

Once we have an aggregate amount of a characteristic for each year, as in Chapter 3 we describe the characteristic across street segments in terms of three main aspects: 1) prevalence; 2) variability across time and 3) spatial distribution. Prevalence captures the number of observations affected by the characteristic of interest. To describe prevalence, we compute a percentage of street segments with the characteristic.

Variability across time is not an issue in characteristics with a low rate of prevalence. Consequently, variability across time is only calculated for characteristics which are found on at least one percent of the units of analysis. With this analysis we are answering two questions: 1) How does prevalence vary across time? and 2) Are the streets with the characteristic the same across time, or do they vary? If a characteristic is stable over time we take the average and provide a spatial distribution of the average. If the characteristic varies over time we use the first year and last years for which we have data to capture the change over time.

If the distribution of the locations across space was the subject of the exploration, as with facilities, then Ripley's *K* was used.[5] The Ripley's *K* statistic allows us to conduct a distance analysis to answer the question of whether the places with a certain type of facility are clustered in space. We are also able to say whether the characteristic itself was more clustered than could be expected based on a random distribution or on the distribution of streets across Seattle. If the goal was to determine whether the frequency of a characteristic found on one street segment is similar, different, or unrelated to the amount of the same characteristic on nearby street segments, spatial autocorrelation measures were used. We calculated both global (Moran's *I* and Geary's C) and local measures (Anselin's LISA) of spatial autocorrelation to examine whether the amounts of a characteristic are spatially dependent.

[5] Facilities typically are very rare events (i.e. they are found on less than one percent of all segments). In these cases a spatial autocorrelation would be inappropriate. Instead, we use Ripley's *K* to provide a quantitative measure of the spatial pattern. For all analyses, Ripley's K was used with 100 simulations.

We think it important at the outset, to note that neither Moran's *I* nor Geary's C found significant global spatial autocorrelation for any of the characteristics explained. This finding, as those reported in the previous chapter, suggests that there is tremendous street segment-by-street segment variation in characteristics. Additional evidence for heterogeneity as the explanation for the lack of global spatial autocorrelation was provided by the LISA analysis which indicated significant amounts of both negative and positive spatial autocorrelation.[6]

Similar geographic analyses were performed on all data layers with the exception of facilities where the numbers of observations which had a facility present were so small as to make the results of a typical geographic analysis for spatial autocorrelation meaningless (e.g. libraries, police stations etc.). In those cases, a subset of the full geographic analysis was applied.

Motivated Offenders

Motivated offenders are a necessary element for a crime to occur (Cohen & Felson, 1979). While we did not have any information to quantify the total number of motivated offenders across places, we did have a measure of high risk juveniles. Since the contributing role of juveniles in crime at places is widely recognized, we include a separate variable that describes the population of juveniles who are likely to exhibit delinquent behavior on a particular street segment.

Resident High Risk Juvenile Population

Some students are more likely to commit crimes than other students. One indicator is truancy and another is low academic achievement. If a student is either a truant or designated as

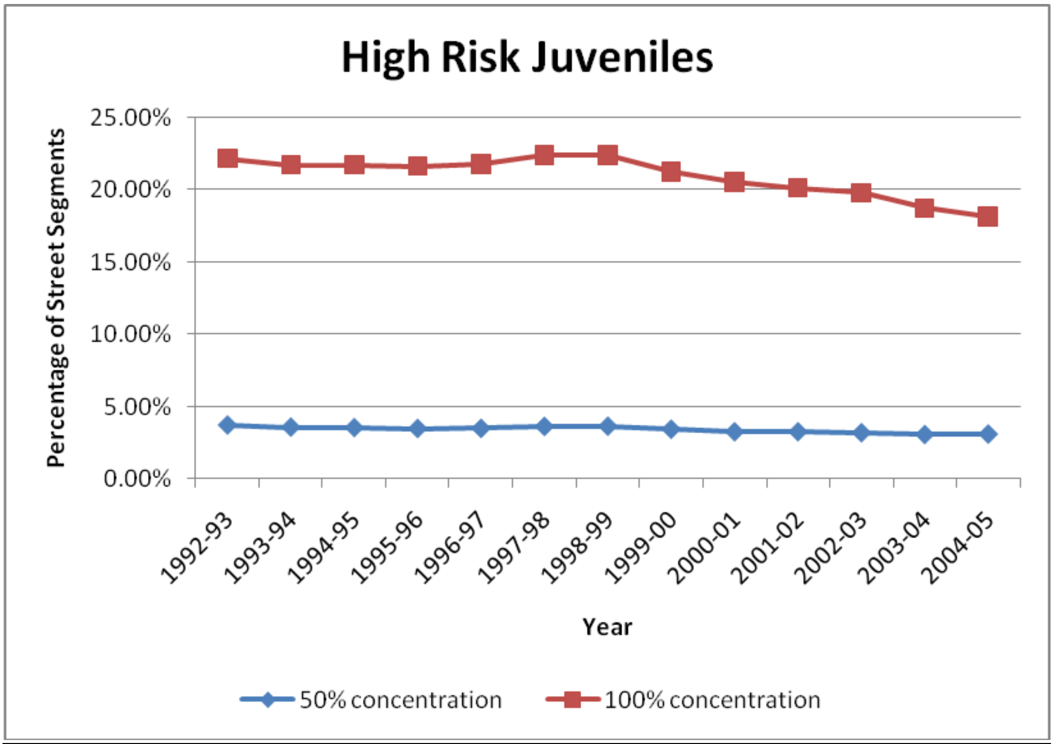
[6] The results of the LISA analysis are subject to the distances between street segment midpoints. While the average length of a street is 400 feet, there is considerable variation. The LISA statistic uses a simple spatial weights file that is based on distance. Since the midpoints are used in the calculation, street segments that are connected end-to-end may be farther away than those located on either side of the target street segment. Only when the distance between midpoints is shorter than one-quarter mile will the statistic identify them as neighbors.

a low academic achiever or both, they are included in our measure of total high risk juveniles who live on the street segment. At the beginning of the study period there were 5,366 students classified as high risk juveniles, out of a total student population of 34,525 in 1992-1993. The number of high risk juveniles has declined steadily between the school year of 1992-1993 (N=5,366) and 2004-2005 (N=4,383). The proportion has dropped from about 16 to 12 percent. This occurs over a time period when the number of public school students per year is fairly stable, ranging from 34,525 in 1992-1993 to 36,153 in 2004-2005.

This aggregate stability masks significant changes on the individual street segments over time. According to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant ($F = 62.177$, $df = 3.783$). The average number of high risk juveniles per street segment does vary over time.

Juveniles tend to be concentrated on particular segments rather than spread evenly across them (see Figure 4.1). In Seattle, 50 percent of high risk juveniles are consistently found on between three and four percent of the total number of Seattle street segments. These may be seen as hot spots for high risk juveniles.

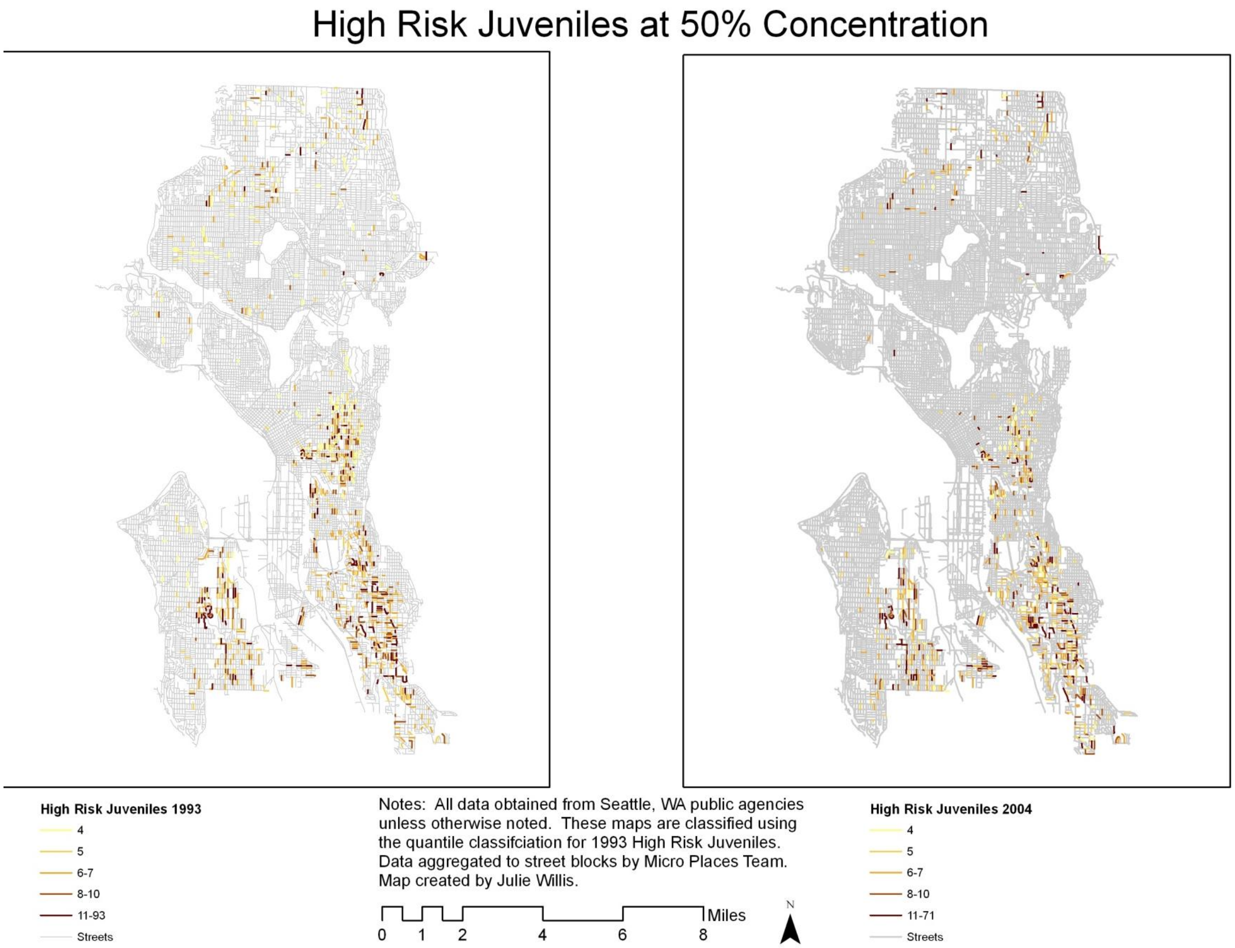
Figure 4.1: Concentration of High Risk Juveniles across Street Segments



All of the high risk juveniles are found on between 18 and 23 percent of the total street segments over time. This percentage peaks in 1998-1999 and then declines. The percentage of street segments where all high risk juveniles are found for 2004-2005 is about four percentage points lower than 1992-1993 (i.e., 18.1 percent in 2004-2005 versus 22.2 percent in 1992-1993).

A map of the street segments that account for 50 percent of all high risk juveniles displays several areas of concentration (see Figure 4.2). The color of the street segment corresponds to the number of high risk juveniles who live on a street.

Figure 4.2: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of High Risk Juveniles



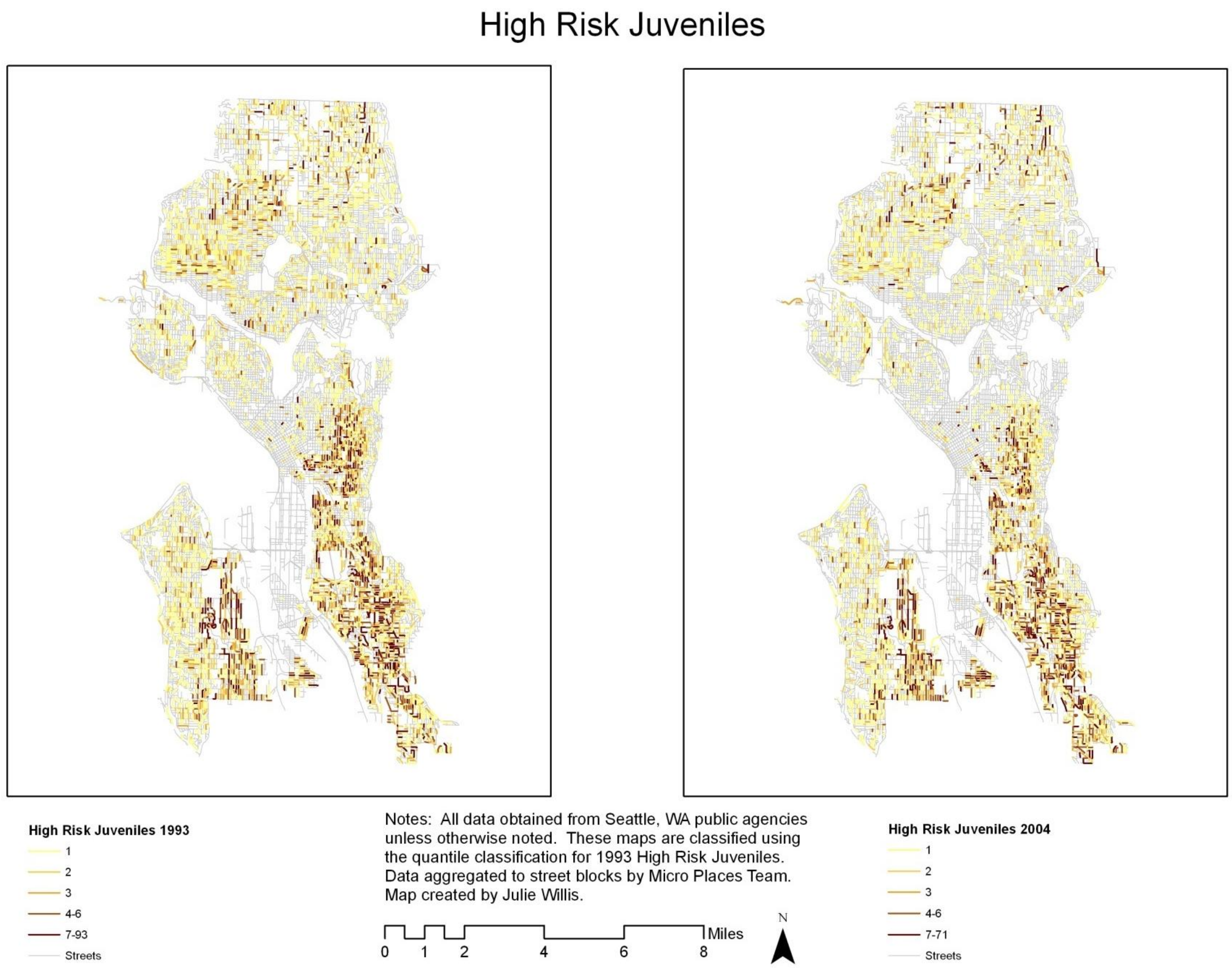
One cluster of high risk juveniles is in the east central portion of the city. Two other linear clusters are in the southeastern section and in the eastern section of the southwestern area of the city. The northern section of the city has isolated segments of that have large numbers of high risk juveniles.

A quartile map of all high risk juveniles across Seattle (see Figure 4.3) visually confirms the concentration of high risk juveniles on certain streets and in certain areas of the city.[7] On the

[7] A quantile map divides the range of the data being mapped so that each category shown in the legend has an equal number of observations.

whole, there are higher concentrations of high risk juveniles in the southern portion versus the northern portion and that imbalance has grown between 1992 and 2004.

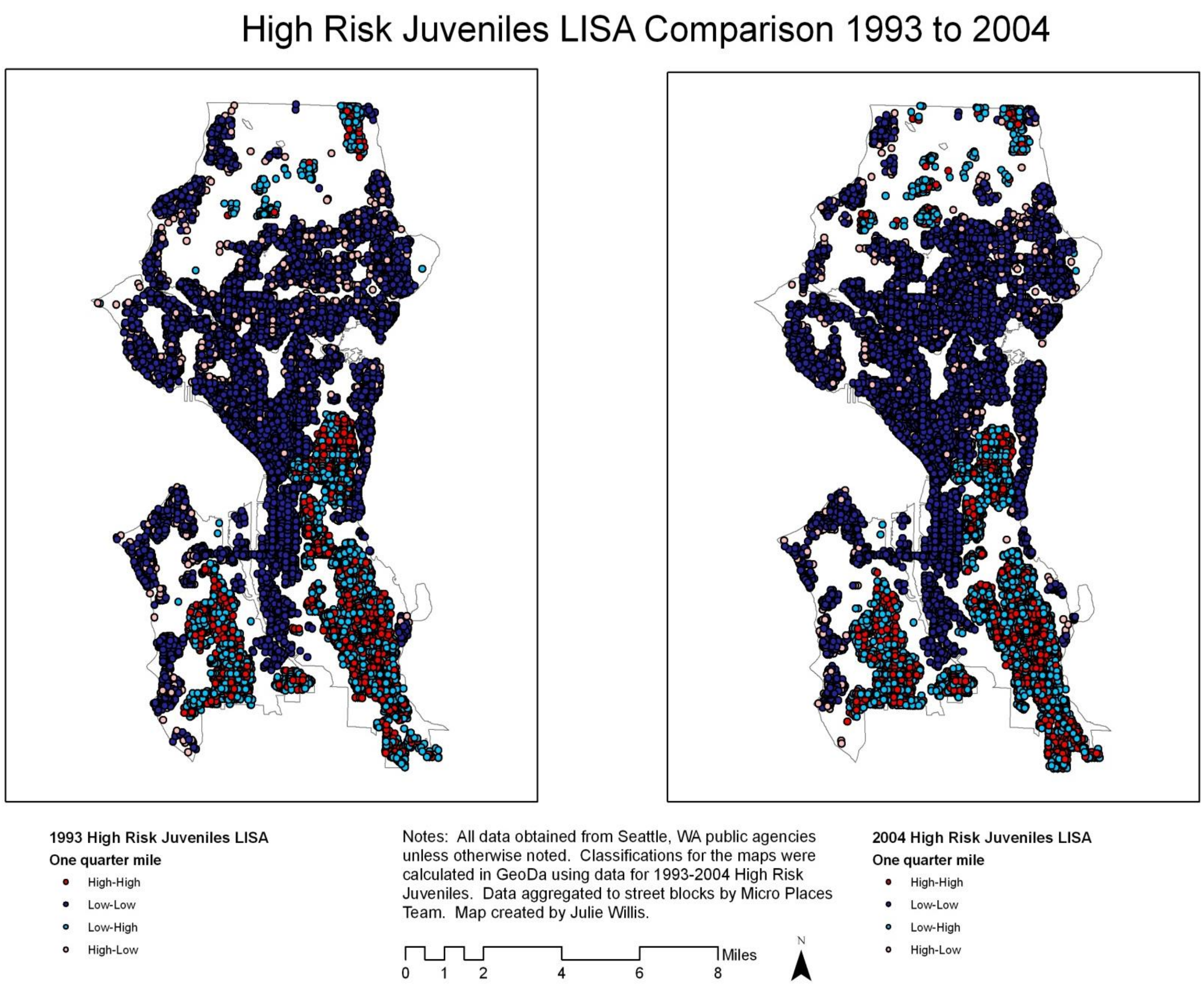
Figure 4.3: Distribution of the Residences of High Risk Juveniles across Street Segments



Interestingly, there are clear differences in the distribution of high risk juveniles versus the distribution of total residential population (see Figure 4.11) with greater concentrations of high risk juveniles in the southeastern and southwestern sections of the city than residential population would suggest (note: residential population is described in a later section).

Results from an analysis of local spatial dependence in the number of high risk juveniles per street segment are consistent with the first two visualizations (see Figure 4.4). The high concentration areas noted previously are not uniform but rather have street segments with high numbers of high risk juveniles in close proximity to street segments with low numbers (i.e., negative spatial correlation). Together these maps reveal that even in areas with high concentrations of high risk juveniles there is significant variation from one street segment to another.

Figure 4.4: LISA Results for High Risk Juveniles



Motivated offenders (defined here as the high risk juvenile population on a street segment) are concentrated on specific street segments. Even though there is street to street variation in the number of high risk juveniles, street segments with high numbers of motivated offenders tend to be in the vicinity of other street segments with high numbers of motivated offenders. This finding is consistent across study years even while the number of motivated offenders per street segment displays significant change over the same years. Thus, even when high risk juveniles are changing residences they seem to consistently be found on street segments in the vicinity of other high risk juveniles.

Suitable Targets

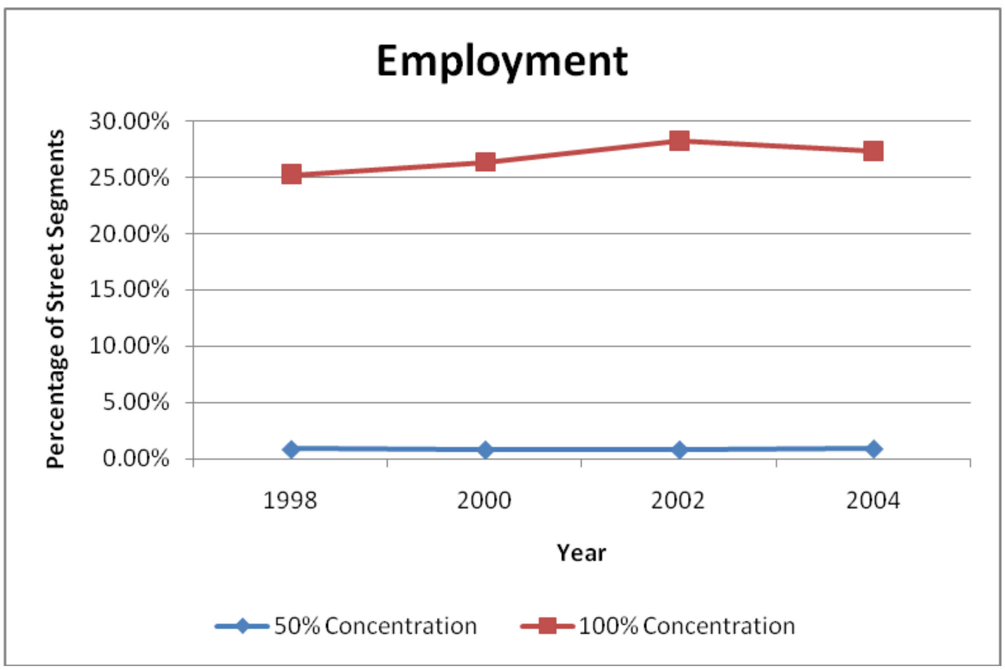
These measures capture both residents and non-residents who frequent a street segment. While residents live on the street segment, non-residents are typically present for reasons related to employment or some type of facility located on the street segment, but they could also be on their way somewhere else and the street segment is just a component of their overall route between two totally unrelated places. Alternatively, they could be visiting a friend or relative. While we do not have data to capture all these dimensions, we can provide proxy measures of employment, residential population, crime generators, and crime attractors.

Employment

Under opportunity theory, the number of people attracted to a place has a large bearing on the place's crime potential. While home is one major anchor point in an individual's activity space, for employed persons, work is another. Thus, quantifying the number of people who work at a place provides an important foundational element for understanding crime. In Seattle, we were able to obtain data about the entire spectrum of businesses. One attribute of the business data is the number of employees who work at each business. From this data set we were able to construct the number of people who travel to a place for work.

Employment is highly concentrated in Seattle (see Figure 4.5). Between 1998 and 2004, half of all the employees in the city were located on about 0.8 percent of Seattle street segments. All employment was concentrated on between 25 and 28.5 percent of total street segments over the study period. There is more variation in the concentraton of total employment over time than the 50 percent employment figure. The total number of street segments with employees increased from 1998 to 2002 and then showed a slight decline in 2004. These figures point to the concentration of most employment on relatively few street segments that are fairly stable over time. It is the smaller employers and home-based businesses that contribute to the larger number of streets at 100 percent.

Figure 4.5: Concentration of Employment across Street Segments

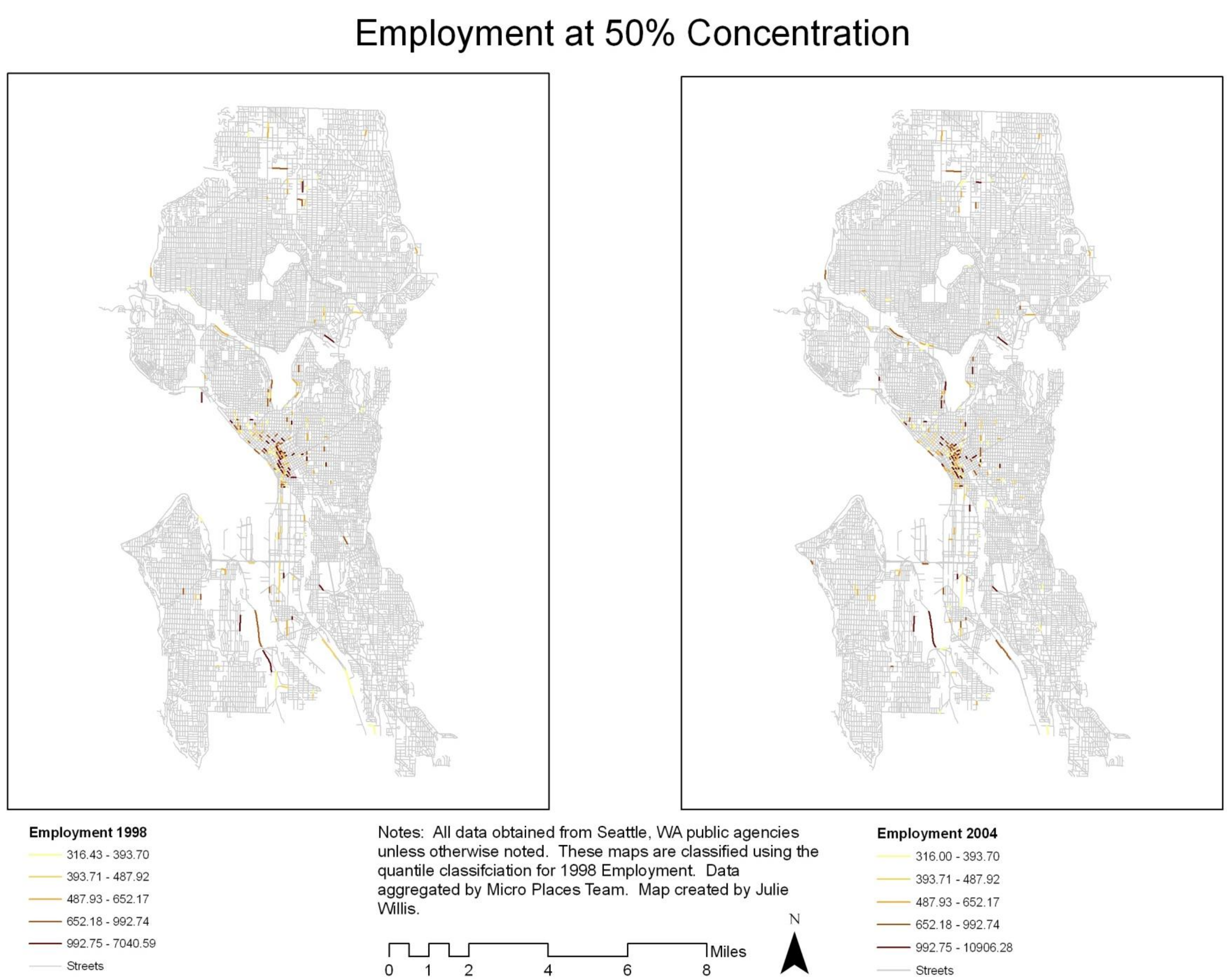


Although the overall number of employees varied only a couple of percentage points per year, according to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant at p <

.05 level. (F = 4.290, df = 2.128 p = .012). Thus the number of employees on each street segment does vary over time.

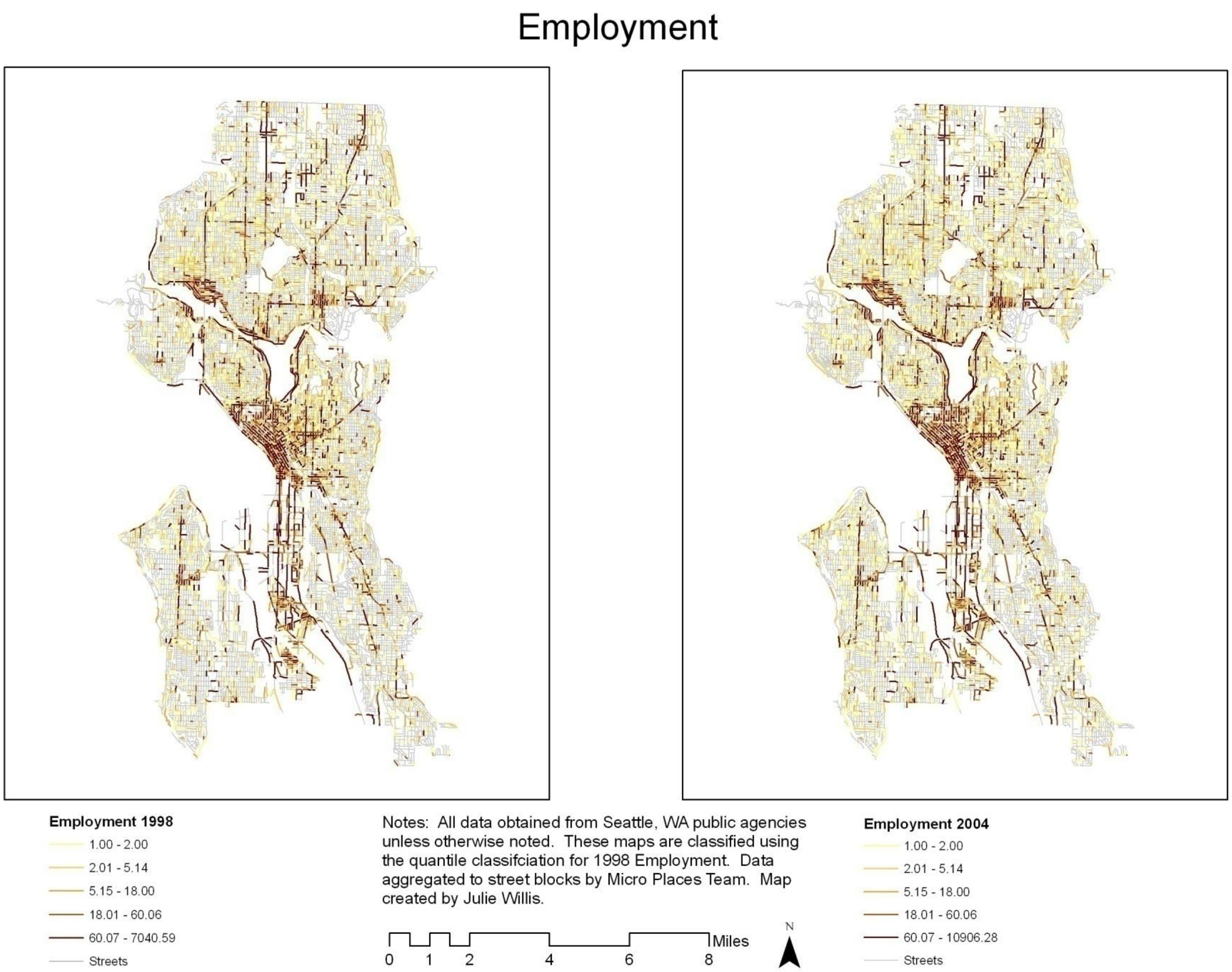
While the above information reveals less than 30 percent of all streets are home to all the employment in Seattle, it does not tell us if employment is clustered in certain parts of the city. One way to examine concentration is to map the segments that make up the 50 percent concentration. Figure 4.6 reveals these street segments are concentrated in the downtown core of the city with a few high employment segments in the industrial area of the southern sector and scattered locations in the northern sector.

Figure 4.6: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 percent of Employment



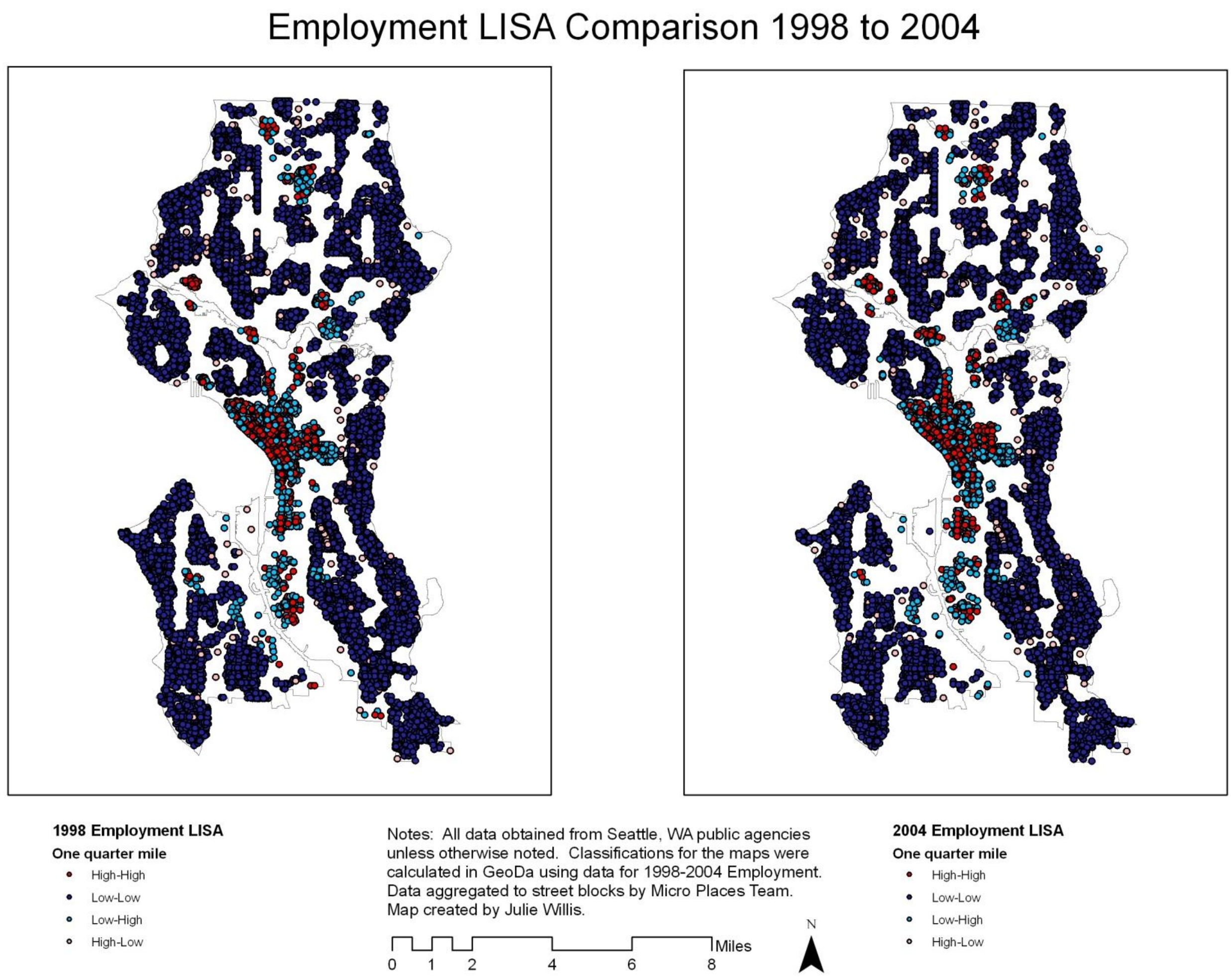
Another method for examining the distribution of employment is to map out the relative amounts of employment on each street segment (see Figure 4.7). This visualization reveals employment is concentrated along major roadways, the downtown core area, the southern industrial core, and along major waterways. It also shows the much larger spread of employers with small numbers of employees and home-based businesses.

Figure 4.7: Distribution of Employment across Street Segments



Information about whether employment is clustered in certain areas of Seattle can be obtained from a LISA map (see Figure 4.8). This clearly shows the cluster of high employment in the downtown core as well as large areas of low employment in residential areas with a few small businesses present.

Figure 4.8: LISA Results for Employment



Residential Population

Residential population is an important environmental backcloth characteristic. The connection between population density and crime is commonly accepted under an opportunity perspective; the higher the population density the higher the crime at a place.

The natural starting point for estimating residential population is census data. However, our focus on the micro level made using census data impossible.[8] So we chose to use characteristics of micro level places that would provide information about the resident population in the absence of a 100 percent head count. The only two sources of information we were able to obtain about residential population at the street segment level described the number of registered voters and the number of public school students. Both measures are individually biased but in different directions. The population of public school students tends to emphasize areas with children under the age of 18, lower income areas, and minority areas. The population of registered voters is biased toward higher income, white areas which are also the areas more likely to send their kids to private school. Places with high populations of public school are not the same as place with high populations of registered voters. By adding together the total number of public school students and the total number of registered voters we can create an approximation of the total number of people who are living on a particular street segment. This measure counts both adults and juveniles; however, it excludes those who under the age of five and those who attend private schools. In addition, it excludes those who are ex-felons (until they have completed their sentence and paid all fines, fees, and court costs) and those who have not registered to vote regardless of their reason. For example, non-US citizens would be undercounted by this measure as would those populations who tend not to register to vote.

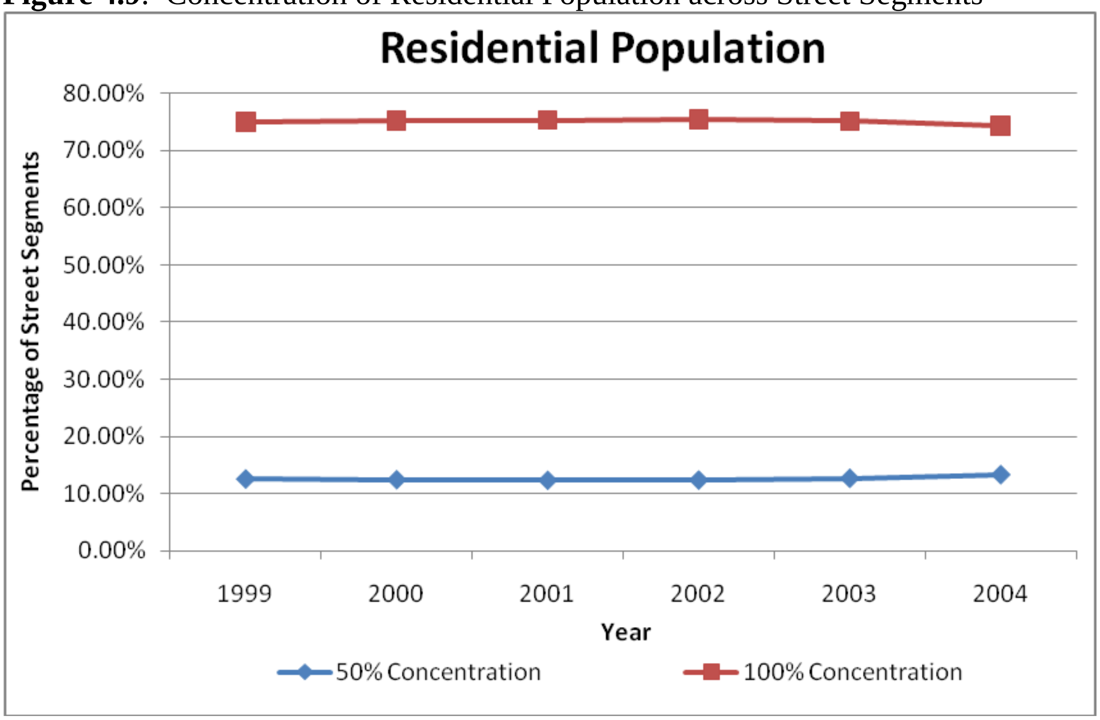
Our proxy measure produced a population estimate of 437,612 in 2001 which decreased to 381,815 by 2004. As expected, these figures are less than the total population of Seattle in both time periods. The census reports a population of 563,374 in 2000 (U.S. Census Bureau, 2000) and 536,946 in 2005 (U.S. Census Bureau, 2005). Our proxy measure revealed the

[8] The smallest unit of analysis used by the census is the census block. The census block aggregates one side of the street for four different street segments into a census block. The US Census Bureau was unable to accommodate our request to use original census data.

following information about the number of residents on each street. In 2001, the average number of residents was 18 and no street had more than 682 residents. By 2004, the average had declined to approximately 16 with a maximum of 409 residents. Overall, the population density in Seattle was declining.

Looking first to the concentration of residents on street segments, Figure 4.9 reveals that 50 percent of the residential population consistently lives on between 12 and 14 percent of Seattle street segments. All of the residential population lives on between 74 and 76 percent of street segments. Thus, population is highly concentrated on a relatively few streets. However, residents are also widespread and can be found on three-quarters of all streets.

Figure 4.9: Concentration of Residential Population across Street Segments



Once again, the city-wide changes in population were not dramatic but there was significant change at the unit of analysis. According to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 1180.196 ,df = 1.923). The average number of total residents per street segment does vary over time.

The densest residential areas are found in the central and northern parts of the city (see Figure 4.10). There are also isolated areas of high concentration in the southern part of the city but they are fewer, and the distance between them is greater. Half of all residents in the city live on the colored streets on the map.

Figure 4.10: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Residential Population

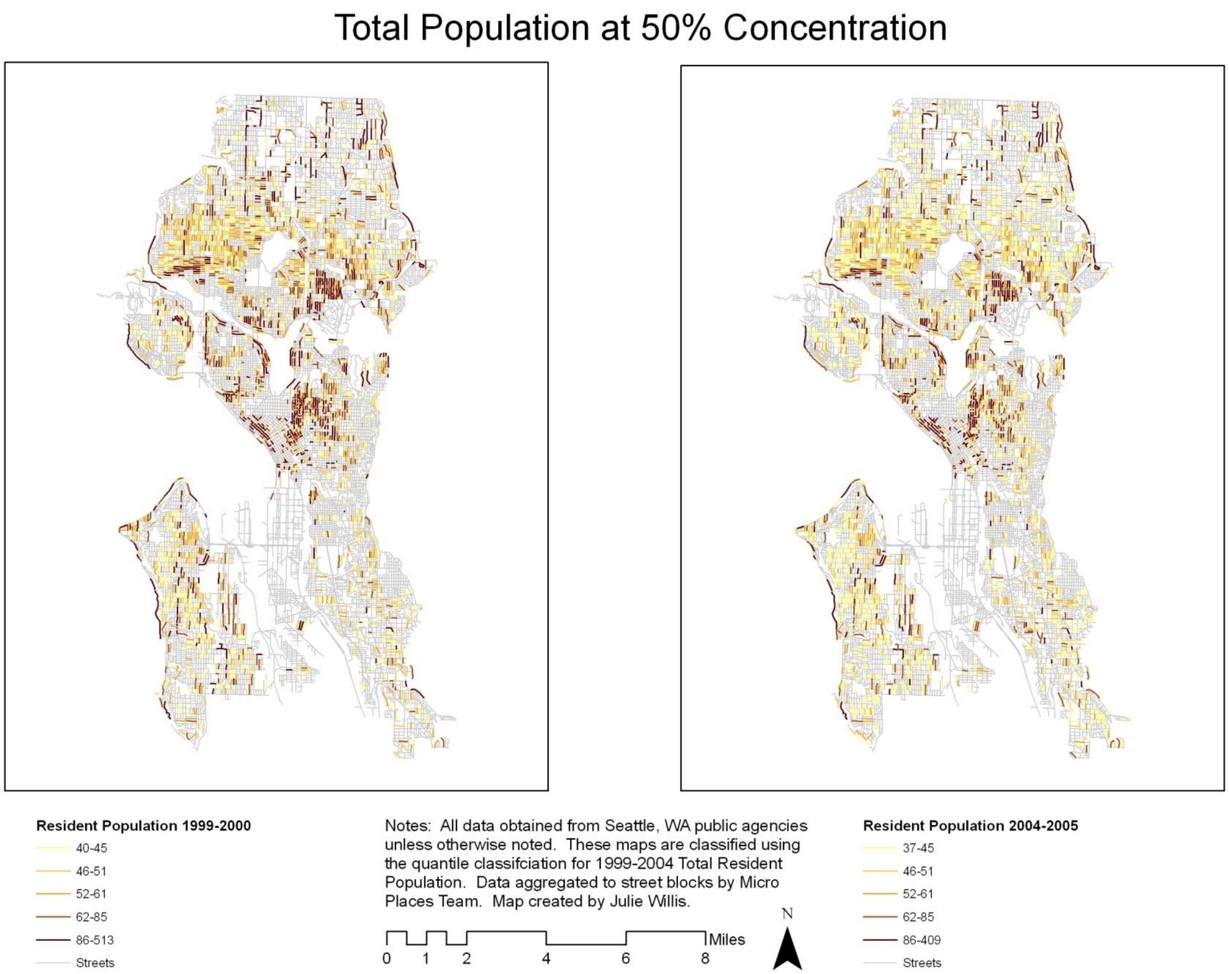
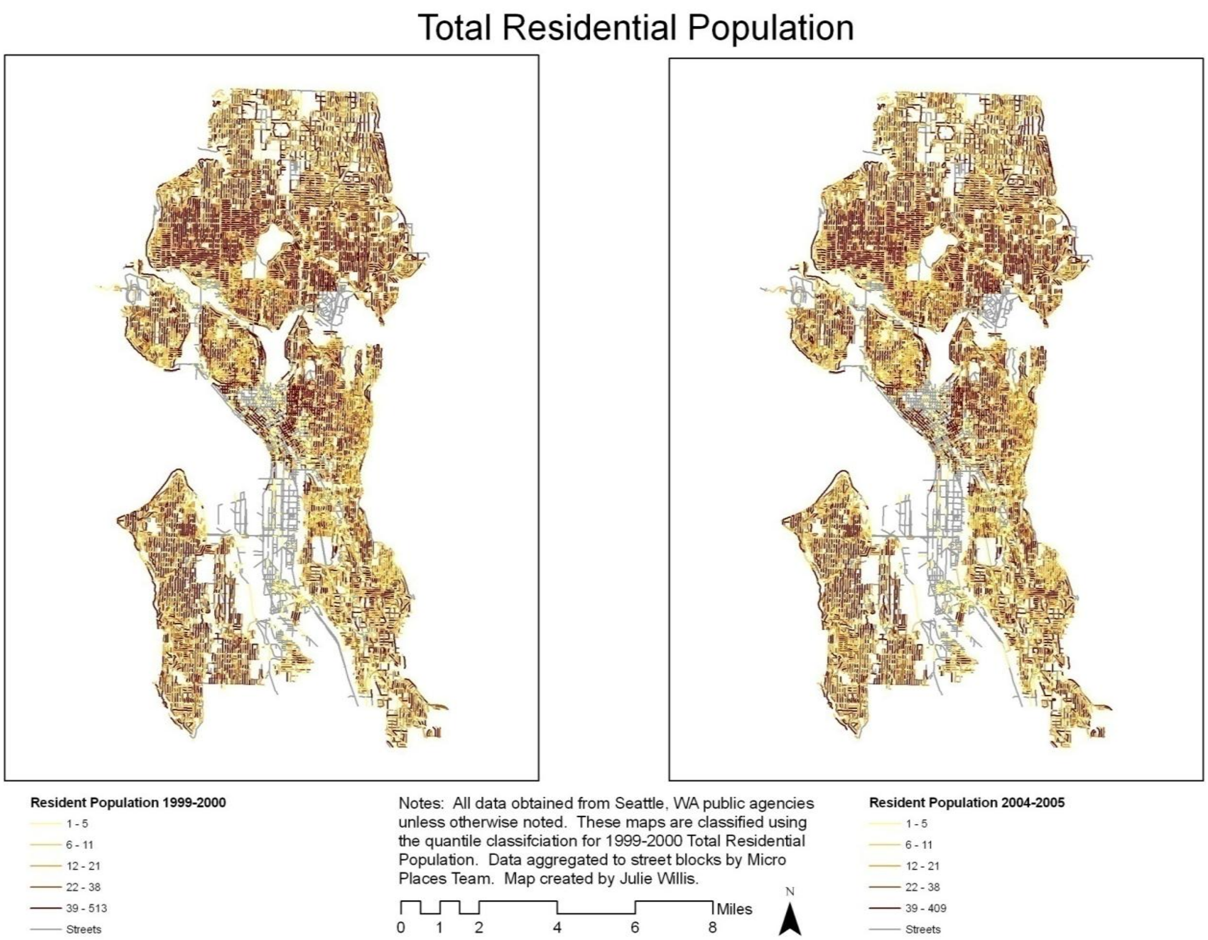


Figure 4.11 shows the geographic distribution of all residents and reveals how widespread residential population is in the city. While most of the city is covered by residential

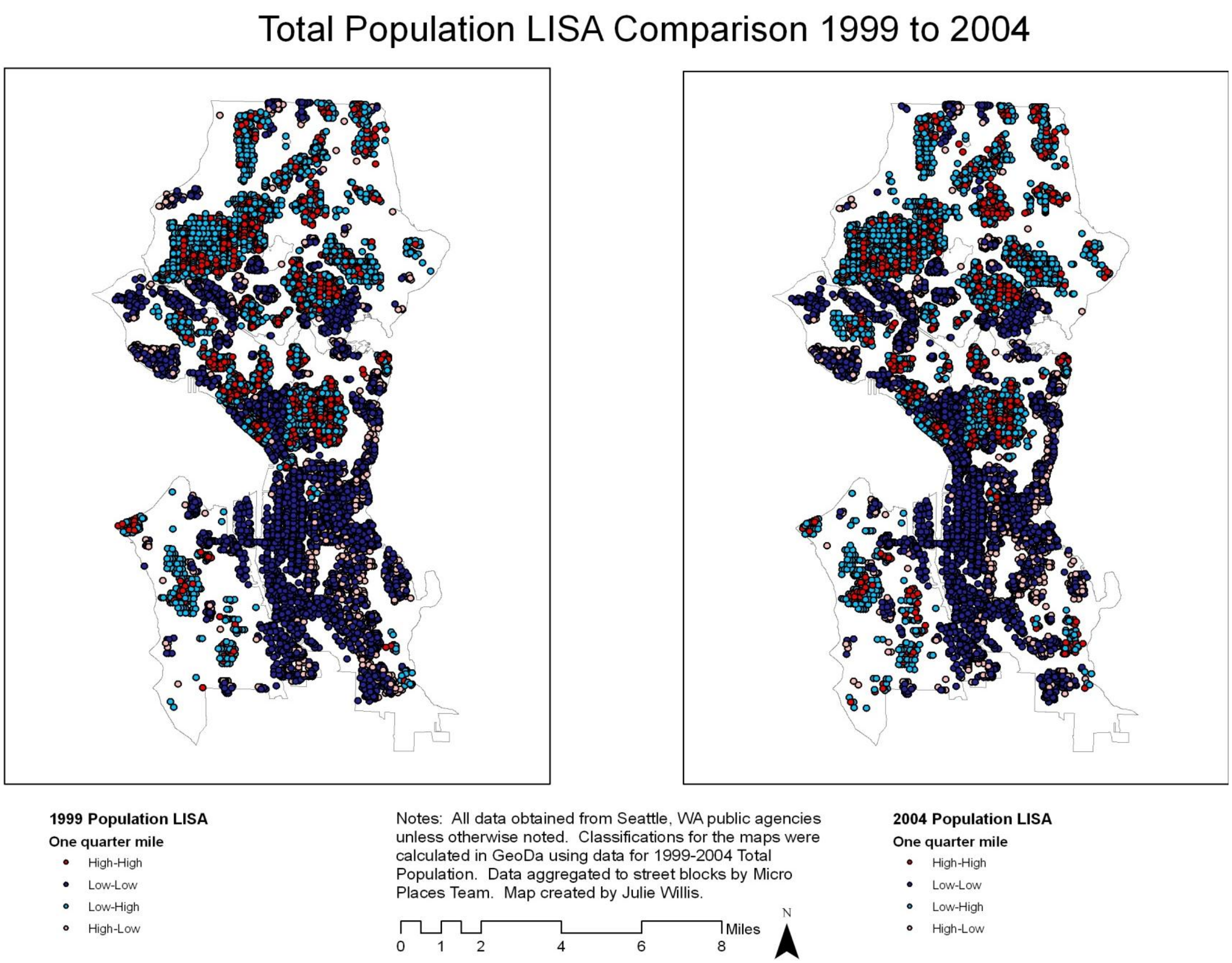
population there are three large areas that are conspicuously empty. These three areas consist of the major industrial area in the south, the downtown area, and the University of Washington campus. In the latter case our data base with its emphasis on pre-university students and voters clearly does not provide an accurate measure of the university population. Importantly, the University of Washington campus is not included in our later analyses involving crime data, because crime data were not available for coding in recent years (see chapter 2).

Figure 4.11: Distribution of Residential Population across Street Segments



The results of the LISA analysis indicate large swaths of area where low population street segments are surrounded by other low population street segments (dark blue) (see Figure 4.12). However it also reveals large areas that have high population street segments surrounded by other high population street segments. One interesting pattern exists in the southeastern section of the city where high population street segments are found interspersed among low population street segments (light red). This could be a sign of apartment complexes that are among single family residential units. Whatever the cause, the pattern suggests heterogeneity in those places.

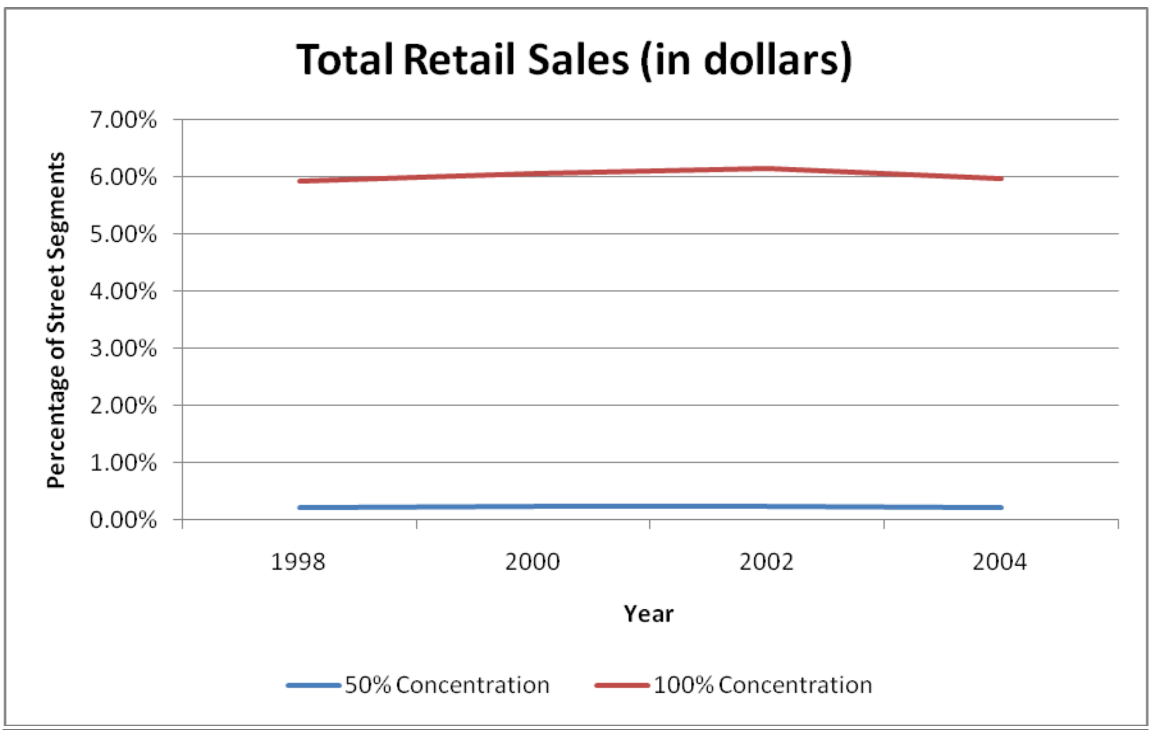
Figure 4.12: LISA Results for Residential Population



Business-related Crime Generators and Attractors

Businesses located at a place play a key role in attracting suitable targets. For this characteristic we add up the total sales for all the retail businesses on the street segment. We purchased data from InfoUSA for four different years: 1998, 2000, 2002, and 2004. 1998 was the earliest year with available data and cost precluded purchasing every year. Between 1998 and 2004, 50 percent of all retail sales in Seattle were consistently found on about 0.2 percent of the total street segments in Seattle (see Figure 4.13). Clearly, retail sales are concentrated in retail sales hot spots. For 100 percent of total retail sales, the trend line again shows a fairly consistent trend at about 6.0 percent of all street segments. These figures also show that approximately 94 percent of streets have no retail business sales in any given year.

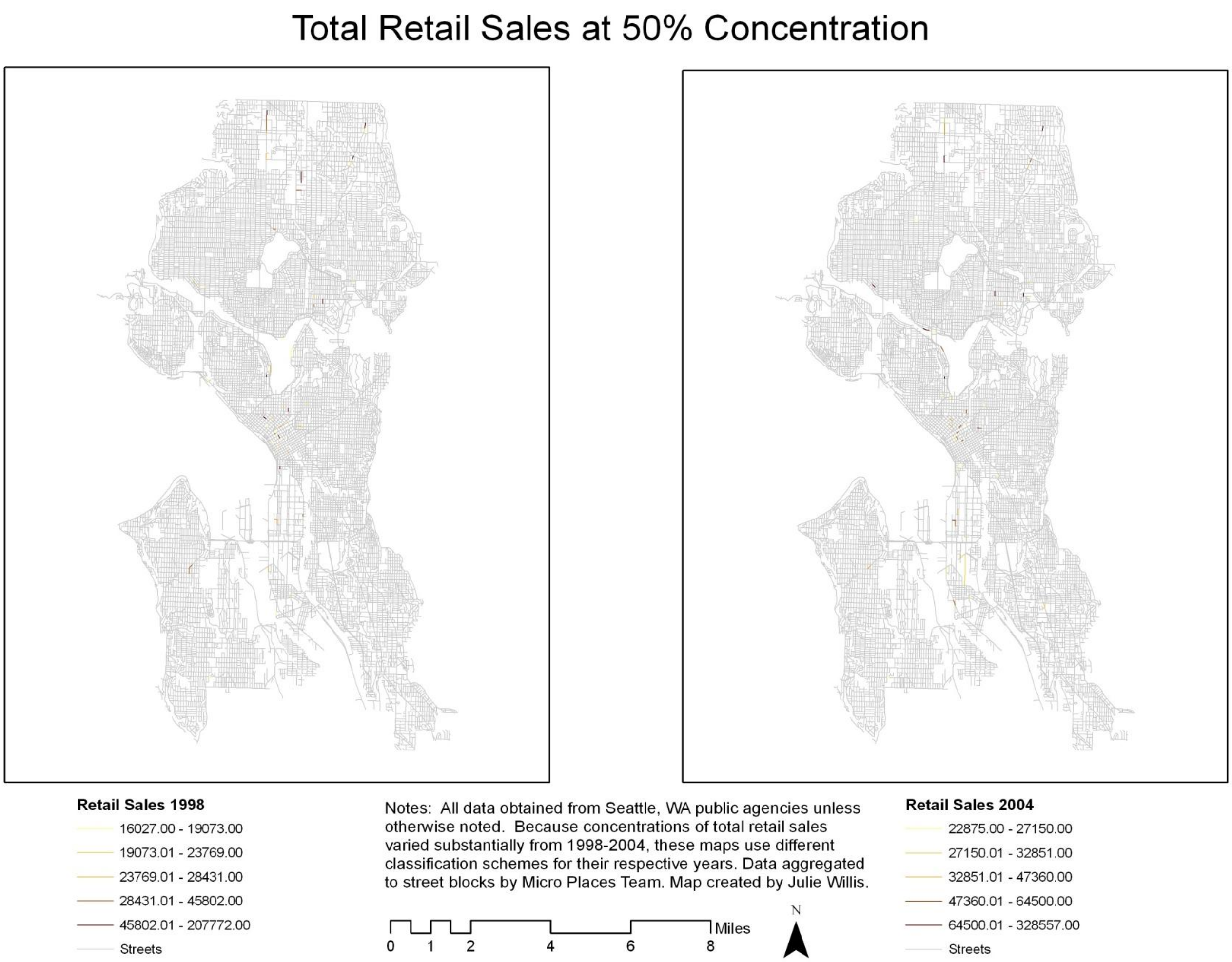
Figure 4.13: Concentration of Total Retail Sales across Street Segments



At a macro level, retail sales in Seattle are stable across time. But when examined at the street segment level, there is much more variation present. According to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 14.923, df = 2.407). Total retail sales do vary over time.

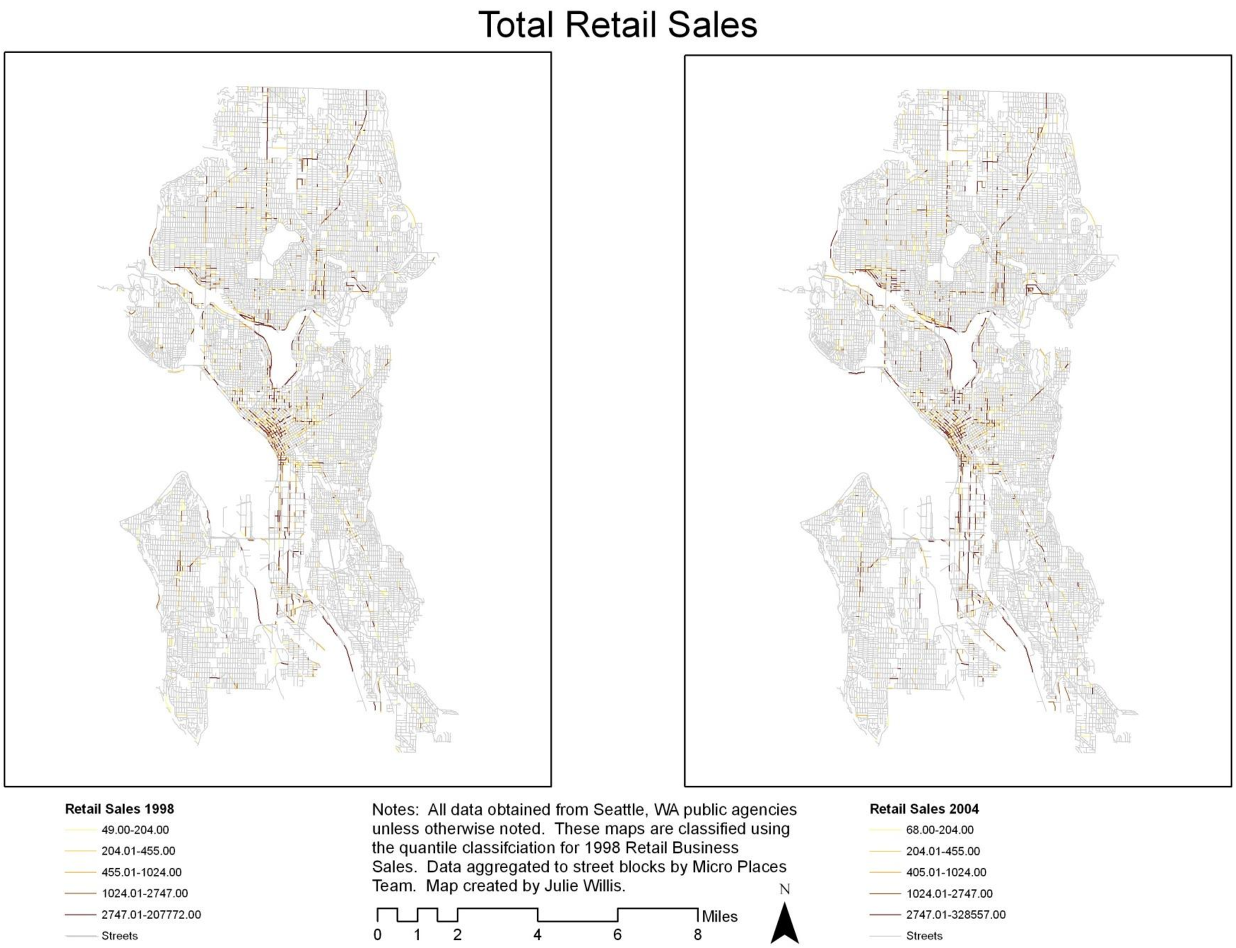
The street segments with the highest retail business sales are scattered across Seattle (see Figure 4.14). While we expected to see clusters of those street segments in the downtown core area and in major shopping areas, we were surprised by the extent of the concentration and the scattered geographic pattern of the segments accounting for half of all retail sales in Seattle.

Figure 4.14: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Total Retail Business Sales



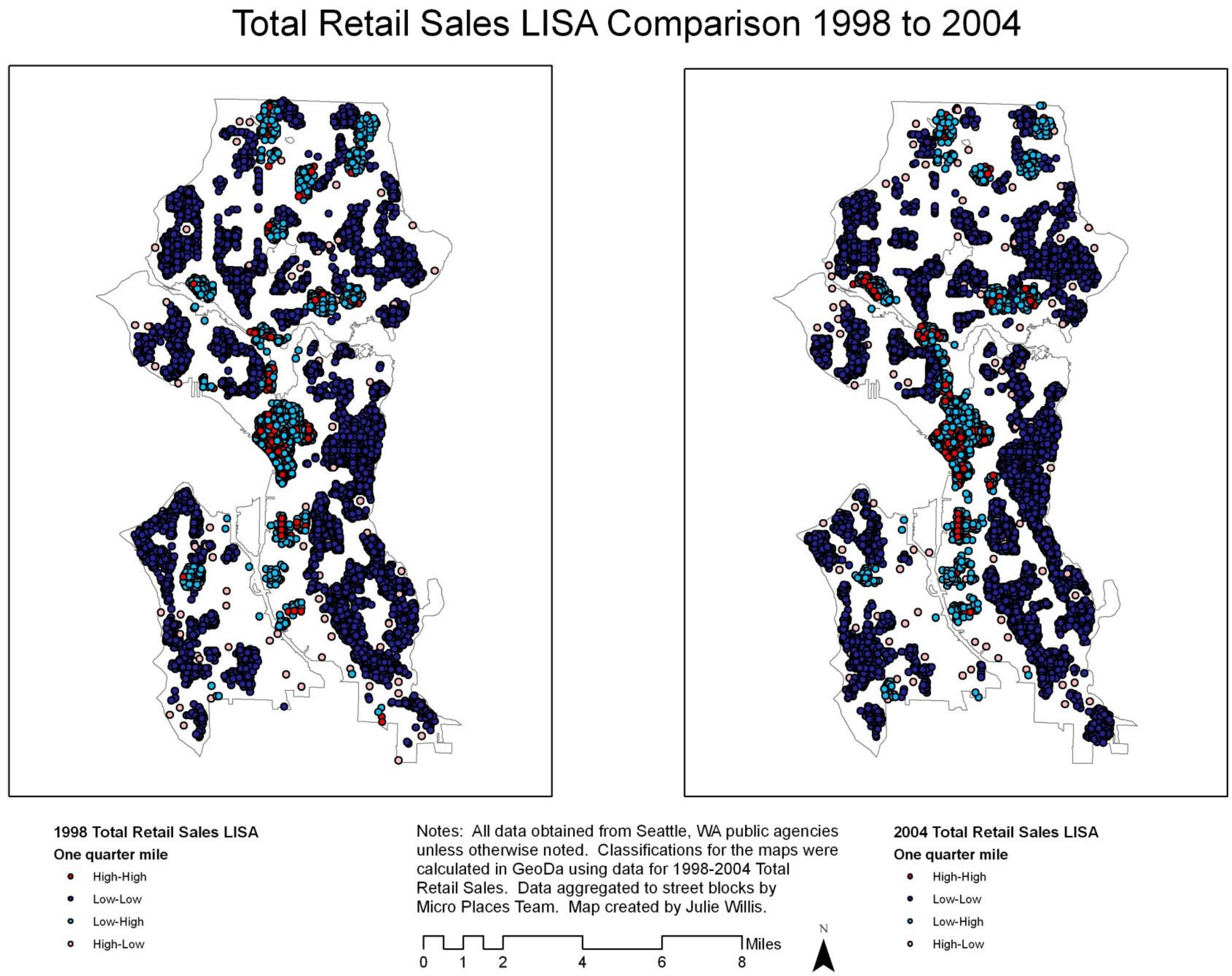
The quantile map which shows the total retail sales on each of the street segments indicates the expected geographic distribution of businesses sales (see Figure 4.15). Retail sales are clustered along major arteries and in business districts such as the downtown area and the industrial area south of downtown.

Figure 4.15: Distribution of Total Retail Business Sales



The LISA for retail businesses sales confirms this pattern (see Figure 4.16). The downtown core has many street segments with high retail sales near other street segments with high retail sales. However, there are also streets with low retail sales street segments interspersed within those high sales street segments. The large dark blue areas are predominantly residential with low numbers of low volume establishments. Finally, there are individual street segments (found in all parts of the city) where a street has significantly higher retail sales than the streets around it. These clusters represent commercial areas in the midst of residential ones.

Figure 4.16: LISA Results for Total Retail Business Sales



Public Facility-Related Crime Generators and Attractors

Public facilities also play a key role in attracting suitable targets. For this characteristic we summarized all the government facilities that are on a street segment.[9] Public and quasi-public facilities on the street segment include: 1) community centers; 2) hospitals; 3) libraries; 4) parks and 5) middle and high schools. Because of the low number of facilities present in Seattle, we operationalized the construct as the average number of public facilities within one quarter of a mile of a place. In the following paragraphs, we first describe the distribution of facilities

[9] Parks and schools present an analytical challenge in that they often are bounded by more than one street segment. This issue is not addressed in the study. Parks and schools are allocated to the street segment on which their street address is located. We recognize this as a deficiency but given the relatively small numbers of parks and schools believe the effect on the results will be minimal.

across our units of analysis. The distribution of the 'total number of public facilities within one quarter of a mile of a place' is described next.

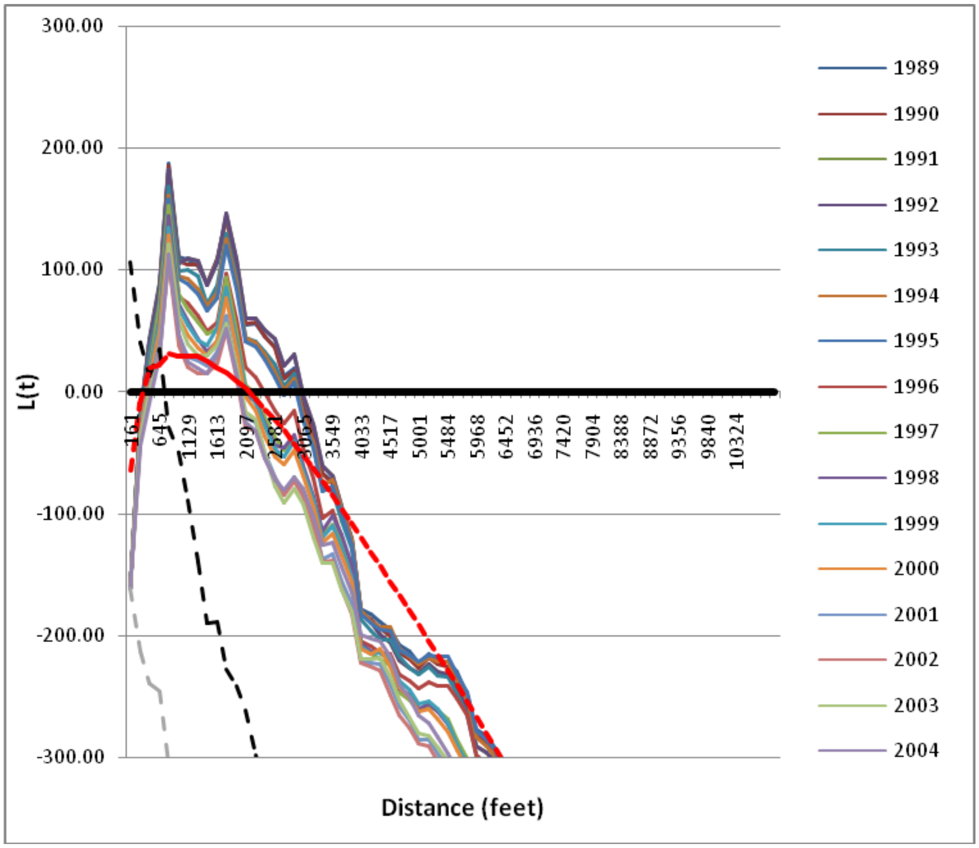
The number of public facilities in Seattle ranged from 379 in 1989 to 419 in 2004. The number decreased for the first two years of the study period and then began a steady increase between 1993 and 2002 (see Table 4.2). In 2003, there was a slight decrease before rebounding. These changes were due to both temporary closings for renovations, permenant closings, and relocations, as well as new facilities being added. Given the small number of facilities, no concentration graphs or maps are provided. Community centers (n=26) and hospitals (n=13) were stable. The overall number of public facilities in Seattle increased over the time period largely due to more parks being created (an increase of 44 parks). Schools added two locations and libraries added four.

Table 4.2: Number of Public Facilities over Time

Year	Number of Public Facilities
1989	379
1990	374
1991	375
1992	375
1993	380
1994	385
1995	386
1996	391
1997	400
1998	404
1999	410
2000	413
2001	419
2002	423
2003	421
2004	429

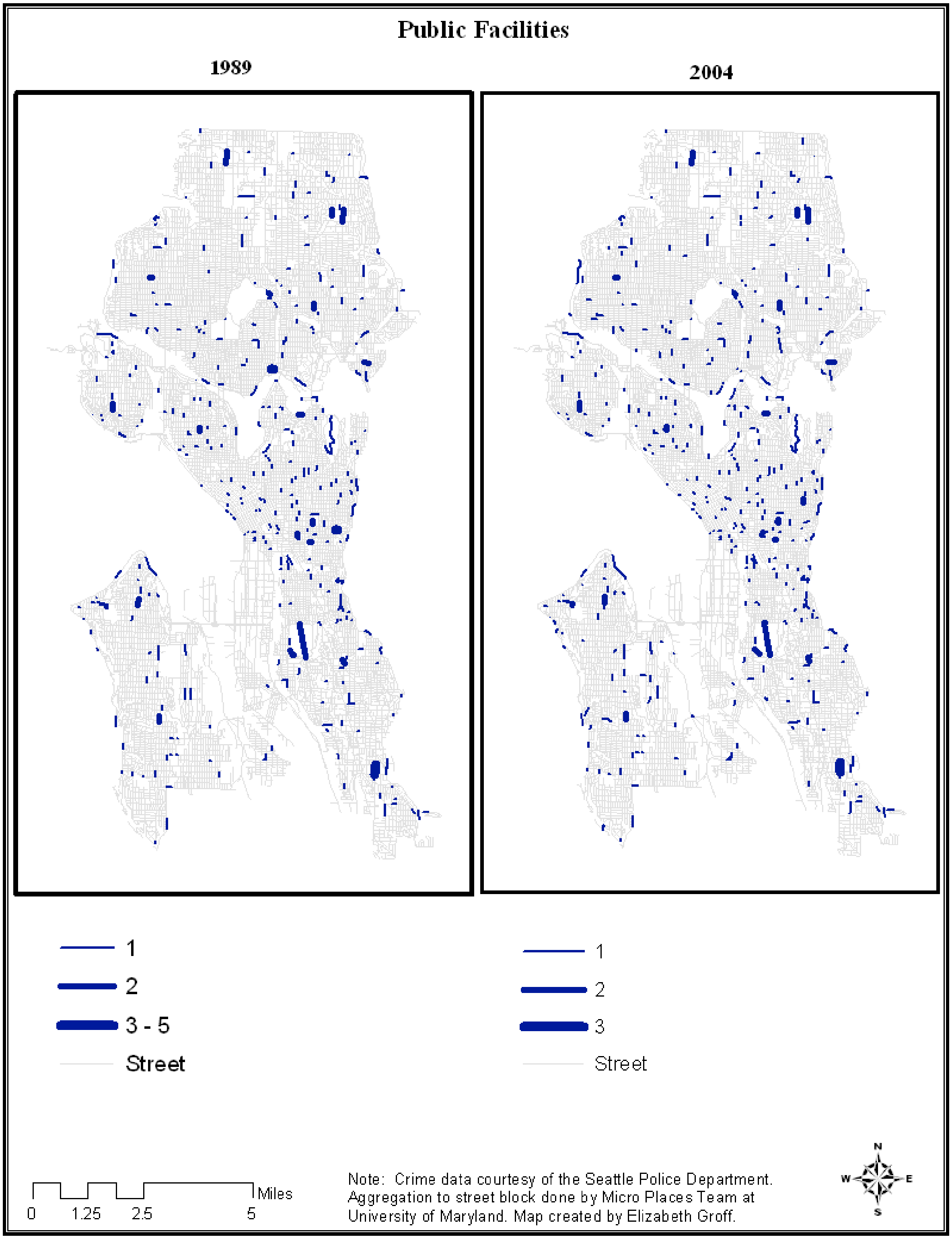
The spatial distribution of public facilities as a group is clustered at distances greater than about a street segment and a half (see Figure 4.17). The clustering is greater than we would expect under an assumption of complete spatial randomness at all distances above two street segments. However, when compared with the clustering intrinsic to our units of analysis, we find the clustering occurs between about 650 feet and 2,000 feet for most years and for some years the clustering extends to about 3,000 feet. For example, street segments with any public facility are more likely to have another public facility within 2,000 – 3,000 feet.

Figure 4.17: Ripley's K for Distribution of Public Facilities across Street Segments



As a whole, public facilities are spread across all sections of the city with some concentration of facilities in the center section of the city (see Figure 4.18). Slight changes in the number of facilities on individual streets over the period from 1989 –2004 did occur but the overall pattern is stable.

Figure 4.18: Distribution of Public Facilities across Street Segments



Our conceptualization measure reflecting 'average number of facilities within one quarter of a mile' is used to capture the influence of public facilities on nearby places. The distribution of the 'average total number of public facilities within one quarter of a mile of a place' is computed as follows. We examine two time points, the beginning (1989-1991) and the end (2002-2004) of the study period. The total number of public facilities within a quarter mile drive of each street segment is computed for each year. Then we take an average of the first three years to represent the beginning of the study period and an average of the last three years to represent the end.

The following Figures (4.19 and 4.20) show the exposure of places to public facilities. The majority of street segments (approximately 63 percent at the start and 59 percent at the end) have no public facilities within one-quarter of a mile. Relatively few, less than 12 percent and 14 percent respectively, have more than one facility nearby.

Figure 4.19: Distribution of Public Facilities across Street Segments 1989-1991

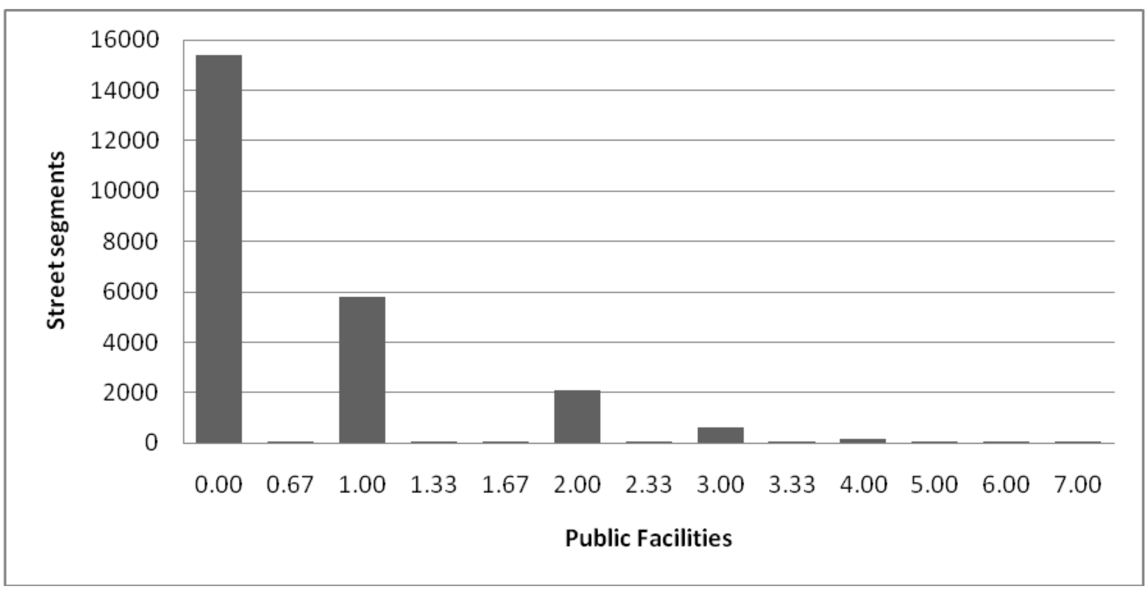
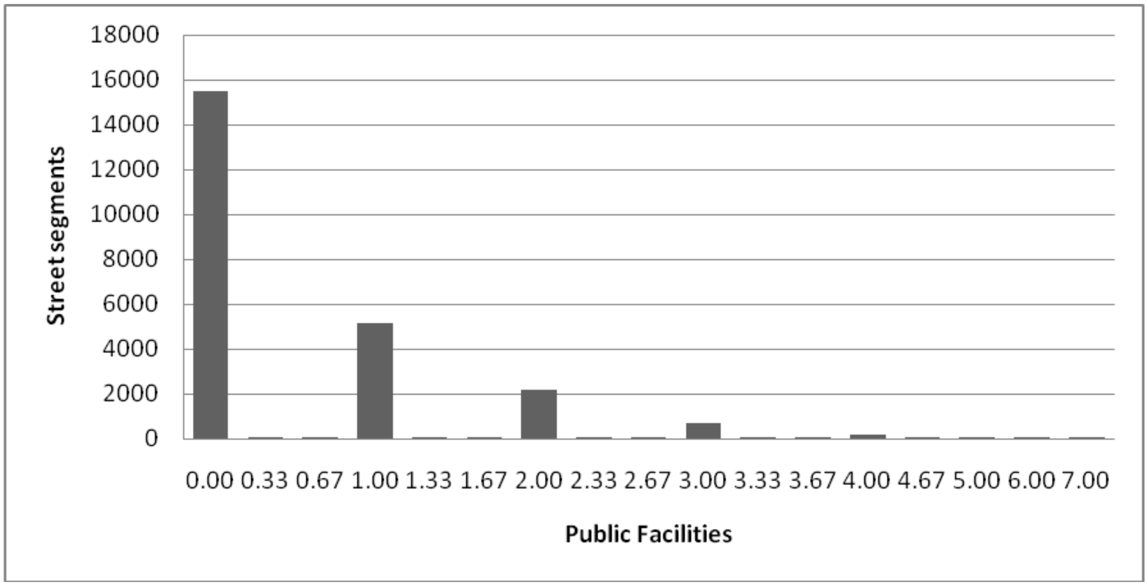
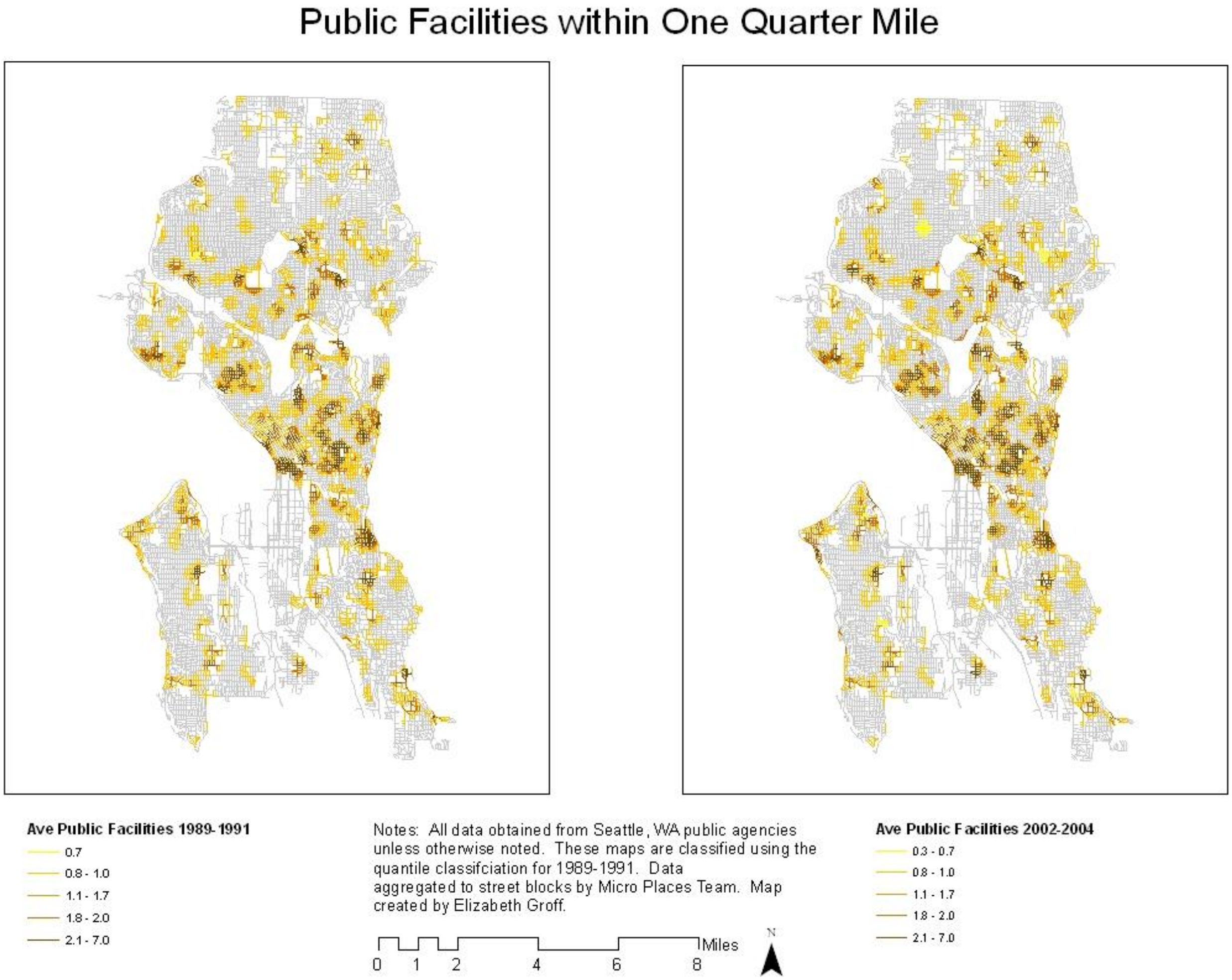


Figure 4.20: Distribution of Public Facilities across Street Segments 2002-2004



Because there can be multiple facilities within the catchment area of 1,320 feet (one-quarter mile), a concentration graph is inappropriate. However, it is possible to examine the geographic distribution of exposure to public facilities (see Figure 4.21).

Figure 4.21: Average Number of Public Facilities across Street Segments



<u>Summary: Suitable Targets</u>

All the measures related to the distribution of suitable targets across Seattle suggest they are concentrated in hot spots on certain street segments and in certain areas of the city. Residential population is the most dispersed of the group with 100 percent of the characteristic found on more than 75 percent of the street segments. When defined as employment or retail business sales, suitable targets tend to be concentrated on major roads in Seattle. When defined as public facilities, suitable targets are isolated on individual street segments which are dispersed throughout the city. By taking an average of the number of facilities near a street segment, we can get a clearer picture of the potential sphere of influence of those facilities. Still, their influence is concentrated on particular street segments near those relatively infrequent facility locations.

Accessibility/Urban Form

The place characteristics in this section provide a method for describing the accessibility of a place. Opportunity theories recognize that places with more people who frequent them or with which more people are familiar are more likely to experience crime. The relationship between numbers of people and crime is not necessarily a linear one, but rather more of a precondition that makes a particular set of outcomes more likely. Just as an accident can occur on a deserted road but is more likely on a crowded urban street, crime can occur in places with few people but is far more likely in places with many people. One related aspect of accessibility is that it increases the number of people who know about a place. Studies at the street segment level of analysis have established the relationship between traffic flow and accessibility (number of 'turning' opportunities) and property crime (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1993a, 1993b).

Type of Street

We begin with an intrinsic characteristic of the road network, type of street. We consider only two categories, arterial roads and non-arterial roads. Arterial streets are those that carry larger volumes of traffic. The non-arterial roads consist of residential streets and walkways.[10] Residential streets run through neighborhoods and are designed to carry only neighborhood traffic. Walkways are non-vehicular paths or stairways that typically connect two residential streets.

Arterial streets are of particular interest to this study because of their role in increasing accessibility and serving as change points across the urban landscape. High crime

[10] Limited access highways are excluded from the study since they do not fit our definition of a place.

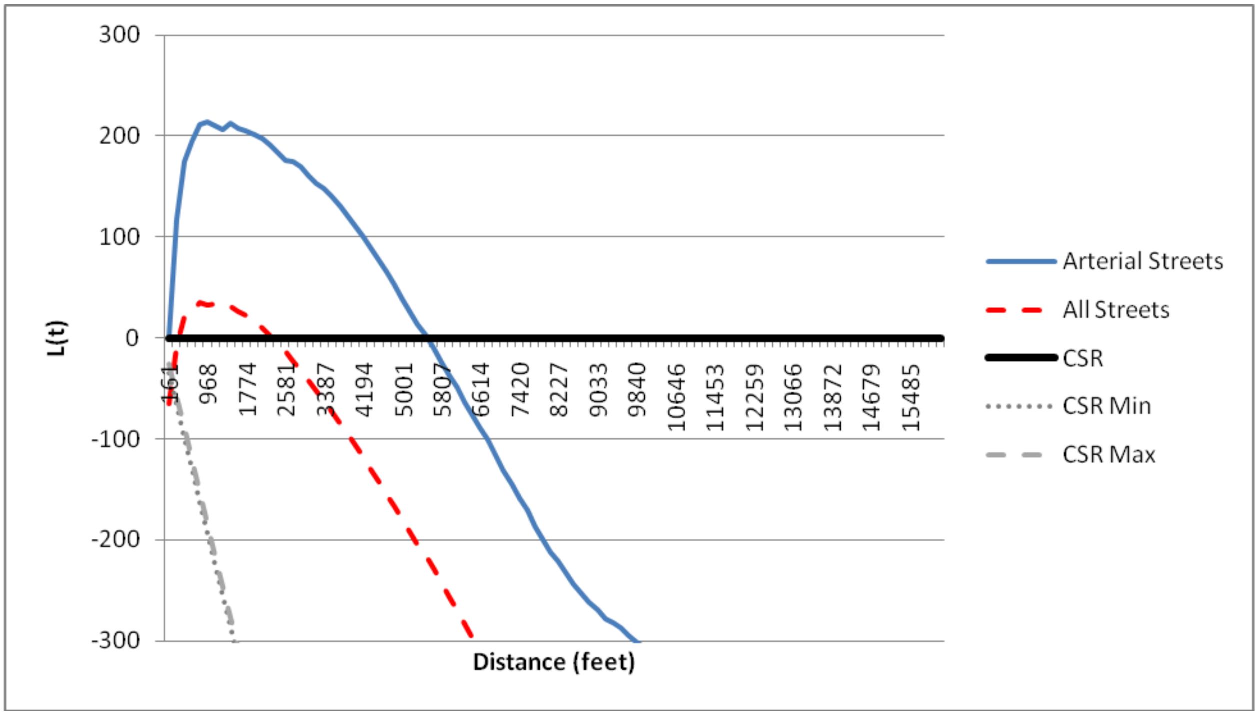
neighborhoods tend to have boundaries consisting of arterial streets which facilitate the movement of people to and from an area (Loukaitou-Sideris, 1999). Theoretically, crime pattern theory recognizes the role of arterials as boundary streets that are different from their adjacent streets (Rengert et al., 2005). A number of studies have shown a relationship between street type and crime. In Los Angeles, one study found the ten highest crime bus stops were situated in commercial areas at the intersection of multi-lane roads (Levine & Wachs, 1986; Loukaitou-Sideris, 1999). In New York city, street segments with more lanes experienced more reported Part I and quality-of-life crimes (Perkins et al., 1993). Typical explanations for these results include: 1) surveillance is more difficult from inside residences on wide streets (Perkins et al., 1993); 2) the greater public nature of wider streets (Perkins et al., 1993); and 3) larger streets facilitate a criminal's ability to escape (Loukaitou-Sideris, 1999). However, a study of convenience store robberies found that stores on less traveled streets but near larger roads had higher numbers of robberies because they had fewer people around for natural surveillance (Duffala, 1976). Commercial burglary demonstrated a similar dichotomous pattern; businesses located within three street segments of a major thoroughfare or a limited access highway were less likely to be robbed (Hakim & Shachamurove, 1996).

It is not just the street type but the overall accessibility of the street that is important to residential burglary rates. More permeable neighborhoods had higher residential burglary rates (Bevis & Nutter, 1977; White, 1990). Permeability is calculated as the number of streets connecting to arterials as they ran through the neighborhood. The theory is that the arterials bring potential offenders into the area, and then the attractiveness of easy ingress and egress leads them to search for potential targets in the area. Another study found that street segments along moderate volume roads experienced higher rates of residential burglary because they have enough traffic to expose them to potential offenders but not enough to make for effective surveillance (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1982). But yet another study found that the higher rates of residential burglary were on residential (low volume) roads and very high volume residential roads (Rengert & Wasilchick, 2000). These mixed findings may be related to a lack of surveillance on residential roads and the anonymity that comes with very busy residential streets. To add to the mixed message, dead end streets have been shown to be less likely to be victimized by residential burglars (Frisbie et al., 1978; Hakim et al., 2000; Maguire, 1982). Still other studies find that the accessibility of a place is directly related to crime more generally (Beavon et al., 1994; Greenberg et al., 1984) and to the attractiveness of a street for street robbery (Wright & Decker, 1997).

Non-arterial streets are the largest category of streets in Seattle. Residential streets account for 73.4 percent (n=17,734) of all streets in the study. Arterial streets are 26.7 percent (n = 6,444) of all streets. Prevalence measures are not calculated since this is a nominal level variable. Measures of variability across time were not applied since the same street bocks were used for the entire study period. We considered trying to obtain street centerline files for the previous years in the study but concluded it was unnecessary because of the maturity of the street network in Seattle. We checked with the Planning Department of the City of Seattle to find out the number of changes in the street network which had occurred within Seattle over the time period. They reported only one change that they knew of which would have changed the street network. In addition, the completeness and accuracy of the address ranges had been gradually improved over the time period. Using an earlier version of the street centerline file would have just reduced the accuracy of our geocoding effort.

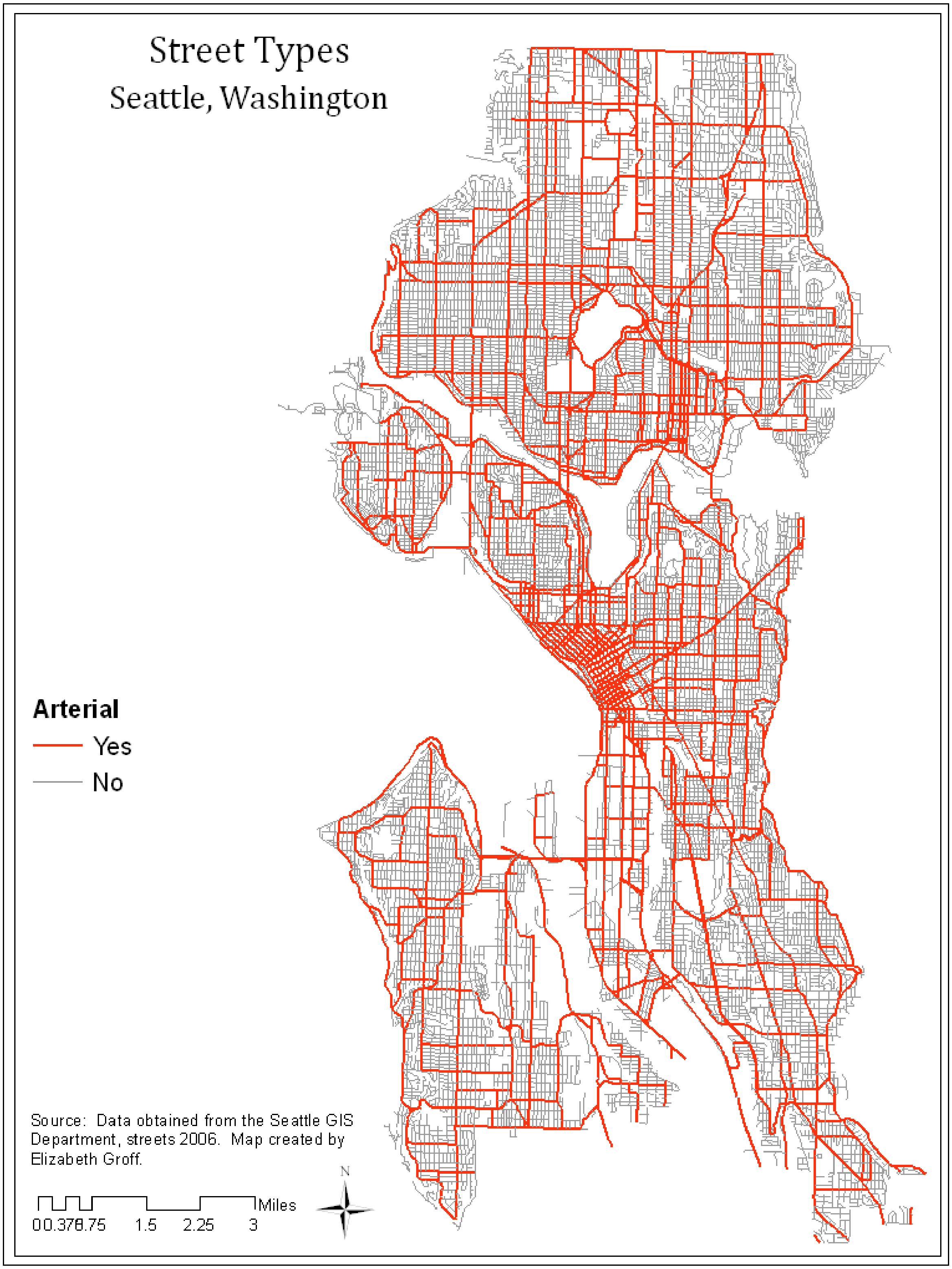
The spatial distribution of streets by type is as would be expected. The arterial streets tend to be near other arterial streets (near in this case is a linear concept since streets are connected at their ends) (see Figure 4.22).

Figure 4.22: Linear Ripley's K for Arterial Streets



Since Seattle is a mature city, it is not surprising that the residential road network covers the majority of the land surface that is not covered by water (see Figure 4.23). Water is a major factor in shaping transportation in Seattle because it acts as a barrier. The 'blank' areas of the city depicted on Figure 4.23 are major water bodies. Seattle is bordered by Puget Sound on the west and Lake Washington to the east. In addition, the city is cut into sections by major waterways. In the southern portion, the Duwamish Waterway is the gateway to a large industrial area of the city. There is only one bridge across the waterway and that is near the mouth of the waterway. The Duwamish Waterway splits the southern section of Seattle into southwestern and southeastern sections. The Lake Washington Ship Canal splits the northern section of the city from the central section. There are three arterial bridges that cross this waterway.

Figure 4.23: Distribution of Street Types



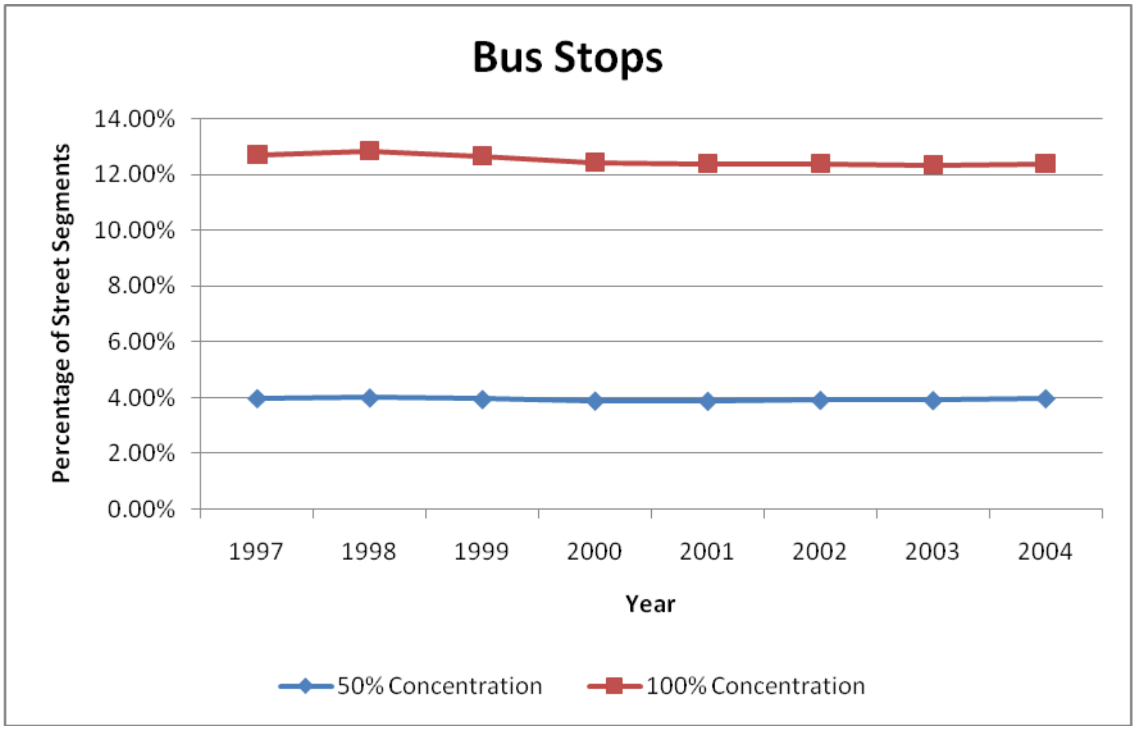
Bus Stops

The only place characteristic related to accessibility which changed over the study period is the number of bus stops. Bus stops are used as a measure of public transportation accessibility. Previous studies have examined crime near bus stops (Roman, 2005) while others have used the presence of bus stops as part of a composite measure of 'busy places' (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991]; Horton & Reynolds, 1971). Yet another study focused on school bus stops and crime, finding that census blocks with higher numbers of school bus stops are associated with higher crime (Golledge & Stimson, 1997; Rengert, 1988). These studies have indicated that bus stops on a street segment contribute to 'setting the stage' for criminal events.

The King County Metro agency serves Seattle as well as the rest of King County. We focus just on bus service within the city of Seattle. The average number of bus stops across streets in Seattle is 4,160 per year. The average number of streets with at least one bus stop is 3,026. About one third of those streets experienced a change in the number of bus stops over the time period (some gained or lost service completely). The average density of bus stops was just over three per mile, one every third of a mile.

While the number of bus stops has decreased slightly over the study period the number of streets served by buses has remained essentially stable (see Figure 4.24). In addition, the concentration of bus stops on streets is extremely high. Between 1997 and 2004, 50 percent of the total bus stops were consistently found on about 4 percent of Seattle street segments. All of the bus stops were located on between 12 and 13 percent of the total street segments, indicating a fairly stable global trend over time.

Figure 4.24: Concentration of Bus Stops across Street Segments



As far as prevalence, the majority of street segments had no official bus stops (n = 20,750, 85.9 percent) over the entire study period. The total number of bus stops has decreased since 1997 but the number of streets with bus stops is almost identical. This is not to say that there were not changes in the particular streets with a bus stop only that the overall picture was relatively stable.

Roughly 95.4 percent (n=23,077) streets had no change in the number of bus stops (i.e. if they had none at the start of the period, they did not get any over the period and still had the same amount at the end of the study period. If they had two at the start of the period, they had two over the rest of the period). The change that did occur was at 4.56 percent (1,102) streets. Among those streets with a change, the following can be said:

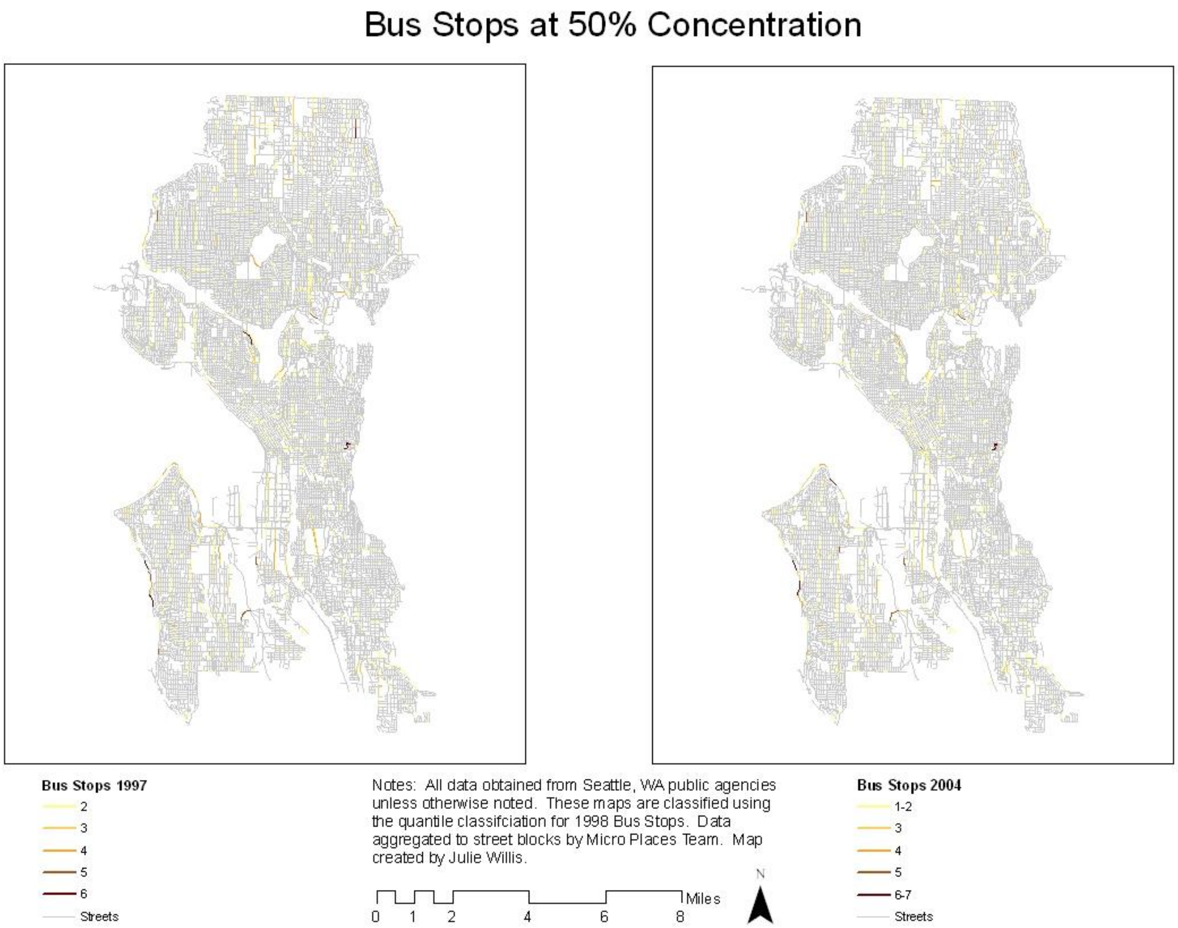
- About 1.4 percent (n=339) of streets gained a bus stop between 1997 and the end of the study period; 1.4 percent streets had no bus stop in 1997 but increased to one or more bus stops at some point in the study period (they went from absence to presence at some point during study period – includes all years)

- A few streets, just over 1.63 percent (n= 394) of streets, had a net increase in bus stops over the period.
- About 2.39 percent (n=578) of streets had a net decrease in bus stops over the period.

Even though the above description paints a stable picture across time, according to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 25.892, df = 2.906) (meaning that the time effect is significant). The number of bus stops on each unit of analysis does vary over time.

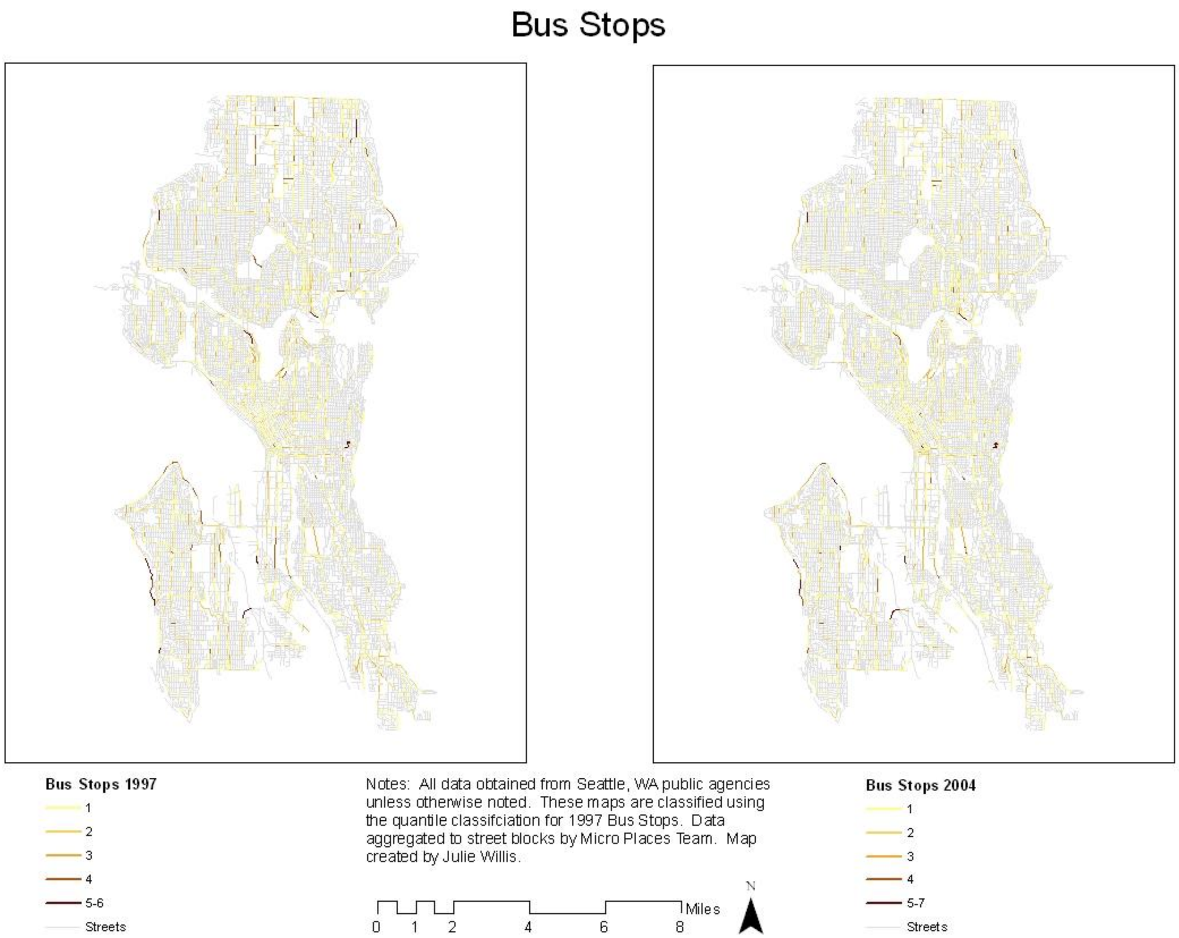
The spatial distribution of bus stops follows the major arteries with fewer stops in neighborhoods. The geographic distribution of the street segments that account for 50 percent of all bus stops is clustered along major arteries (see Figure 4.25).

Figure 4.25: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Bus Stops



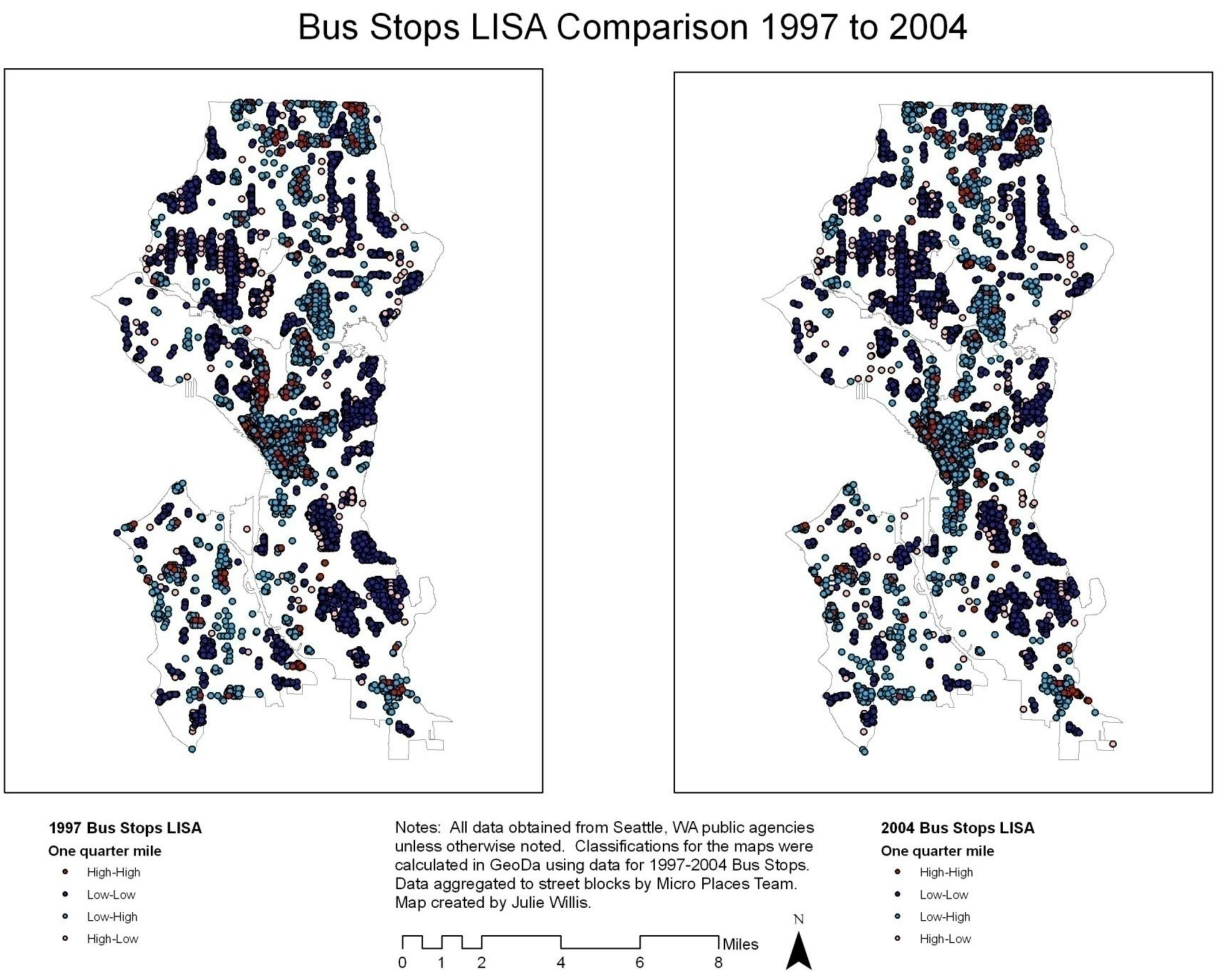
The greatest overall density is in the downtown area of the city in both years shown (see Figure 4.26). The absolute number of bus stops has a narrow range and the longer streets tend to have more stops.

Figure 4.26: Distribution of Bus Stops across Street Segments



The LISA results for bus stops are in line with findings from the other maps. There is significant variation from street segment to street segment in many areas of the city, especially downtown. There are also some areas of the city that have significantly low numbers of stops (see Figure 4.27). Of course, the clustering of bus stops tends to follow a continuous linear pattern rather than a clustered pattern. In a continuous linear pattern, the streets which are connected end to end (for example, two different street segments of the same street) tend to have similar amounts of a characteristic (in this case bus stops/public transportation potential) while quantities of streets one street over are unrelated. This pattern contrasts with one in which clusters of streets are similar even if they do not actually touch one another. Characteristics that follow transportation networks tend to be linearly related and thus we expect street segments on either side of a target street segment to be less like the target street segment than the street segments on each end.

Figure 4.27: LISA Results for Bus Stops



Summary: Urban Form/Accessibility

Arterial streets make up almost 27 percent of all streets. It is those streets that most often have one or more bus stops on them. In this way both bus travel and car travel are concentrated on a relatively small proportion of all streets. In addition, it is this relatively small proportion of streets and those streets near them with which both residents and nonresidents are most familiar

Guardianship

The following section addresses the concept of guardianship at a particular place. Perception of the guardianship at a place is very important in offender decision making. In places with high levels of informal social control both guardianship and perceived guardianship are high. Factors related to guardianship are the visibility of targets and guardians and numbers of capable guardians present. Capable guardians are represented by the total number of police stations and fire station within one-quarter of a mile of a place. Percent vacant land use represents the presence of a consistent hole in the fabric of informal social control on a street segment (Rice & Smith, 2002). Vacant land is not typically a destination for legal activities and it has no place managers at all; thus, it decreases the potential for informal social control. Two facility-related characteristics linked to guardianship are also included in this section; police stations and fire stations. By definition these facilities attract capable guardians in the form of police officers and firefighters. This benefit does not stop at the facility but extends to the streets which are used to arrive at and leave those stations. Finally, the amount of street lighting captures the visibility at a place during evening hours. It has also been hypothesized to represent the investment of a city in a place (Groff & LaVigne, 2001).

Percent Vacant Land Use

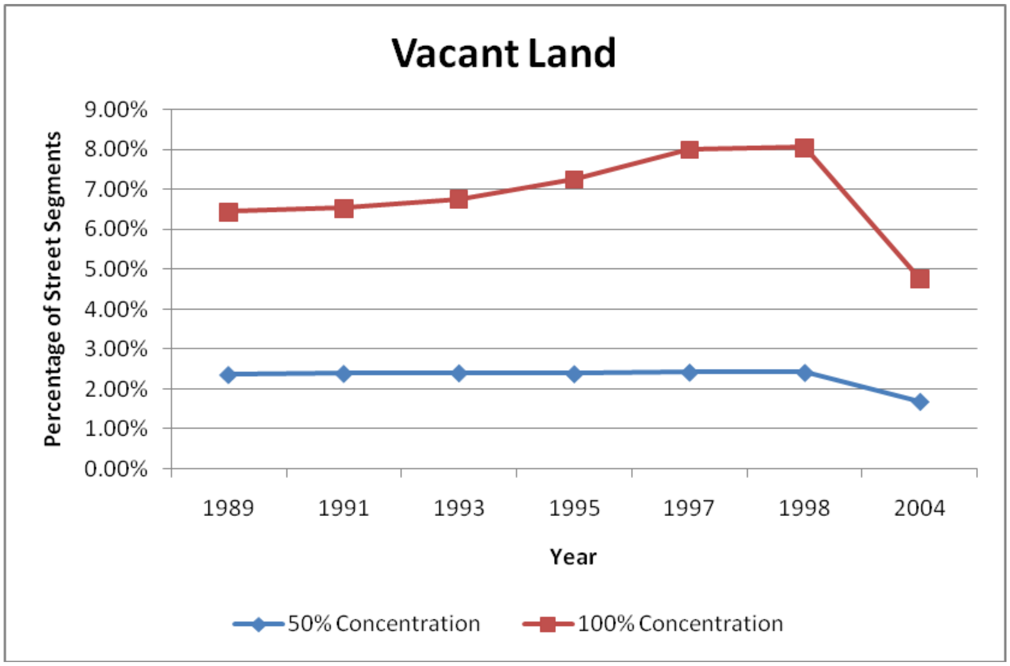
This characteristic is pulled from the parcel data for Seattle which has a land use code that identifies parcels that are vacant. The category includes developable land that is currently vacant (land uses such as cemeteries, parks, easements etc. are not included in this measure).

Previous research shows that at the street segment level, vacant/parking lots were significantly related to increased auto theft (Taylor et al., 1995). When vacant lots were included as part of an index of nonresidential properties, streets with more vacant land experienced more

Part I and quality of life crimes (Kurtz et al., 1998) and higher levels of physical deterioration (Loukaitou-Sideris, 1999). When vacant lots and storefronts were combined, they were significantly related to both litter and vandalism as well as calls for service (Evans & Oulds, 1984; Herbert, 1982). High crime bus stops (Smith et al., 2000) and increased rates of burglary at adjacent properties (Wilcox et al., 2004) were also associated with vacant land use. Vacant lots (when combined with parking lots) were also significantly related to street robbery (Kurtz et al., 1998).

Between 1989 and 1998, 50 percent of the vacant land is consistently found on between 2 and 2.5 percent of the total Seattle street segments (see Figure 4.28). In 2004, there is a decline down to 1.7 percent of street segments. The concentration line for 100 percent of the vacant land shows a slight increasing trend from 1989 to 1998 moving from 6.4 to 8.0 percent of total street segements. There is a dramtic decline down to 4.7 percent of street segments in 2004. A substantial decrease in total vacant parcels explains the drop in 2004.

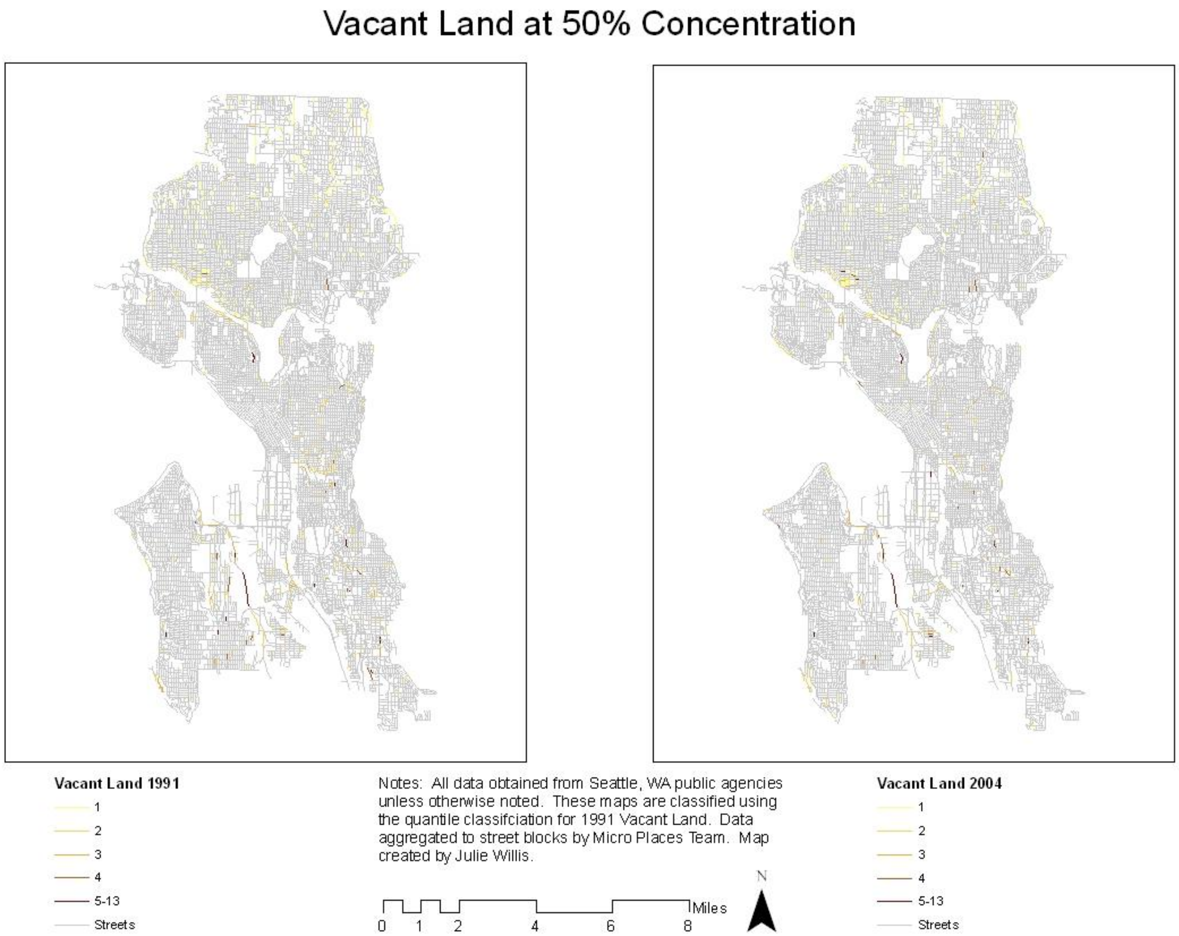
Figure 4.28: Concentration of Vacant Land Parcels across Street Segments



According to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 253.600 ,df = 2.035). The number of vacant parcels at the street segment level does vary over time.

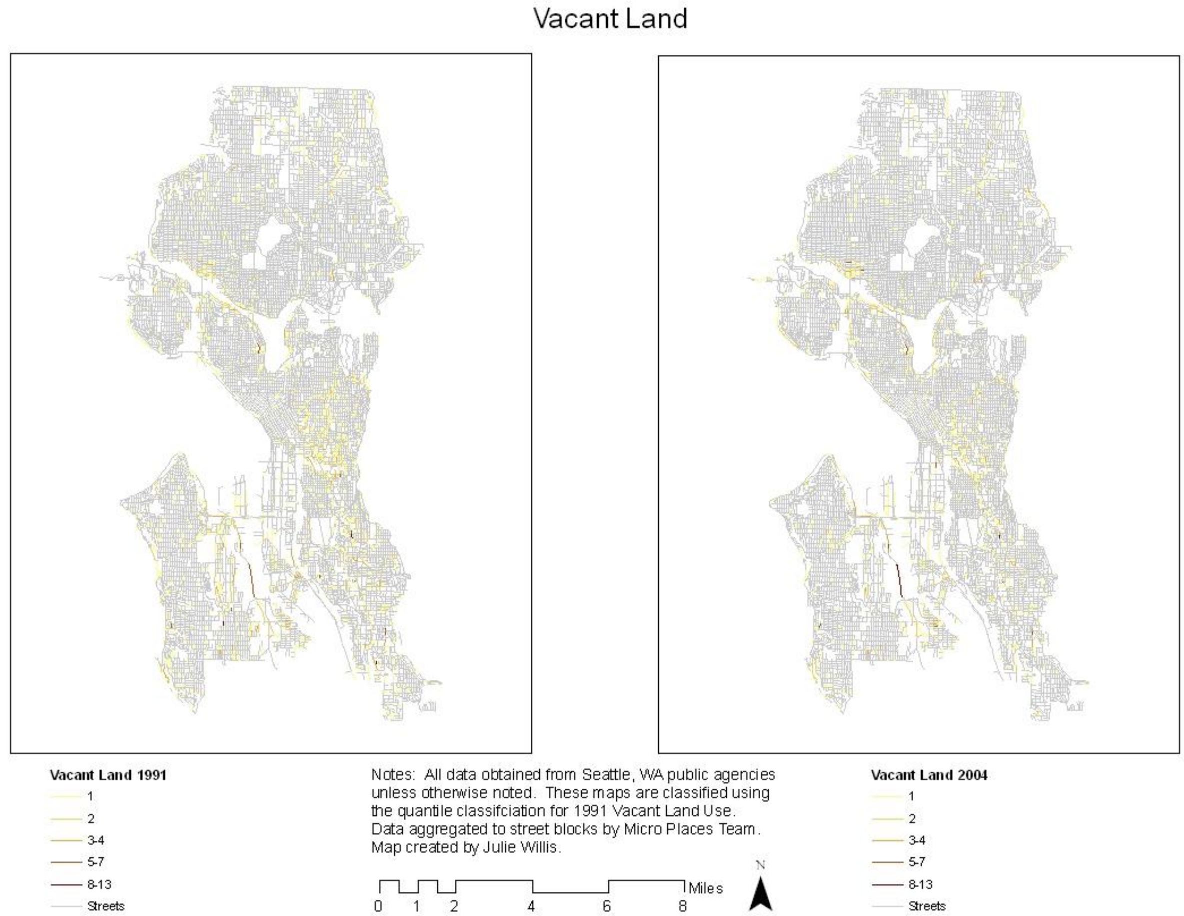
The geographic concentration of places accounting for 50 percent of vacant land parcels show isolated pockets of vacant land (see Figure 4.29).

Figure 4.29: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Vacant Land Parcels



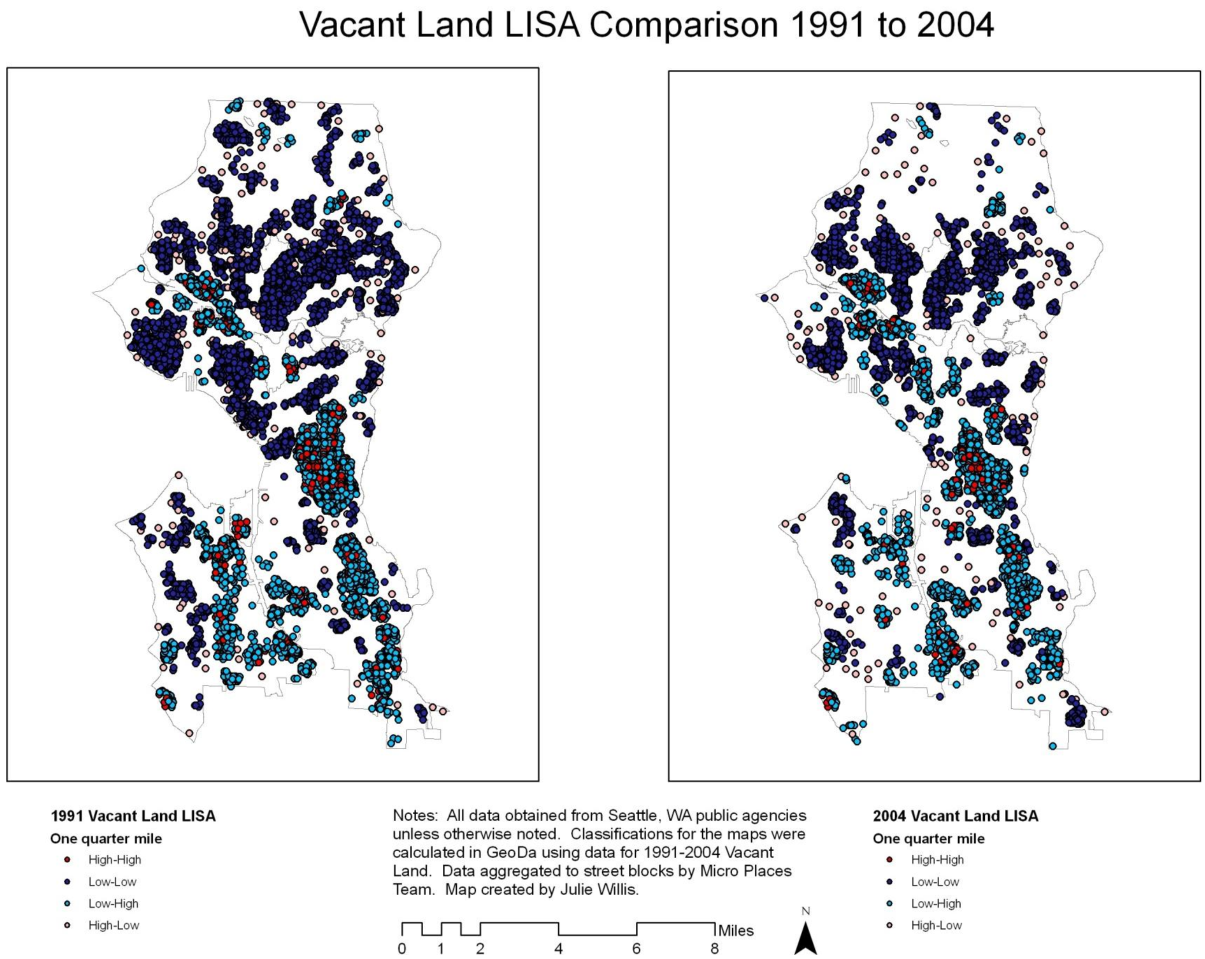
Geographic patterns of overall vacant land use confirm the isolated nature of streets with vacant land use. They also reveal a higher concentration of streets with vacant land in the central (east of downtown) and southeastern parts of Seattle (see Figure 4.30).

Figure 4.30: Distribution of Vacant Land Parcels at Street Segments



There are not any large clusters of vacant land. Rather, there are a few isolated streets with high concentrations of vacant land. In other areas, streets with vacant land uses are usually found in isolated clusters of a few streets. The LISA for vacant land parcels tells the same story (see Figure 4.31).

Figure 4.31: LISA Results for Vacant Land Parcels across Street Segments



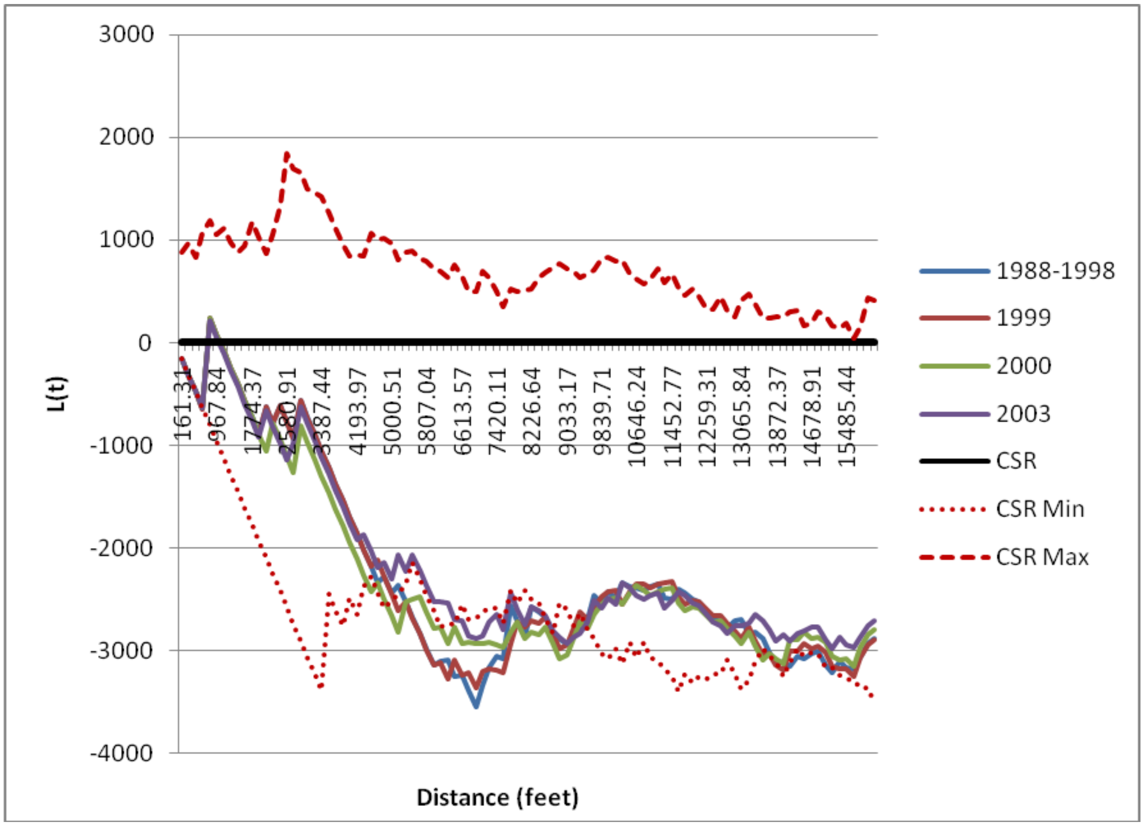
Police and Fire Stations

Together there were a total of 39 streets that had an emergency station on them during the study period from 1989-2004. The number of emergency stations was very stable. For most of the time period there were 37 stations (1989-2002). When one police station moved from one location to another there were 36 active stations in 1999 and then 37 again in 2000. In 2003 a new police station opened in southwest Seattle which brought the number up to 38 stations.

Like the fire stations alone, the joint distribution of police and fire stations is random in all years up to about 4,100 feet (1999, 2000-2002 and 2003-2004) (see Figure 4.32). From 1989-1998, the distribution is random up to just over a mile. Afterwards, both dispersed until about

9,200 feet when they become random again. This result is expected since fire stations dominate the joint distribution.

Figure 4.32: Linear Ripley's *K* for Police and Fire Stations

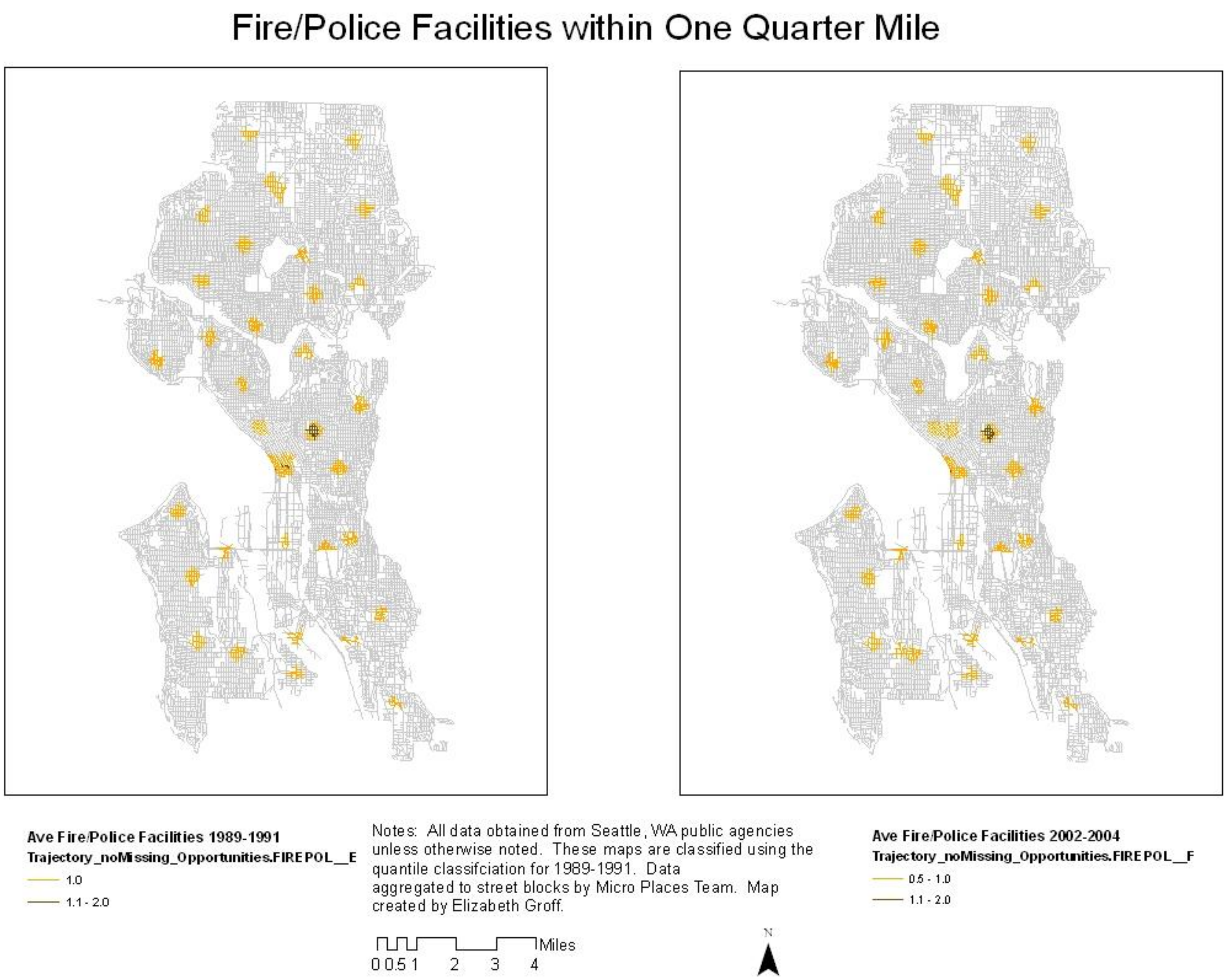


Using the same methodology as as public facilites, we develop a measure reflecting 'average number of fire and police stations within one quarter of a mile' to capture the influence of fire/police stations on nearby places. The distribution of the 'average total number of public facilities within one quarter of a mile of a place' is computed as follows. We examine two time points, the beginning (1989-1991) and the end (2002-2004) of the study period. The total number of fire and police facilities within a quarter mile drive of each street segment is computed for each year. Then we take an average of the first three years to represent the beginning of the study period and an average of the last three years to represent the end.

As expected given the small numbers, the majority of street segments (approximately 93 percent) have no fire/police facilities within one-quarter of a mile over the entire time period. Relatively few, approximately six percent has one facility and less than one percent has two.

Because there can be multiple facilities within the catchment area of 1,320 feet (one-quarter mile), a concentration graphs is inappropriate. However, it is possible to examine the geographic distribution of exposure to public facilities (see Figure 4.33). Fire and police stations are distributed pretty uniformly across Seattle and their influence is very localized.

Figure 4.33: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Street Lighting



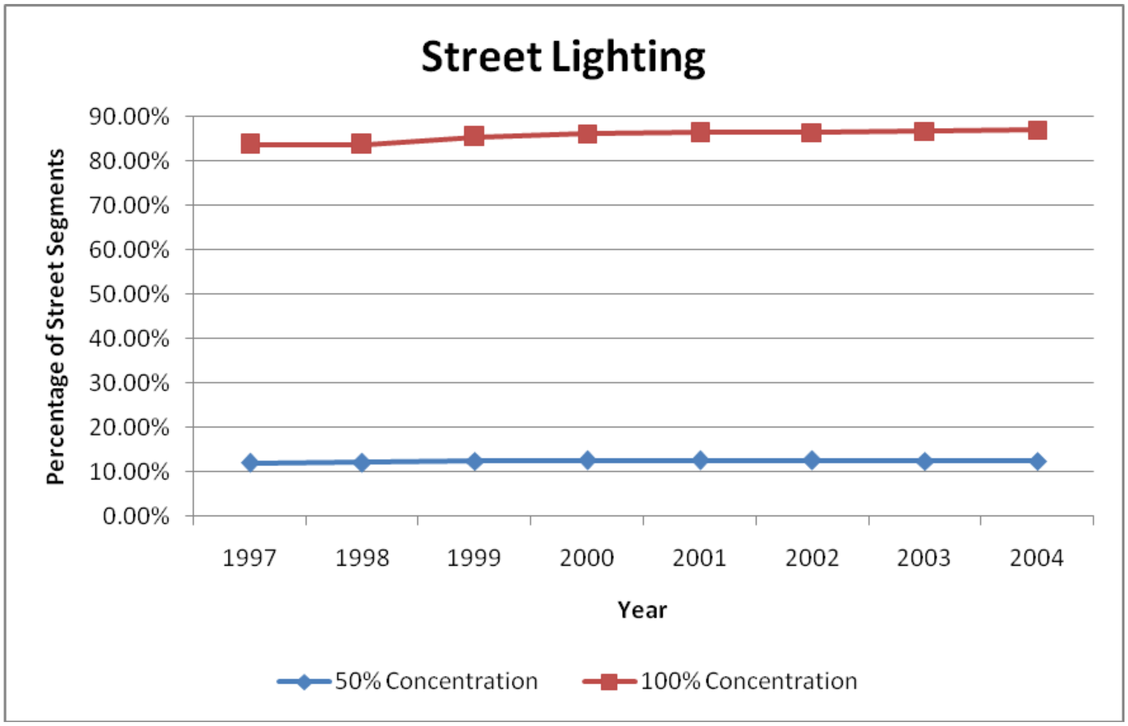
Street Lighting

Street lighting is measured using total number of watts. This information is calculated using a multistep process. First, we locate all the light poles along the streets included in the study. Information from the Seattle Public Utility is then used to identify the number and illumination of each light on a pole. Second, the total amount of light being provided by each pole is summed. Third, all the poles on each street are summarized to arrive at the total light (in watts) on a street segment. This multi-step procedure enables us to examine the amount of street lighting on each street.

As mentioned above, the amount of street lighting has been shown to be related to crime levels. One study found eight of the ten highest crime bus stops lacked adequate street lighting and were within 300 feet of liquor outlets/bars (Loukaitou-Sideris, 1999). Another demonstrated gas drive-offs could be reduced by as much as 65 percent with increased lighting at convenience stores (LaVigne, 1994). British studies find that increased street lighting decreases crime (Painter & Farrington, 1997, 1999). An early review of the literature concluded that targeted increases in street lighting were more effective than general ones and that improved lighting decreases fear of crime (Pease, 1999). A more recent meta-analysis of street lighting and crime found a reduction in crime when lighting is increased (Farrington & Welsh, 2002).

Looking at the city as a whole, between 1997 and 2004, 50 percent of the total street lighting was consistently found on between 11.5 and 13 percent of Seattle street segments (see Figure 4.34). All of the street lighting was located on between 84 and 87 percent of the total street segments. Both trend lines are fairly stable over time. This follows the pattern of extreme concentration at relatively few places but widespread presence across most places. Between 13 and 16 percent of streets have no lighting in any given year.

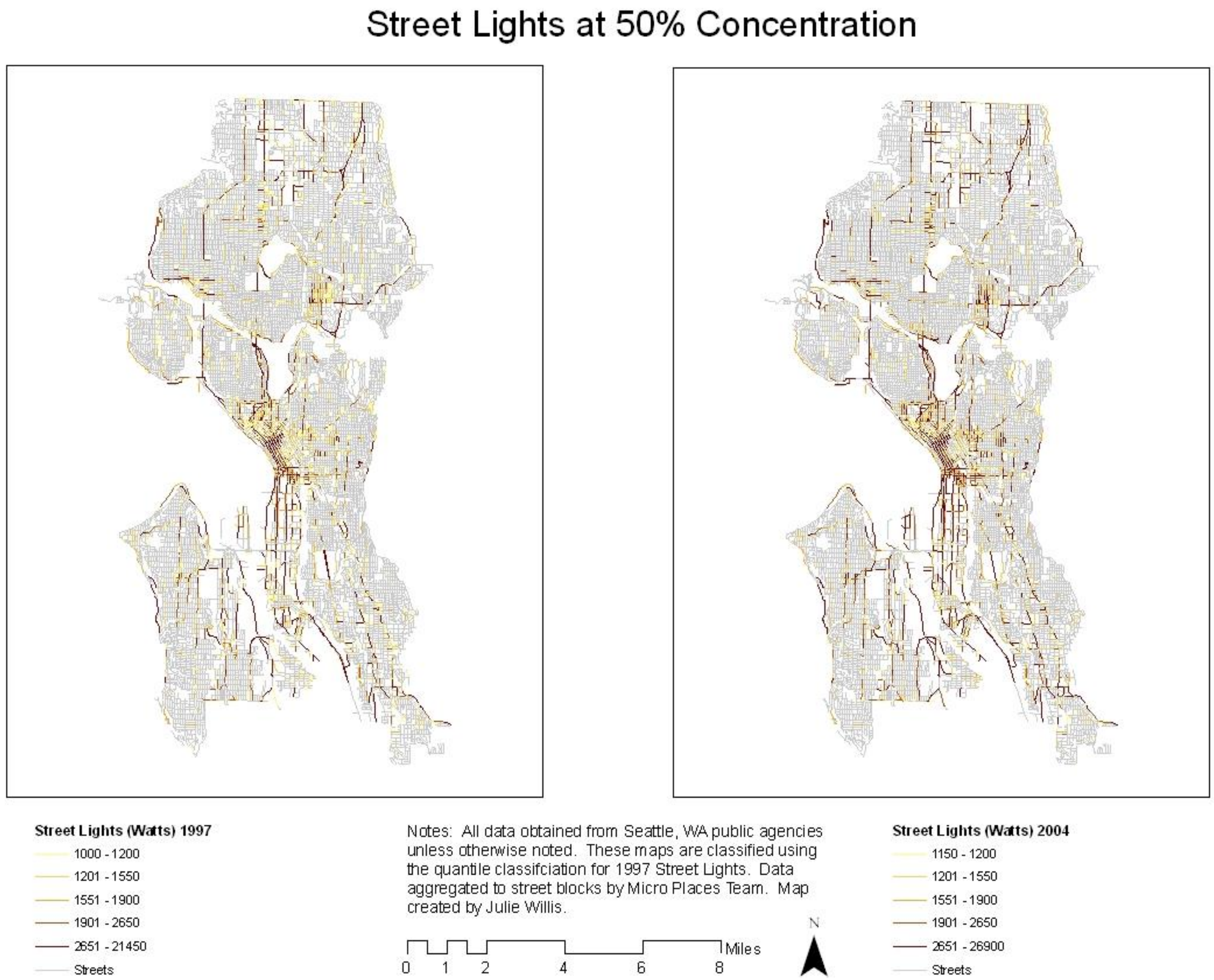
Figure 4.34: Concentration of Street Lighting across Street Segments



Once again the stability across the city as a whole does not reflect the changes that are taking place at the micro level. According to the repeated measures analysis, the within subject effect is significant (F = 1835.187, df = 2.120). Street lighting does vary over time.

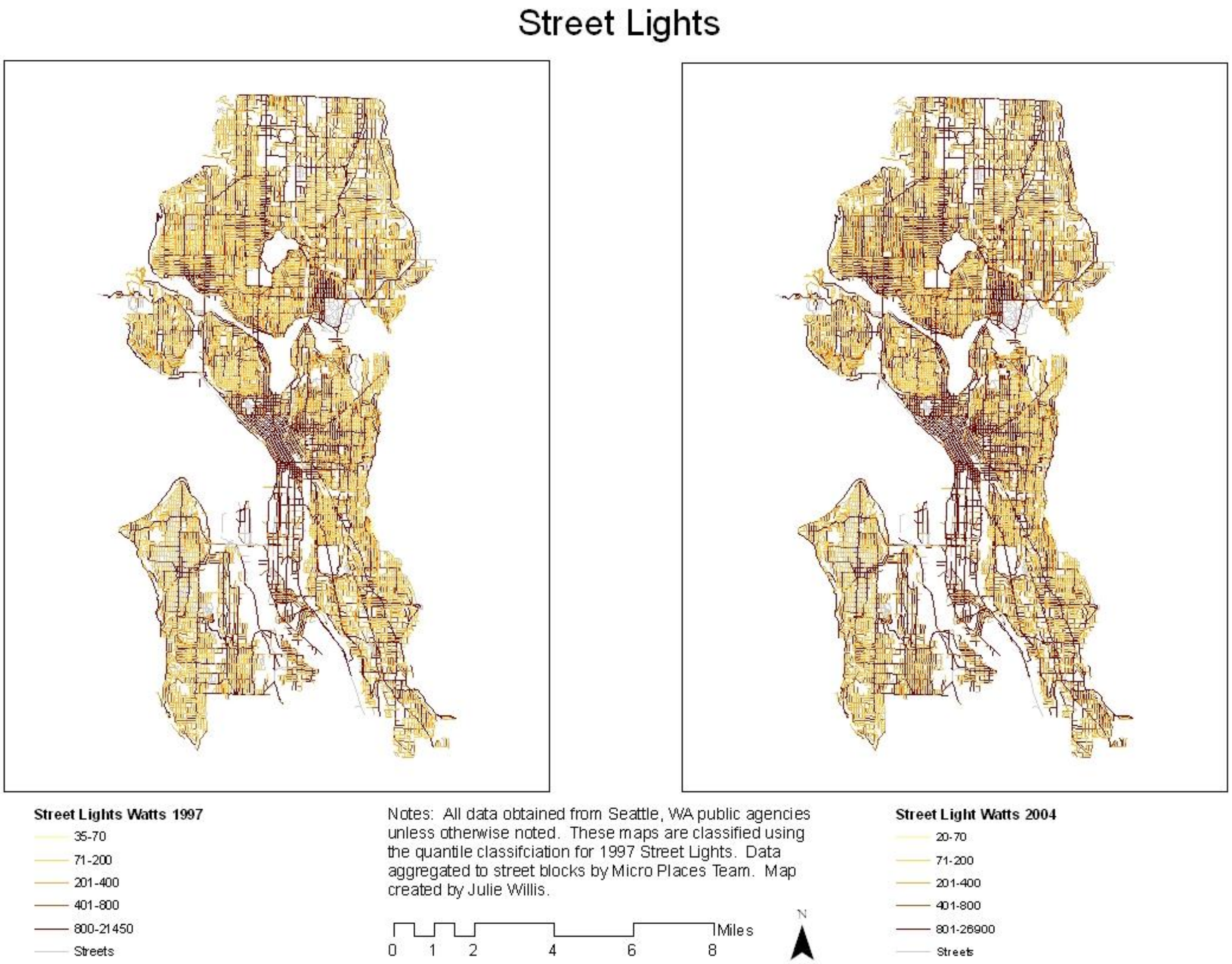
Geographically, the concentration of streets accounting for 50 percent of street lighting follows the major arterials and illustrates the difference between downtown (which is extremely well-lit) and the rest of the city (see Figure 4.35).

Figure 4.35: Distribution of Street Segments that Account for 50 Percent of Street Lighting



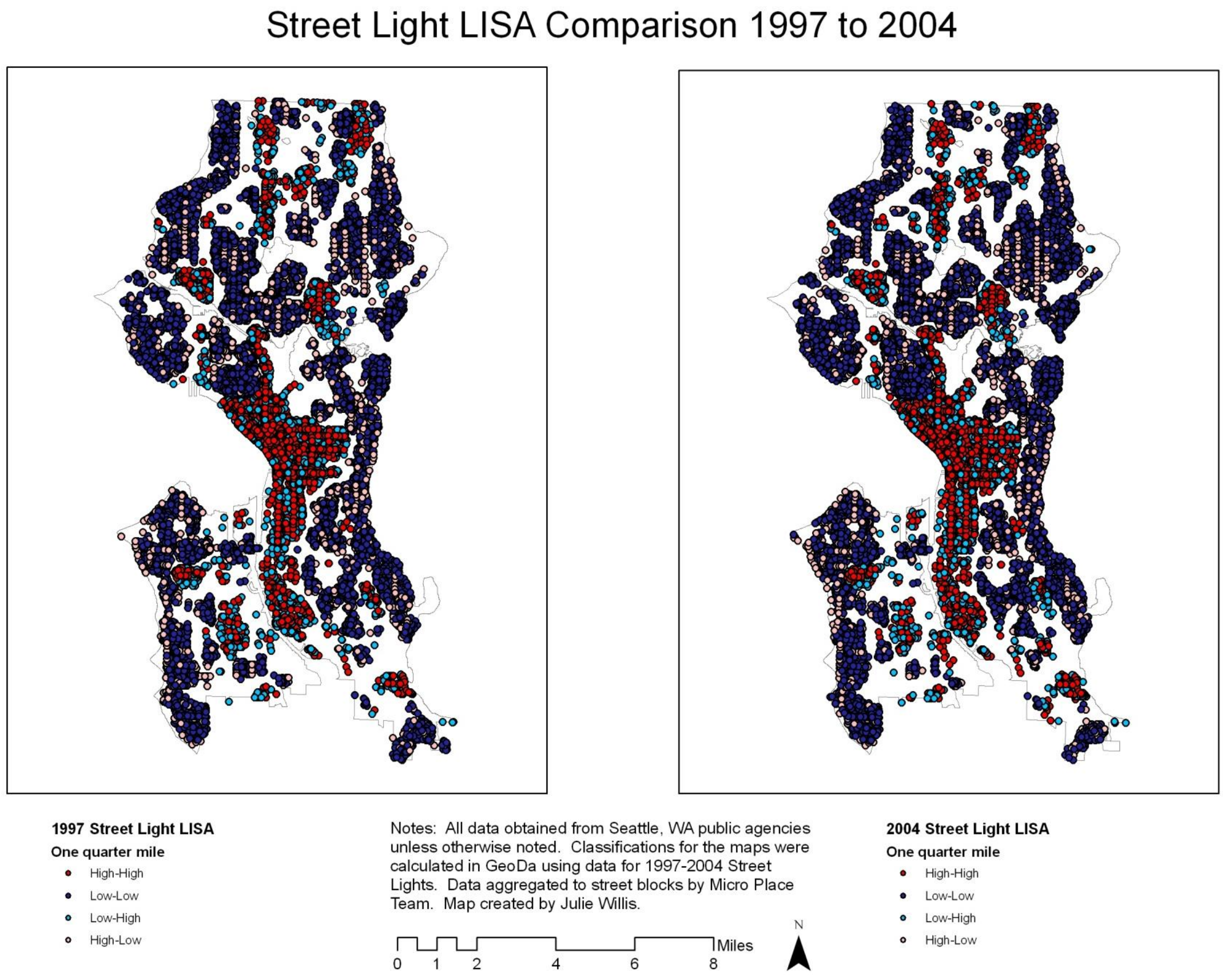
The overall pattern for street lighting also follows the major arterials and is highest in the downtown area (see Figure 4.36).

Figure 4.36: Distribution of Street Lighting



At the local level, streets with high levels of street lighting are interspersed with streets that have lower levels of street lighting (see Figure 4.37). Once again, and not surprisingly, the pattern appears to be linear.

Figure 4.37: LISA Results for Street Lighting



Summary: Regarding Guardianship

One of the characteristics collected to represent guardianship, street lighting, is found in at least small quantities at over 70 percent of places in most years. The other two characteristics, vacant land and police and fire stations, are found on relatively few street segments. Vacant land raises the probability a crime will occur, but only less than 8 percent of all street segments have vacant land. Police and fire stations decrease the probability of a crime but are found on only a few, isolated street segments so their impact is likely to be extremely limited.

Discussion of Opportunity Variables

This chapter focused on the opportunity-related concepts of motivated offenders, suitable targets, accessibility/urban form and guardianship. We explored the spatio-temporal distribution of variables representing each of those theoretical concepts across places. This section summarizes the results of that exploration.

The overwhelming finding is one of concentration at specific places. Motivated offenders (operationalized as high risk juveniles) are concentrated on individual segments and in specific areas of the city. With the exception of residential population, which tends to be widespread, suitable target variables are also very concentrated, most often on major roads. The characteristic of accessibility is also concentrated in a particular set of places involving major roads. Finally, guardianship is a mixed bag. Street segments with vacant land and emergency stations are dispersed and isolated representing distributed concentration. In contrast, street lighting is found in at least small quantities at over 70 percent of places.

Another finding is one of temporal stability. The relative distribution of opportunity-related characteristics across places is stable. Although there is significant change from year to year on specific street segments, the overall pattern of relationships among those street segments changes little over the study period. Another way of saying this is that change tends to be local rather than global.

Finally, there is a significant amount of negative spatial autocorrelation evident for all variables. In other words, the amount of a variable on one street segment is significantly different from the amount on street segments within a quarter mile (in Seattle that is about three street segments). This result reveals a great deal of street segment to street segment variation in a characteristic that is occurring at the sub-neighborhood level of analysis. There are also large areas of the city where street segments have similar amounts of a characteristic. However, even these relatively homogenous areas have street segments on the opposite end of the spectrum interspersed (e.g., high amounts in areas where most street segments have low amounts of the characteristic or vice versa).

In sum, the opportunity characteristics of street segments exhibit spatial and temporal characteristics that are very similar to the spatial and temporal characteristics of crime. This finding lends greater credence to their inclusion in the risk analysis and multivariate analyses that are discussed in the following chapters.

Chapter 5: The Distribution of Crime at Street Segments

In the previous chapters we focused on the distribution of variables that have been identified by criminologists as important in understanding the development of crime across space and time. Though prior studies have generally not been able to examine these characteristics at the very micro level that is the focus of our research, we have seen that even at the street block level there is important variability in these characteristics. Many are concentrated at a relatively small number of street segments that are in some sense "hot spots" for such characteristics. Often, there is strong street to street variability in the prevalence or frequency of such factors. And we have also documented important variability across time.

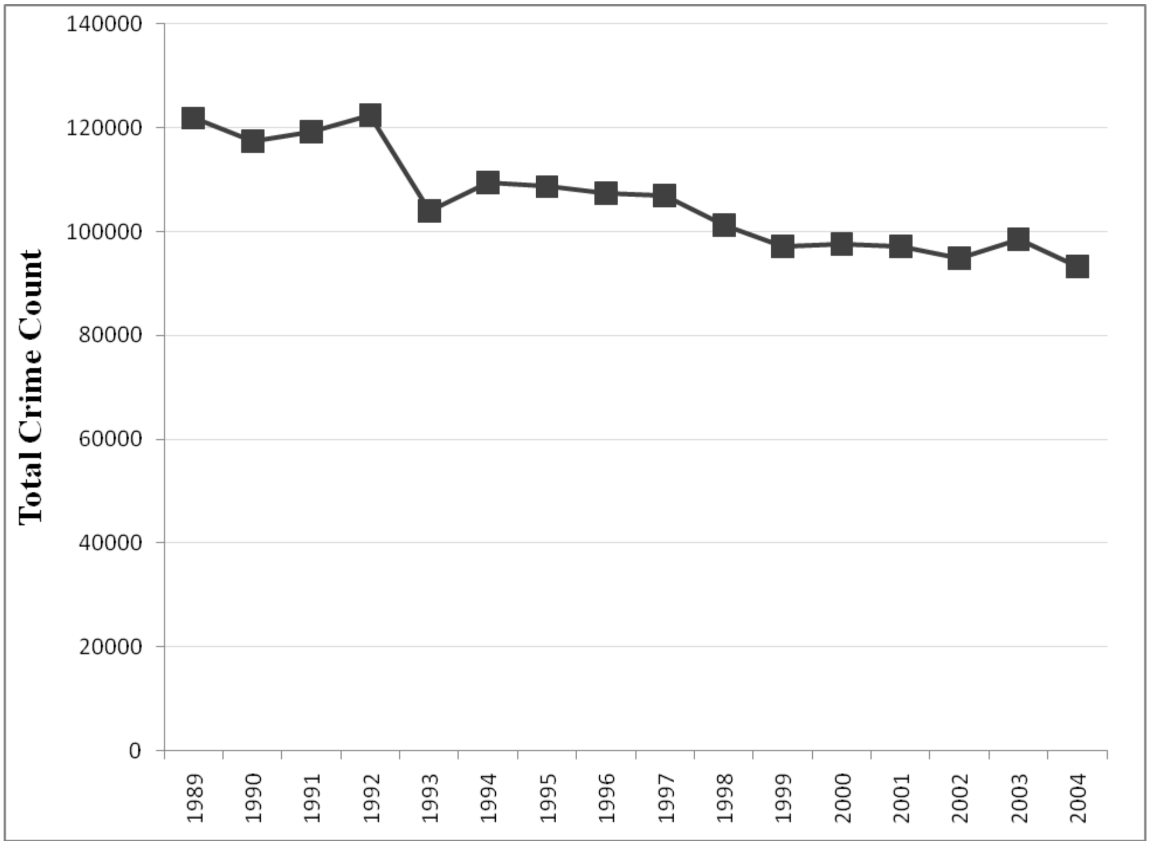
The question we ask in this chapter is whether there is also concentration of crime in hot spots, and whether there is stability or variability in crime at street segments across time. As we noted in our introductory chapter, there is strong evidence from prior studies that crime is concentrated at small units of geography. Our initial question in this chapter is whether we identify such concentrations when we examine crime using the street block unit of analysis we describe in Chapter 2. We then examine whether the concentration of crime at place is consistent year to year in an urban setting.

A related question that has generally not been examined in earlier studies (for exceptions see Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press), primarily because of the restricted periods that have been examined, is whether specific places evidence consistent or variable trends over time. For example, many studies have noted that crime is concentrated at a small number of places and that this provides important opportunities for focusing crime prevention resources more efficiently (Sherman et al. 1989; Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press). But are such crime concentrations stable at particular places, or are there developmental trends of crime at street segments, as there are among individuals (Farrington, 2003; LeBlanc & Loeber, 1998; Moffitt, 1993; Wolfgang et al., 1972; Weisburd et al., 2004)? To examine this question, we use an approach that has become common in the examination of patterns of human development. It is now well established that different types of people evidence different trajectories or development trends across the life course (Elder, 1998; Laub et al., 1998; Loeber & Hay, 1997; Nagin & Land, 1993; Nagin et al., 1995). Some are chronic offenders, while some have intermittent experiences with criminality. Importantly, even many chronic offenders appear to "age out of crime." Is this also true of the developmental patterns of crime at places over time? Do chronic crime places naturally experience reduced levels of offending across time? Or is there greater stability in the developmental patterns of places?

Is Crime Concentrated at Street Segments?

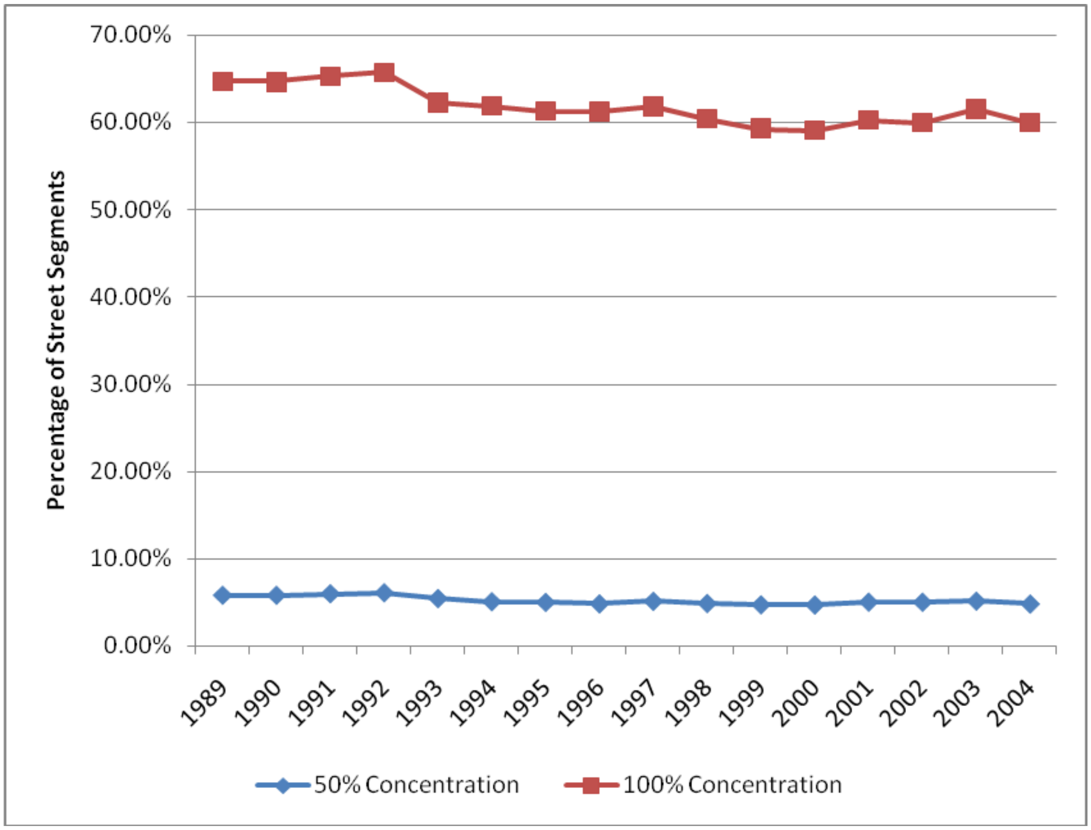
Our first question is simply whether our data confirm prior studies that suggest that crime is very strongly concentrated at crime hot spots. Certainly, our data suggest that there are many places that are free of crime. About 2,218 street segments out of 24,023 we examined over a 16 year period had no incident reports at all. The mean number of incidents per segment per year that had any crime was approximately 4.42 (sd = 14.14). It is also important to note that crime trends in Seattle overall followed the national pattern (see Blumstein & Wallman, 2000), experiencing a decline in incident reports at least since 1992 (see Figure 5.1). Between 1989 and 2004, Seattle street segments saw a 23.4 percent decline (from 121,869 in 1989 to 93,324 in 2004) in the number of incidents recorded. We return to this finding in more detail at the end of the chapter, when we examine developmental trends of street segments.

Figure 5.1: Seattle Street Segment Crime Trends



Examined year by year our data confirm findings from prior studies that indicate a strong concentration of crime in "hot spots" (see Figure 5.2). Moreover, they suggest that the general concentration of crime in hot spots follows a consistent pattern over time. Sherman et al. (1989) report that over the course of a year 50.4 percent of all calls for service in Minneapolis occurred at 3.3 percent of all addresses and intersections and that 100 percent of such calls occurred at 60 percent of all addresses. Very similar findings for all reported incidents are found for each of the 16 years observed in Seattle (see Figure 2). Between 4.7 and 6.1 percent of the street segments account for about 50 percent of incidents in our data in each of the years examined.[1] All incidents are found on between 59.1 and 65.7 percent of the street segments.

Figure 5.2: Crime Incident Concentration

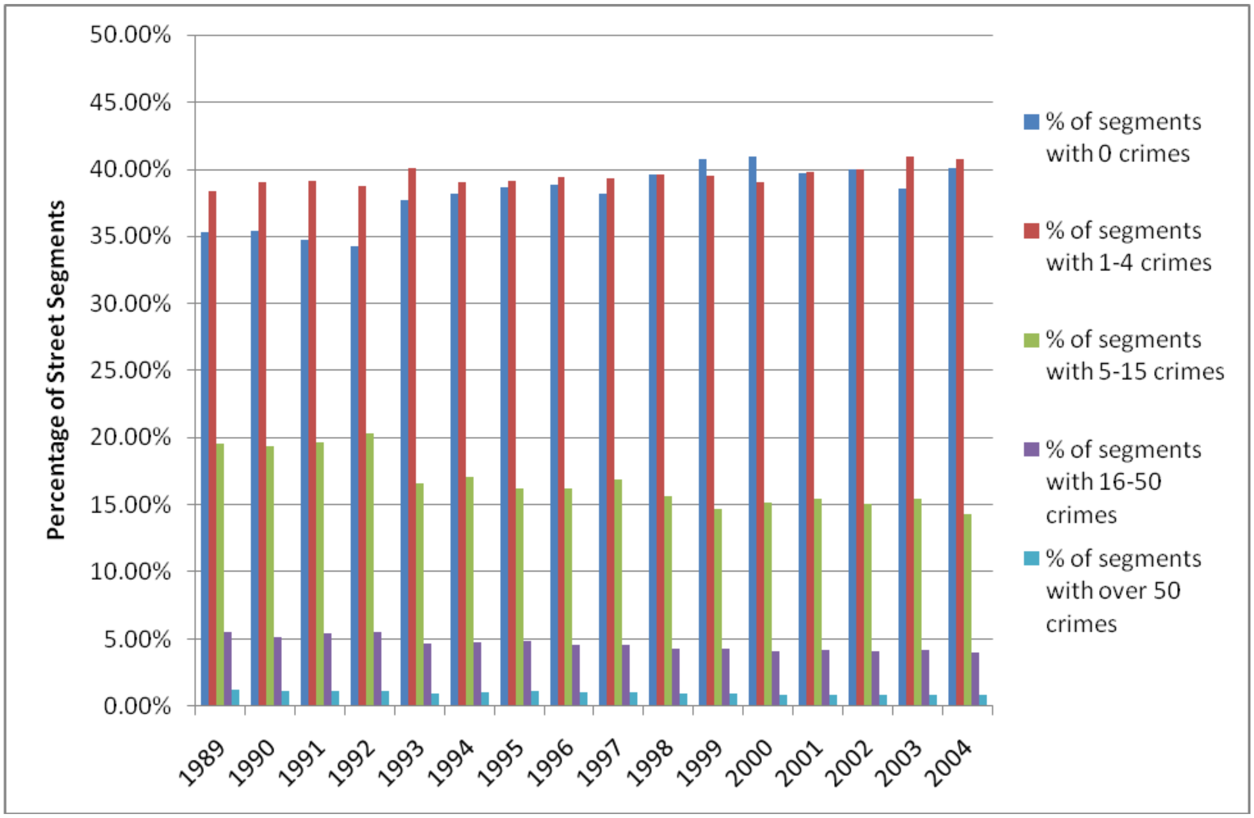


A review of the crime counts at places also suggests a significant degree of stability of crime concentrations over time. In Figure 5.3 we report the percentage of street segments in each year with a specific number of incident reports. Though there is variability, the overall distribution is fairly similar from year to year. For example, the percentage with no recorded crime varies between 34.3 percent and 40.9 percent. Similarly, the proportion of street segments with one to four incidents varies only slightly, between 38.4 percent and 41.0 percent. The

[1] Our results here differ slightly from those reported in Weisburd et al. (2004) where 4 to 5 percent of street segments included 50 percent of crime incidents for fourteen years (1989-2002). These differences develop primarily from our direct definition of street segments as contrasted with 'hundred blocks' (see Chapter 2), and subsequent deletion of hundred blocks that were not valid street segments.

proportion with more than 50 recorded crime events in a year is approximately one percent across all 16 years.

Figure 5.3: Crime Concentration Stability Over Time



Accordingly, the answer to our first question is that when looking at the distribution of crime incidents year to year in Seattle, crime is strongly concentrated at street segments. That concentration is consistent across the 16 years we examine whether we look simply at the proportion of street segments that account for 50 percent of the crime or whether we look at the average counts per year. Each year in Seattle there is a similar concentration of crime incidents at places. This finding is important suggesting a kind of "law of crime concentrations," which appears to hold true at least for the period of time that we examine. It is important to note in this regard as well that such similar levels of crime concentration across the city occur during a period of a substantial crime decline. While the overall number of crimes declines, the relative concentration at crime hot spots remains similar.

Developmental Patterns of Crime at Place

Though the proportions of street segments with specific thresholds of crime activity remain fairly consistent year to year, it may be that the specific segments within each of these thresholds change. Accordingly, it is important to identify not only the general patterns over time but also how each of the 24,023 street segments' crime frequencies changed. This descriptive exercise on the aggregate data leads to two key questions. First, is the stability evidenced in our simple descriptive analysis of the proportion of places with a specific threshold of crime in a specific year replicated if we examine the developmental patterns of offending of places over time? Second, are there different patterns of crime over time for different groups of street segments?

Trajectory Analysis

We are unaware of any available technique in use in the criminology of place that would allow us to answer these questions, but such a technique—group-based trajectory analysis—has been used in developmental social science more broadly (Nagin, 1999, 2005; Nagin & Land, 1993). This technique and related complementary growth curve techniques, such as hierarchical linear modeling (Bryk & Raudenbush, 1987, 1992; Goldstein, 1995) and latent curve analysis (McArdle & Epstein, 1987; Meredith & Tisak, 1990; Muthén, 1989; Willett & Sayer, 1994) are designed to allow developmental researchers in the social sciences to measure and explain differences across population members as they follow their developmental path.[2] The need for such techniques arose in the 1980s as psychologists, sociologists and criminologists all began to

[2] For an overview of these methods, see Raudenbush (2001), Muthén (2001), or Nagin (1999, 2005).

turn to the study of developmental processes rather than to static events or states (see Bushway et al., 2001; Hagan & Palloni, 1988; Laub et al., 1998; Loeber & LeBlanc, 1990; Moffitt, 1993).

The group-based trajectory model, first described by Nagin and Land (1993) and further elaborated by Nagin (1999, 2005), is specifically designed to identify clusters of individuals with similar developmental trajectories, and it has been utilized extensively to study patterns of change in offending and aggression as people age (see Nagin, 1999; Nagin & Tremblay, 1999). As such, we believe it is particularly well suited to our goal of exploring the patterns of change in the Seattle data.

Formally, the model specifies that the population is approximated by a finite number of groups of individuals who follow distinctive developmental trajectories. Each such group is allowed to have its own offending trajectory (a map of offending rates throughout the time period) described by a distinct set of parameters that are permitted to vary freely across groups. This type of model has three key outputs: the parameters describing the trajectory for each group, the estimated proportion of the population belonging to each group, and the posterior probability of belonging to a given group for each individual in the sample. The posterior probability, which is the probability of group membership after the model is estimated, can be used to assign individuals to a group based on their highest probability.[3]

This approach is less efficient than linear growth models but allows the estimation of qualitatively different patterns of behavior over time. There is broad agreement that delinquency and crime are cases where this group-based trajectory approach might be justified, in large part

[3] The group-based trajectory is often identified with typological theories of offending such as Moffitt (1993) because of its use of groups (see Nagin et al., 1995). But it is important to keep in mind that group assignments are made with error. In all likelihood, the groups only approximate a continuous distribution. The lack of homogeneity in the groups is the explicit trade off for the relaxation of the parametric assumptions about the random effects in the linear models (Bushway et al., 2003). For a different perspective on this issue, see Eggleston et al. (2004). Furthermore, Bushway et al. (2009) found that both group-based trajectory analysis and growth curve modeling identify very similar average developmental patterns of criminality.

because not everyone participates in crime, and people appear to start and stop at very different ages (Muthén, 2001; Nagin, 1999, 2005; Raudenbush, 2001). Given that we have no strong expectation about the basic pattern of change, the group-based trajectory approach appears to be a good choice for identifying major patterns of change in our data set.[4]

There are two software packages available that can estimate group-based trajectories: Mplus, a proprietary software package, and Proc Traj, a special procedure for use in SAS, made available at no cost by the National Consortium on Violence Research (for a detailed discussion of Proc Traj, see Jones et al., 2001).[5] In using Proc Traj, we had three choices when estimating trajectories of count data: parametric form (Poisson vs. normal vs. logit), functional form of the trajectory over time (linear vs. quadratic vs. cubic), and number of groups.

The Poisson distribution is a standard distribution used to estimate the frequency distribution of offending that we would expect given a certain unobserved offending rate (Lehoczky, 1986; Maltz, 1996; Osgood, 2000).[6] We found that the quadratic was uniformly a better fit than the linear model, and that the cubic model did not improve the fit over the quadratic in the case of a small number of groups. In choosing the number of groups we relied upon the Bayesian Information Criteria (BIC) because conventional likelihood ratio tests are not appropriate for defining whether the addition of a group improves the explanatory power of the model (D'Unger et al., 1998). BIC = $\log(L) - 0.5*\log(n)*(k)$; where "L" is the value of the

---

[4] Those interested in a more detailed description of the group-based trajectory approach should see Nagin (1999) or Nagin (2005).
[5] The procedure, with documentation, is available at www.ncovr.heinz.cmu.edu.
[6] Proc Traj also provides the option of estimating a zero inflated Poisson (ZIP) model. The ZIP model builds on a Poisson by accommodating more non-offenders in any given period than predicted by the standard Poisson distribution. The zero-inflation parameter can be allowed to vary over time, but cannot be estimated separately for each group. It is sometimes called an intermittency parameter, since it allows places to have "temporary" spells of no offenses without recording a change in their overall rate of offending. In this context, the ZIP model's differentiation between short-term and long-term change is problematic. The Poisson model, on the other hand, tracks movement in the rate of offending in one parameter, allowing all relatively long-term changes to be reflected in one place. We believe this trait of the Poisson model makes it the better model for modeling trends, especially over relatively short panels, even though the ZIP model provides a better fit according to the BIC criteria used for model selection. For a similar argument see Bushway et al. (2003).

model's maximized likelihood estimates, "n" is the sample size, and "k" is the number of parameters estimated in a given model. Because more sophisticated models almost always improve the fit of a given analysis, the BIC encourages a parsimonious solution by penalizing models that increase the number of trajectories unless they substantially improve fit. In addition to the BIC, trajectory analysis requires that researchers also consider theoretical guidance, posterior probabilities of trajectory assignments, odds of correct classification, estimated group probabilities, and whether meaningful groups are revealed (for a more detailed discussion, see Nagin, 2005).

These models are highly complex, and researchers run the risk of arriving at a local maximum, or peak in the likelihood function, which represents a sub-optimal solution. The stability of the answer when providing multiple sets of starting values should be considered in any model choice (McLachlan & Peel, 2000). In the final analysis, the utility of the groups is determined by their ability to identify distinct trajectories, the number of units in each group, and their relative homogeneity (Nagin, 2005).

We began our modeling exercise by fitting the data to three trajectories. We then fit the data to four trajectories and compared this fit with the three-group solution. When the four-group model proved better than the three-group, we then estimated the five-group model and compared it to the four-group solution. We continued adding groups, each time finding an improved BIC, until we arrived at 24 groups. Models for 23 and 24 groups were not stable and could not be replicated consistently. After reviewing the Bayesian Information Criteria and the patterns observed in each solution, it was determined that a 22 group model was the most optimal model for the crime data. We therefore chose the 22 group model.

The validity of the model was also confirmed by conducting the posterior probability analysis. The majority of the within-group posterior probabilities in the model are above .90, and the lowest posterior probability is .77. We can judge the model fitness by computing the odds of correction classification (OCC). OCC represents the accuracy of trajectory group assignment above and beyond assignment based on chance. The lowest value of the OCC is 32.78 in this study (see Table 5.1). Nagin (2005) suggests that when the average posterior probability is higher than .7 and OCC values are higher than 5, the group assignment represents a high level of accuracy. Judging by these standards, the 22 group model performs satisfactorily in classifying the various crime patterns into separate trajectories.

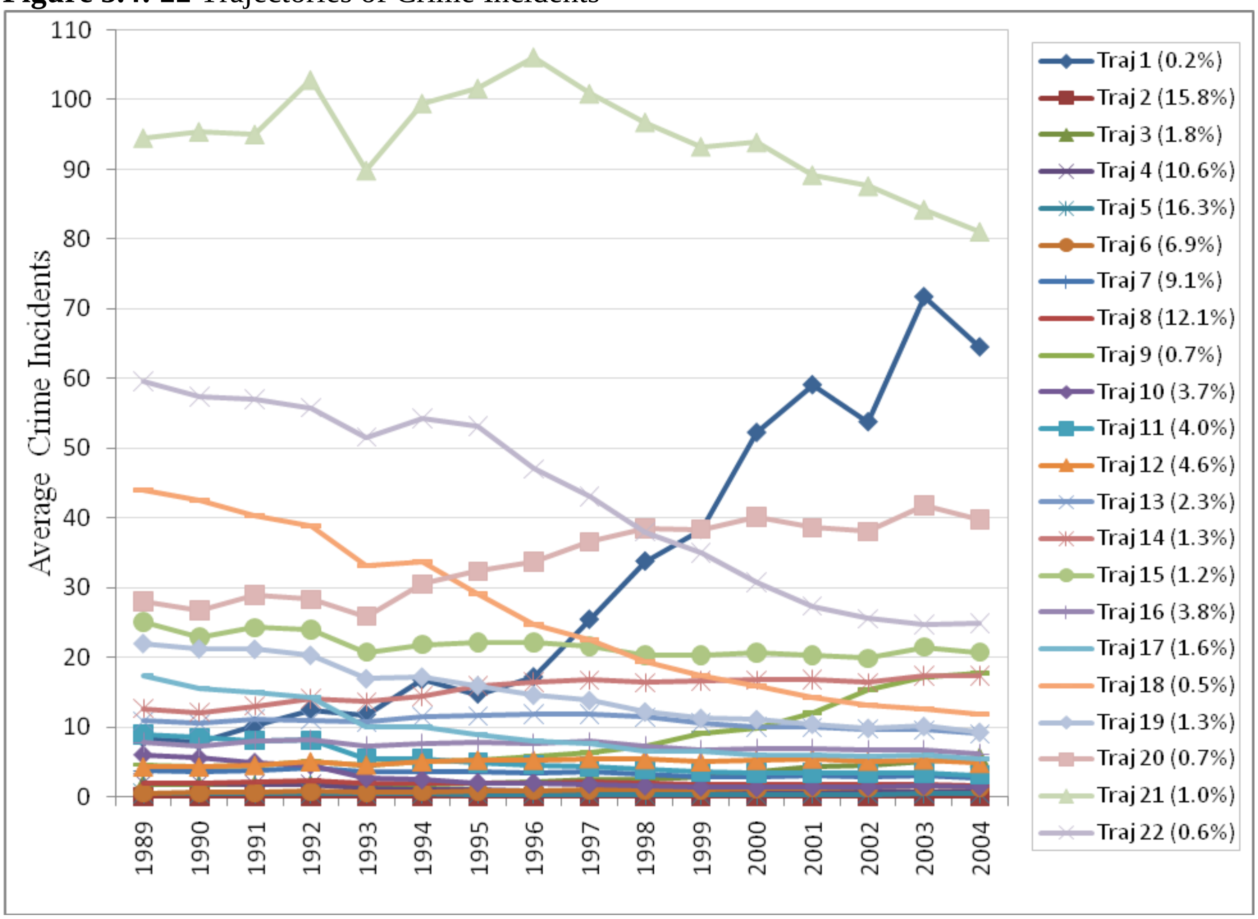
Table 5.1: Odds of Correct Classification by Trajectory

Traj. Group	# of Streets	% of Total Streets	Avg. Posterior Prob.	Odds Correct Classification
1	51	0.002123	0.992	59999.31
2	3804	0.158348	0.922	62.79196
3	423	0.017608	0.826	265.4698
4	2543	0.105857	0.795	32.77974
5	3903	0.162469	0.879	37.49562
6	1648	0.068601	0.774	46.39033
7	2182	0.09083	0.832	49.7248
8	2916	0.121384	0.823	33.62485
9	164	0.006827	0.952	2865.251
10	877	0.036507	0.836	134.422
11	953	0.03967	0.862	150.7897
12	1103	0.045914	0.847	114.6833
13	567	0.023602	0.920	475.2931
14	316	0.013154	0.934	1055.523
15	292	0.012155	0.961	1996.018
16	920	0.038297	0.879	182.9348
17	372	0.015485	0.920	726.5626
18	125	0.005203	0.979	8772.12
19	307	0.012779	0.950	1460.133
20	170	0.007077	0.979	6540.415
21	247	0.010282	0.988	8071.106
22	140	0.005828	0.975	6790.917

Trajectory Patterns

Figure 5.4 illustrates the final 22 group trajectories we obtained with the percentage of segments that fall within each trajectory. The figure presents the actual average number of incident reports found in each group over the 16 year time period. The main purpose of trajectory analysis is to identify the underlying heterogeneity within the population. What is most striking, however, is the tremendous stability of crime at places suggested by our analysis. Looking at the trajectories, it is clear that although many have different initial intercepts in terms of the level of criminal activity observed, the vast majority of street segments in our study evidence relatively stable slopes of change over time.

Figure 5.4: 22 Trajectories of Crime Incidents

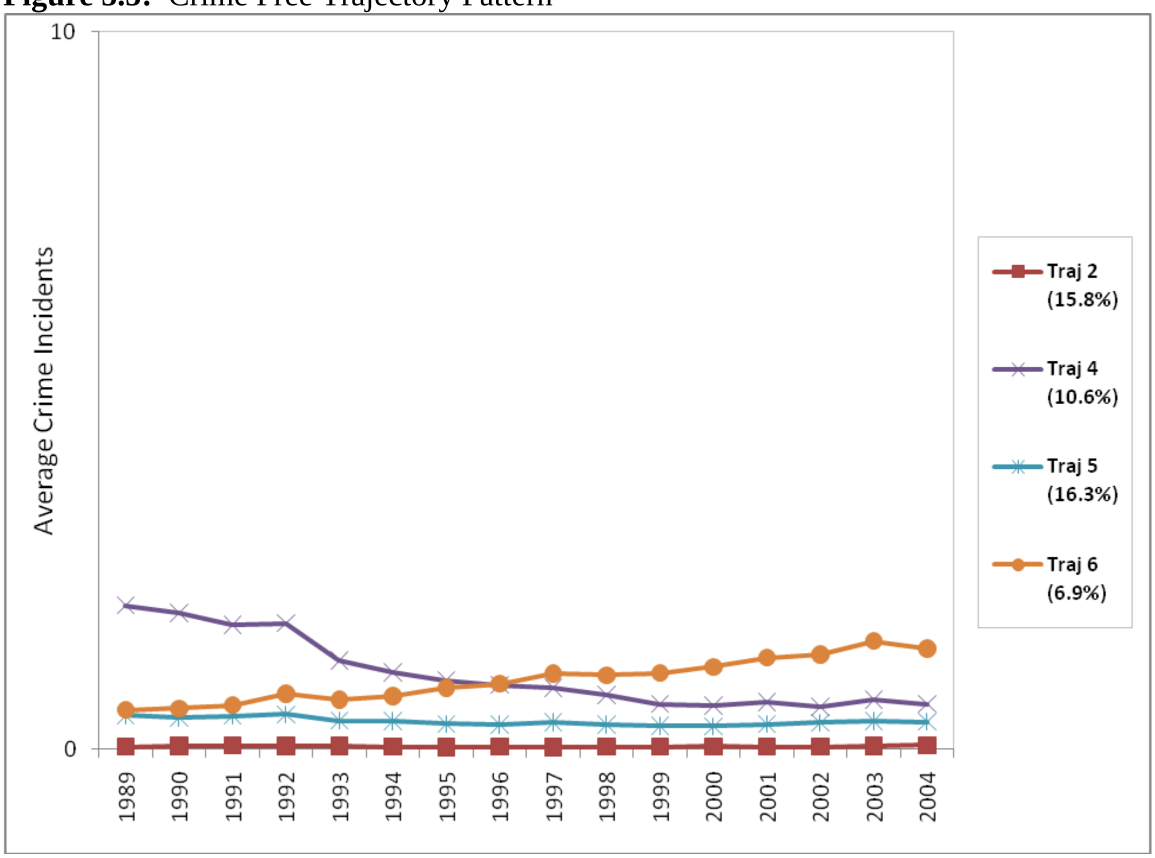


This finding can be interpreted more easily if we classify our trajectories into collections of groups that represent patterns in change over time. To simplify our description and to focus our discussion more directly on the question of stability of crime at place across time, we divided the trajectories from Figure 5.4 into eight patterns representing the main levels of crime and trends we observe.

Crime Free Trajectories

The first group represents simply the street segments in our study that can be seen as relatively **"crime free"** during this period (see Figure 5.5). Almost half of all of the street segments we studied can be classified in this pattern, though our analyses identified four distinct trajectories. While there are differences between these groups, they represent more generally the fact that about half of the street segments in Seattle have little or no crime.

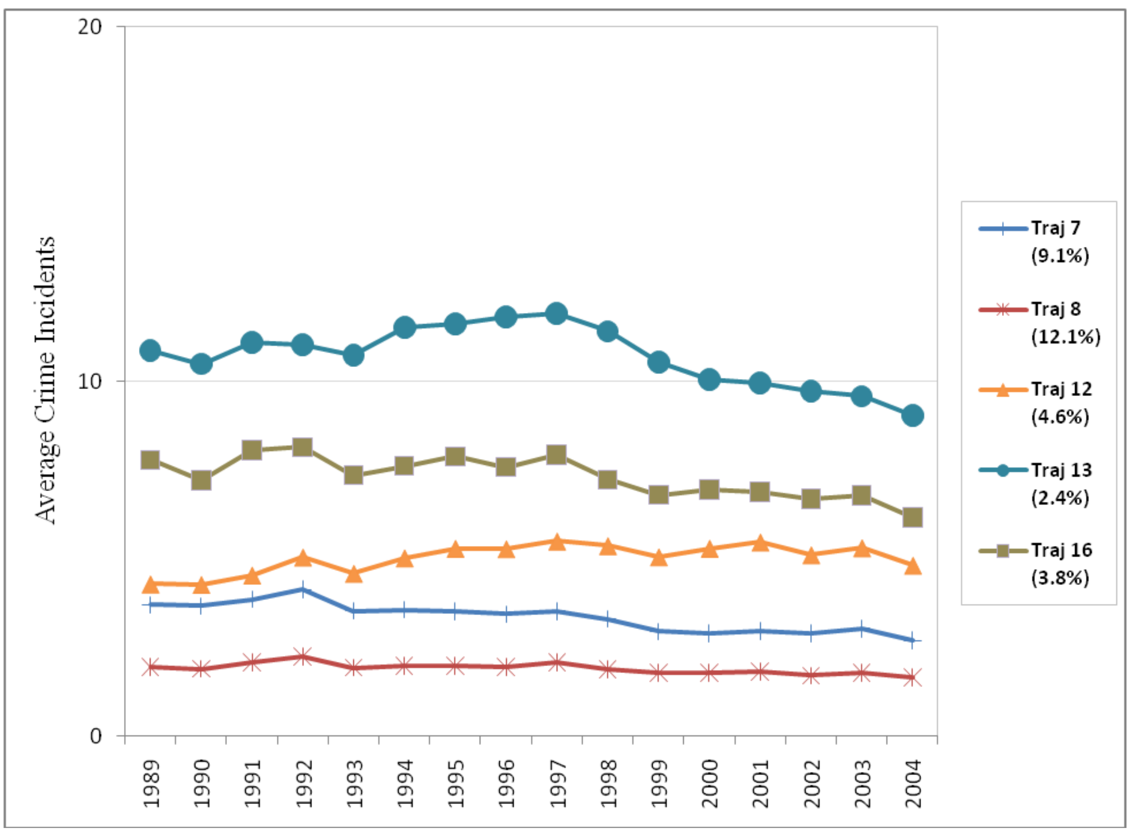
Figure 5.5: Crime Free Trajectory Pattern



Low Stable Trajectory Pattern

Approximately 30 percent of the street segments are associated with what we have called the "**low stable**" trajectory pattern (see Figure 5.6). As with the relatively crime free segments, these places evidence stable crime trends. While they cannot be defined as crime free, they certainly should not be categorized as crime hot spots. Street segments in three of the trajectory groupings have on average fewer than five crime events per year. About one-fifth of the street segments in this pattern have more crime (i.e., they average between five and 11 events per year). Certainly, this pattern represents meaningful but still low levels of crime. But whatever the level of crime for this group, it is clearly the case that these analyses reinforce the simple descriptive finding that most places in the city have little or no crime.

Figure 5.6: Low Stable Trajectory Pattern



Moderate Stable and Chronic Trajectory Patterns

Two other trajectory patterns represent places with much more serious crime problems, though they also evidence strong stability in trends over time. What we term the "**moderate stable**" trajectory pattern includes about 1.2 percent of the street segments (see Figure 5.7). These street segments average around 20 crime incidents throughout the study period. What we term the "**chronic**" group can be defined as the most serious crime hot spots in the city (see Figure 5.8). The average number of crimes per segment is consistently more than 80 crime incidents per year. Though only one percent of the street segments are found in this group, it is important to note that this means that there are 247 street segments in the city with this very high level of crime activity throughout the study period. These 247 street segments account for fully 21.96 percent of the crime incidents in Seattle between 1989 and 2004. While there is evidence of a crime decline in the chronic street segments, the decline is modest (about 14%). Moreover, despite a modest decline over time, these street segments remain by far the highest rate hot spots throughout the study of period.

Of course, an especially important substantive and policy concern here is whether such crime hot spots are concentrated in specific places in the city comprising bad areas or bad neighborhoods. We examine this concern directly in the next chapter, though we think it important to note here that we will illustrate surprising diffusion of crime trajectories of similar types throughout the city.

Figure 5.7: Moderate Stable Trajectory Group

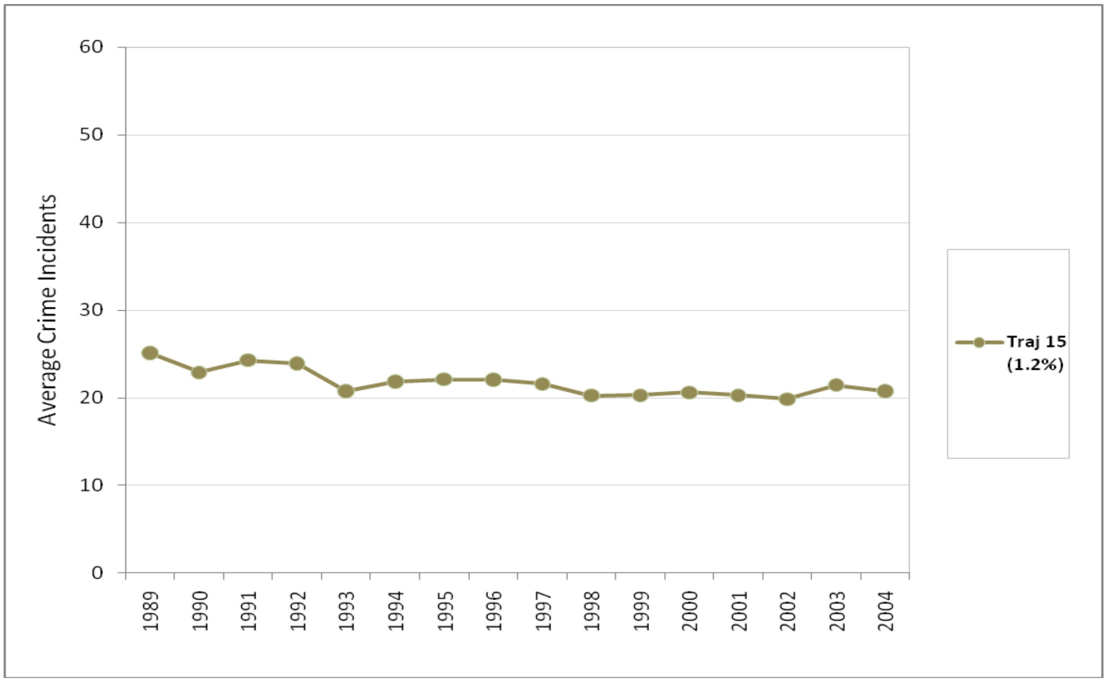
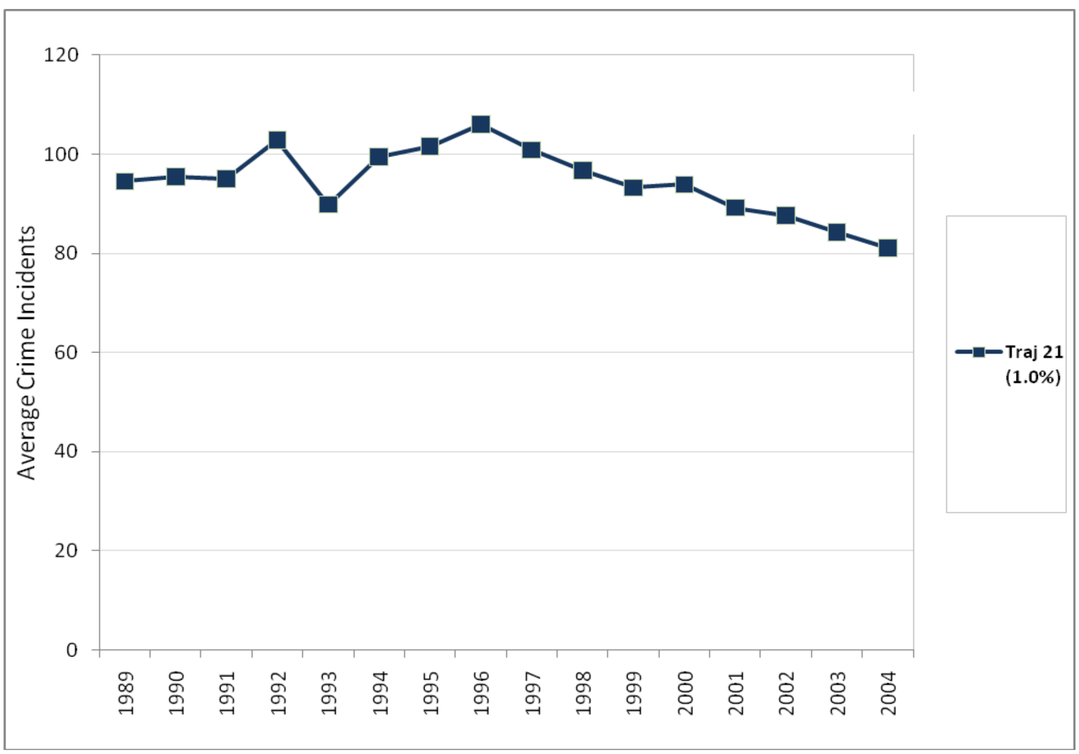


Figure 5.8: Chronic Trajectory Group

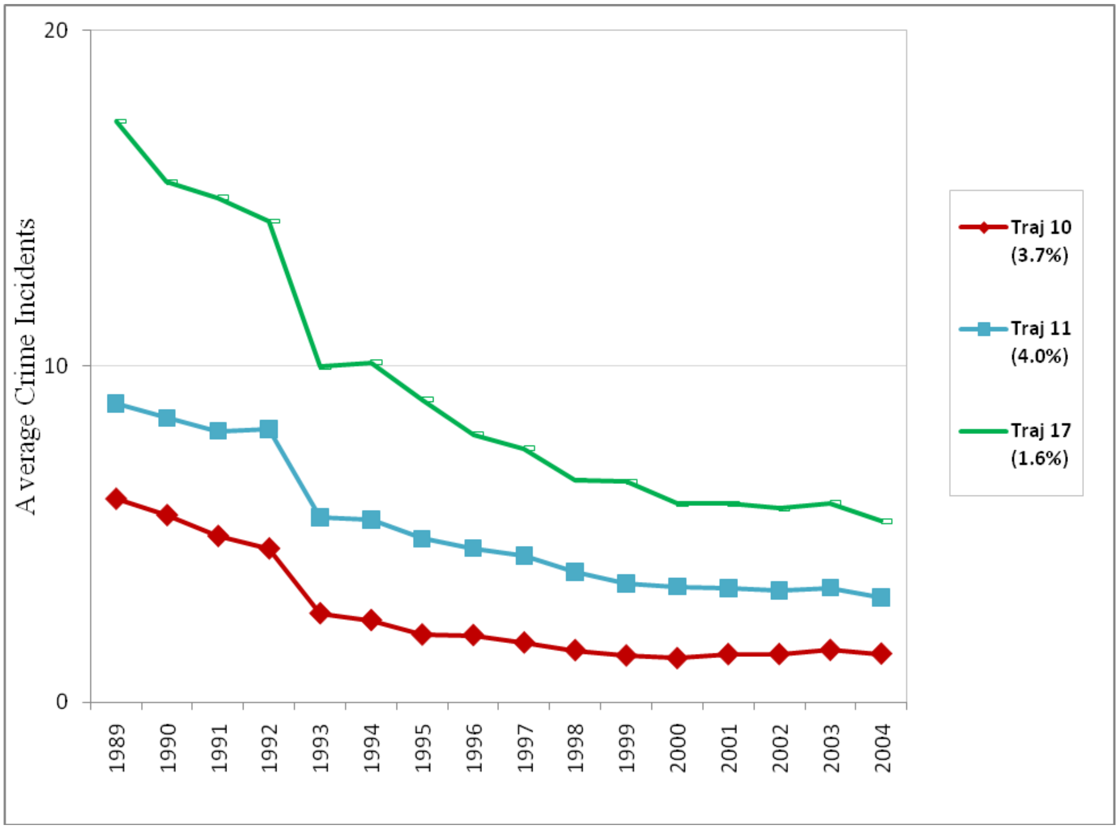


Increasing and Decreasing Trends in Crime Trajectories

The trajectory patterns we have described so far all represent relatively stable crime trends. This, as we noted earlier, is a very important finding of our research. More than 80 percent of the street segments in Seattle can be seen as part of stable trajectory groups. Despite the crime decline we noted earlier for Seattle more generally, for these street segments, little changed in terms of crime in the 16 year study period. During the "crime drop" in Seattle most places remained basically the same in terms of crime levels. While this does not mean that people living in these places did not benefit from the crime decline in their experiences throughout the city, it does suggest that even major changes in crime in a city are concentrated at specific places. It is in this sense misleading to speak of a crime drop across the city. Our findings below further reinforce this approach to understanding crime trends.

The four remaining trajectory patterns include only about one in five street segments in the city. But nonetheless, they represent interesting trends that help us not only to understand the overall crime decline in Seattle, but also to recognize that crime trends at very micro levels of geography are more complex than overall city trends would suggest. Two of the trajectory patterns evidence decreasing crime trends during this period. The "**low rate decreasing**" pattern includes three trajectories (see Figure 5.9) that account for almost 10 percent of the street segments in the city. The three trends are very similar, though the groups differ substantially on the levels of crime they have in 1989. Street segments in trajectory group 17 began with an average of almost 18 crime incidents. Street segments in trajectory group 10 began with only about 8 crime incidents per street segment. Importantly, by the end of the study period each of these groups had declined to less than half of the crime averages evidenced at the outset.

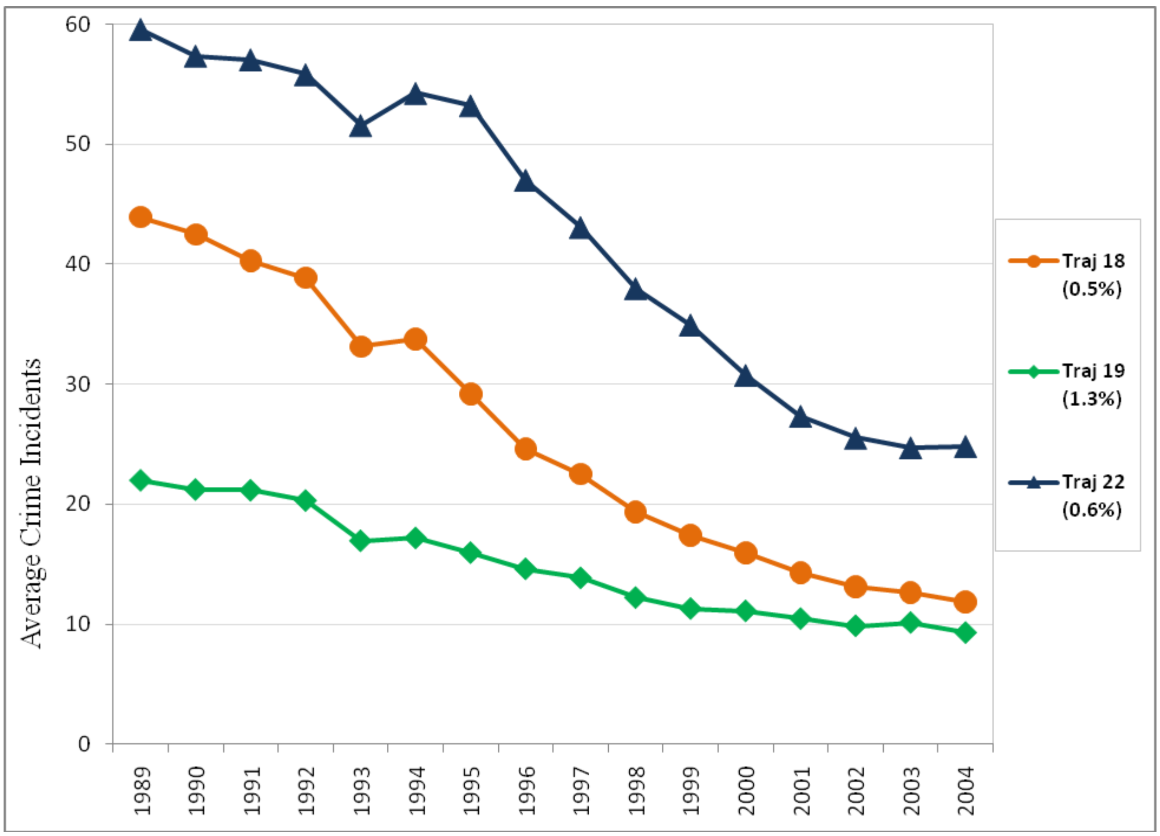
Figure 5.9: Low Rate Decreasing Trajectory Pattern



Similarly the street segments in the crime trajectories that are part of what we term the "**high rate decreasing**" trajectory pattern evidence strong crime declines (see Figure 5.10). Here the base levels of crime in 1989 are much higher, ranging between 20 and 60 crime incidents on an average street segment. Once again however, the crime declines in the study period are dramatic leading to observed crime levels less than half those found at the outset. Only about 2.4 percent of the street segments in our study are found in these three trajectories. However, they account for the vast majority of events that represent the crime decline in Seattle. If we compare the number of crime incidents in Seattle at the outset of the study and at the last year of observation, we find a difference of 28,545 crimes (from 121,869 to 93,324). Looking just at the high decreasing street segments there is a decline of 12,770 crimes (from 20,582 to

7,812). Accordingly, almost half the crime decline in Seattle can be attributed to just 2.4 percent of the street segments. If we add this to the crime decline in the low decreasing crime segments, we find a total crime decline of 26,742 (from 40,788 to 14,046) incidents. Together, this means that the decline in just 12 percent of street segments in the city was equivalent to the entire crime drop in Seattle.

Figure 5.10: High Rate Decreasing Trajectory Pattern



The last two patterns of trajectories are particularly interesting in light of the overall crime decline in Seattle. We term one of these trajectories a "**low increasing**" trajectory pattern (see Figure 5.11). About four percent of the street segments fall in crime trajectories with a low increasing pattern. Trajectories 3 and 14 evidence strong increasing crime trends, suggesting a crime increase of almost 219 percent and 36.7 percent respectively during the study period.

Trajectory group 9 however, shows a remarkable four-fold increase in crime, though the overall rate change is only from 4.6 to 17.8. The "**high increasing**" pattern shows a similar trend but with higher overall rates of crime (see Figure 5.12). Only about one percent of the street segments fall in these groups. But for example in trajectory group 1, the average number of incidents per segment begins at less than 10 crime incidents but is more than 60 crime incidents at the end of the study period.

Figure 5.11: Low Rate Increasing Trajectory Pattern

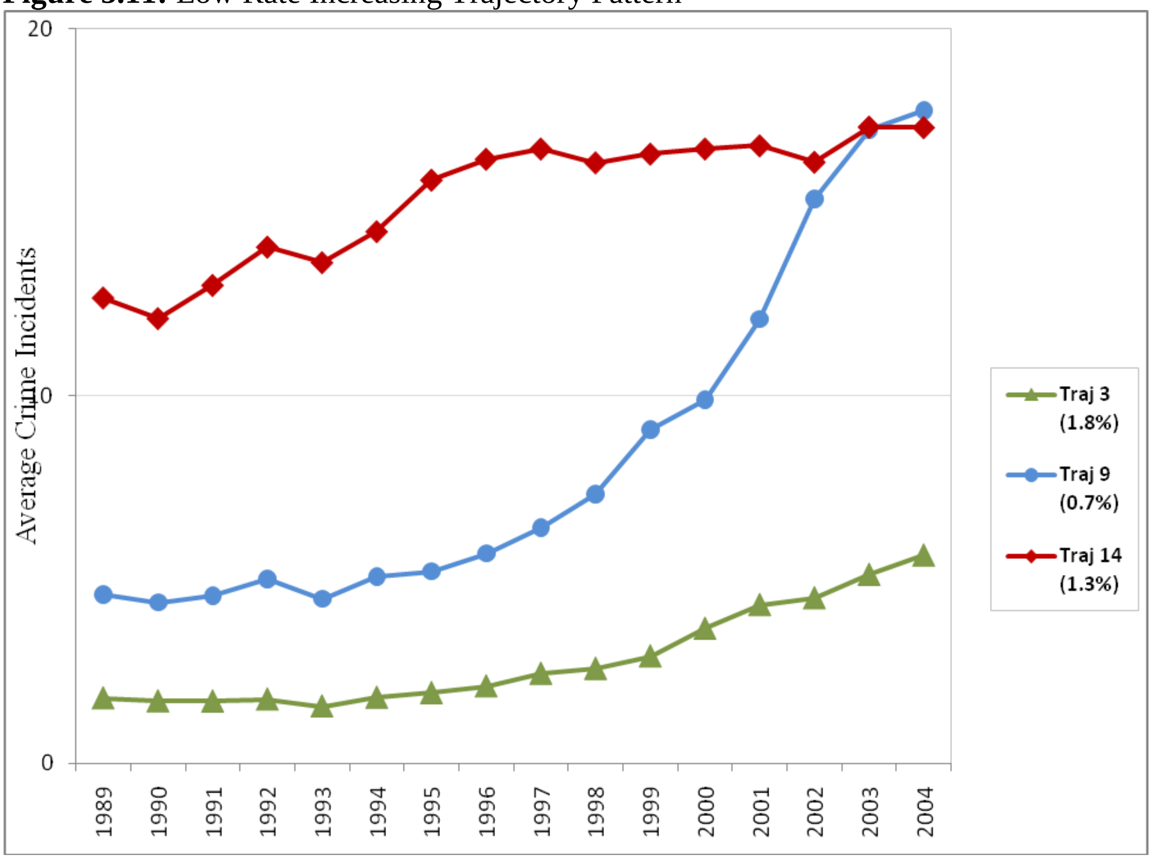
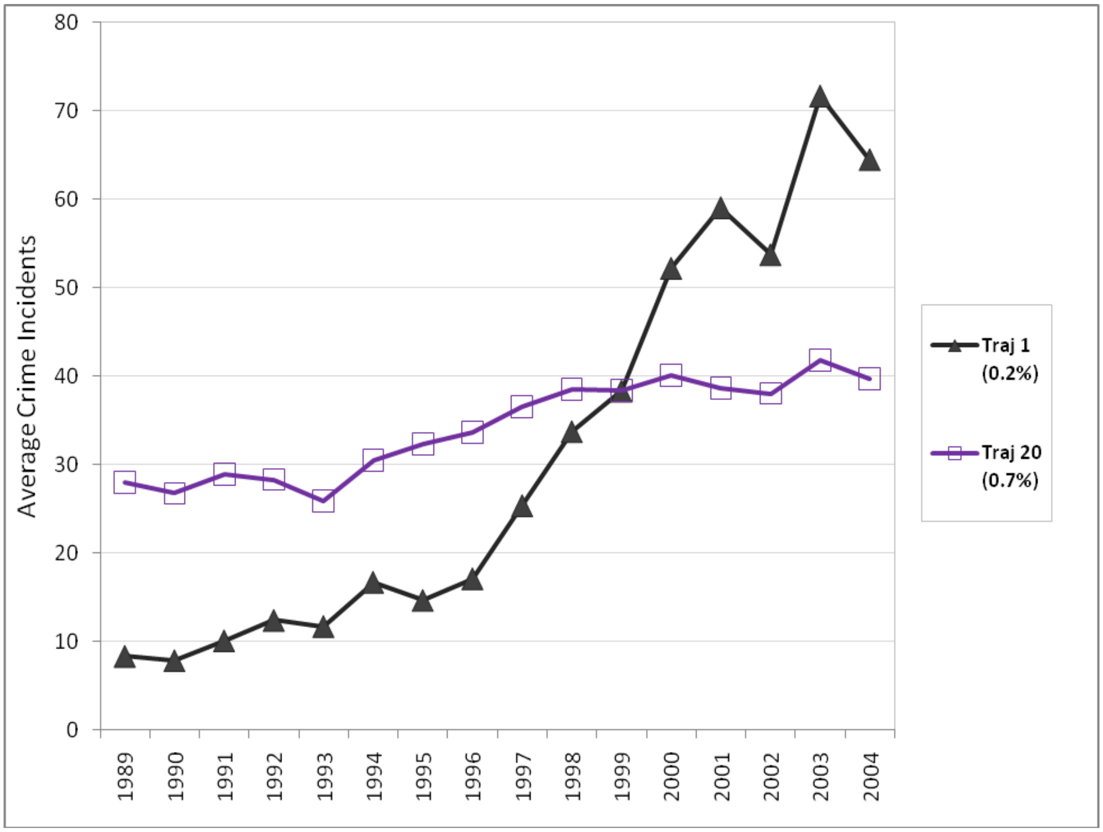
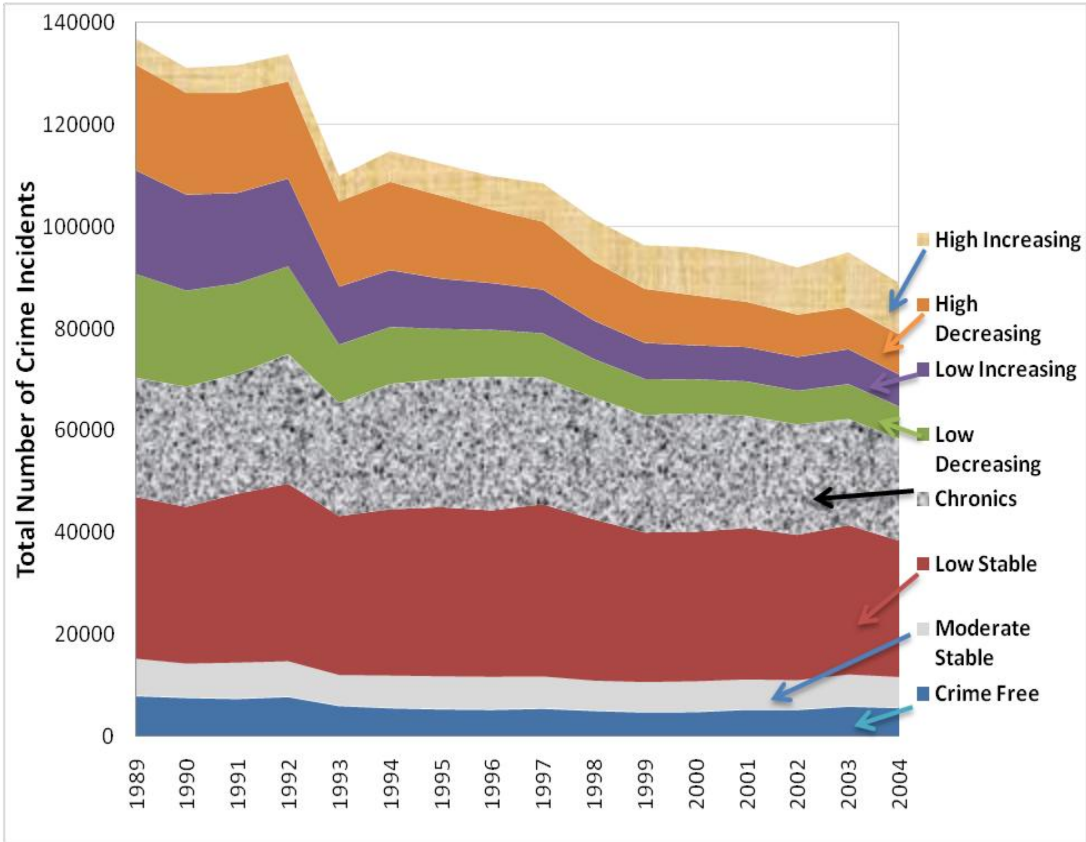


Figure 5.12: High Rate Increasing Trajectory Pattern



Street segments in these two groups evidence an increase in crime of almost 93.4% during the study period (from 5,192 to 10,041). This means that during the period of the crime drop in Seattle, 221 street segments experienced a crime wave. If we link these findings to those regarding decreasing and stable street segments, we come to a very different understanding of crime trends than what has commonly been assumed. It is in this context misleading to simply speak of an overall crime decline in Seattle. If we bring our analysis down to the level of street segments we are brought to understand that places in a city are likely to evidence very different developmental trends. This is illustrated by Figure 5.13 which lists the contribution of each trajectory pattern to the overall crime trends that we observe.

Figure 5.13: Crime Drop Analysis



Most places in Seattle, and we suspect elsewhere during the same period, did not experience a crime decline at all during the 1990s. Most places had very stable, often low levels of crime throughout this period. The crime decline is found at specific places, about 12 percent of the street segments in Seattle. As illustrated in Figure 5.13 these places are the main generators of the crime drop. At the same time, many places in Seattle experienced a crime wave during the study. They did not benefit from the "crime drop" but rather evidenced opposite trends from those that were dominant in Seattle and across the country.

These findings suggest that if we are to understand broader crime changes we need to move our focus from the broad general changes found in our cities to the specific places where crime occurs. Why do certain places experience a crime wave when the overall crime trend in a city suggests that crime is going down? Why do some places evidence a crime decline when most places show little change in crime over time? These questions bring us down to a much lower level of geography than is traditional in the study of crime. But we think our data suggest that such an approach is warranted.

Conclusions

Our analyses confirm prior research showing that crime is tightly clustered in specific places in urban areas, and that most places evidence little or no crime. But we also are able to show that there is a high degree of stability of crime at micro places over time. This stability is evident in the vast majority of street segments in our study of 16 years of official data. Our data however, also suggest that crime trends at specific segments are central to understanding overall changes in crime. The crime drop in Seattle was confined to very specific groups of street segments with decreasing crime trajectories over time. If the trends in Seattle are common to other cities, the crime drop should be seen not as a general phenomenon common to places across a city but rather as focused at specific places. Such places in our study are also street segments where crime rates are relatively high.

It is interesting to note in this regard that the variability we observe across street segments in Seattle reflects broader trends in crime and violence across American cities. While the national trends illustrate an overall decrease in crime during the 1990s, there was a good deal of variability across cities (Blumstein, 2000; Travis & Waul, 2002). When looking at specific crimes there has also been acknowledgement of important differences across populations. For example, Cook and Laub (1998, 2002) observe that the youth violence epidemic was concentrated among minority males who resided in poor neighborhoods, used guns, and engaged in high risk behaviors such as gang participation (see also Braga, 2003). We are not surprised by this variability, and see it more generally as reinforcing the importance of digging more deeply into the phenomenon of overall crime trends. But whatever the trends across cities, or across specific populations, our data suggest the importance of focusing on crime at very small units of geography. We have argued that the street segment provides an important focus of criminological analysis. Our data at this juncture emphasize that at the street segment level of analysis there are very different developmental trends.

These analyses raise important questions which are the focus of the rest of this report. The first concern was raised earlier in the chapter. We find that crime is concentrated at street segments, and that relatively few street segments are responsible for most of the crime in Seattle. But so far, we have not discussed the geography of the street segments. Are the very high rate hot spots all in one area, or are they spread throughout the city? More generally, do street segments near each other evidence very similar patterns of crime? These questions (addressed in Chapter 6) are critical ones for our work because they raise important concerns about the unit of analysis we use in our study.

Our analyses have also raised important questions about developmental trends of crime at street segments. Why do some street segments evidence much more crime than others? Is it the case that they have specific characteristics? As we noted earlier, a major concern of our research was to see how well social disorganization and opportunity theories explain crime at place. In this regard our trajectory analysis has shown us that there are distinct developmental trends at crime places. Do the variables we have identified in prior chapters help us to understand such trends? For example, do characteristics of social disorganization or crime opportunities (or changes in such characteristics over time) explain membership in different trajectory patterns? This is the focus of our analyses in Chapters 7 and 8.

Chapter 6: Geography of the Trajectories

Our data show clearly that there are different developmental trends at street segments, and that a relatively small number of places, which can be termed hot spots of crime, produce a substantial proportion of crime in a city. In turn, we have also illustrated that radically different patterns of trajectories operate during the same time period in Seattle. It is misleading to speak of an overall crime drop in the city, when a small but meaningful proportion of the city's street segments experience crime waves. These findings suggest the importance of examining crime at very small geographic units. But our analyses so far do not answer key questions regarding the geography of trajectory patterns in the city.

For example, it may be that a relatively few hot spots are responsible for large proportions of the crime in Seattle. But are these hot spots concentrated in specific areas? Put differently, it may be that our examination of the crime at the street segment level has masked the very consequential clustering of crime in communities or larger geographic areas. For example, are high crime street segments concentrated in high crime neighborhoods, or do bad places arise even in stable neighborhoods? Are such hot spots concentrated in large groupings in some neighborhoods or do temporal trajectories of crime vary street segment by street segment? If there are spatio-temporal patterns in the concentration of crime across micro places, can their identification inform our understanding of the processes driving them?

Additionally, we are faced with a broad concern regarding what the study of crime at micro places adds beyond the influences that come from larger social trends in communities or other large geographic units. Does the variability of crime at the street segment level add significant new variation beyond that indicated by study of larger geographic areas? There is a long history of study in criminology of communities and their importance for understanding crime trends (e.g. see Boggs, 1965; Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Bursik & Webb, 1982; Byrne & Sampson, 1986; Chilton, 1964; Kornhouser, 1978; Reiss & Tonry, 1986; Schuerman & Kobrin, 1986; Skogan, 1986; Stark, 1987). Does the study of variation across street segments suggest that the action of crime should be brought lower down the cone of geography?

To answer these questions we apply geographic analysis to the distribution of street segments with similar temporal patterns (i.e., street segments with the same trajectory pattern assignment). Using the trajectory pattern assignment as the dependent variable, we investigate whether street segments next to one another have the same temporal pattern (i.e., they tend to be found in homogenous clusters). We also explore the spatial distribution of the street segments in each trajectory pattern. Do they tend to be in one part of the city, or are they spread throughout the city? Is there significant variability in crime trends at this low level of geography, and does it suggest that explanations for crime need to be focused on micro crime places?

Analytic Strategy

The incorporation of spatial methods into criminological research has increased rapidly since the 1990s (Messner & Anselin, 2004). Researchers have taken seriously the error introduced by failing to account for spatial effects when analyzing inherently spatial data and have responded by incorporating a range of spatial data analysis techniques.[1] This research continues that trend by using spatial statistics to describe geographic patterns of crime trajectories across street segments.

The geographic analysis undertaken here requires multiple spatial and statistical packages. Unfortunately no one package includes all the necessary functions combined with a

[1] The volume of research explicitly examining spatial dependence or spatial error in their models is far too large to detail here. The following studies are provided as examples: Baller et al., (2001); Chakravorty & Pelfrey (2000); Cohen & Tita (1999); Cork (1999); Jefferis (2004); Morenoff & Sampson (1997); Roman (2002).

powerful cartographic display engine. Consequently data analysis and display were done using a variety of software packages including SPlus© Spatial Stats module, SPlancs©, CrimeStat©, GeoDa© and ArcGIS© 9.2.

Recall the group membership designation identified which street segments experienced similar trends in crime incidents over the entire study period.[2] We grouped those distinct trajectory groups into eight general patterns that described the levels and trends in crime rates over time: 1) crime free, 2) low stable, 3) low decreasing, 4) low increasing, 5) moderate stable, 6) high decreasing, 7) high increasing, and 8) chronic. Since group membership is a limited categorical variable, we are constrained in the techniques we can use to examine the distribution of street segments on the variable of interest.

When approaching the subject of space-time patterns, previous studies have used a sequential approach by conducting a spatial analysis on the output of the temporal statistical techniques (Griffiths & Chavez, 2004; Groff et al., 2009; Kubrin & Herting, 2003; Weisburd et al., 2004). We also take that approach here. We use a variety of spatial statistics to describe the spatial distributions of street segments within each trajectory pattern. The analysis of spatial patterns is divided into sections that address the following research questions: 1) What is the spatial pattern of street segments within the same trajectory pattern (i.e., clustered, dispersed, or random)?; 2) Are trajectories of street segments related to the trajectories of nearby street segments (i.e., is there spatial autocorrelation present and if so, what type?)?; and 3) Are street segments of certain trajectory patterns found near one another, or are they spatially independent (e.g., do high-increasing street segments and low-increasing street segments tend to be found close to one another?)? To answer these questions, a series of point pattern statistical techniques

[2] The groups used in the study are not the original trajectories identified by the TRAJ PROC. We grouped those original trajectories by the overall trend and level into the eight trajectory group patterns discussed previously in Chapter 5.

are used to analyze the spatial patterns of street segments. Each street segment is represented by a dot (i.e., a point) on the map. The exercise of quantifying the patterns in the data is conducted to further our understanding of the "underlying process that generated the points" (Fotheringham et al., p. 131).

A series of formal tests of the spatial distribution of crime events is employed to characterize the spatial patterning. The techniques applied to the data are termed local statistics; that is, statistics which are designed to examine the second order effects (i.e., local relationships) related to spatial dependence (Bailey & Gatrell, 1995; Fotheringham et al., 2000). Specifically, the second order or local variation in the data is examined using the Ripley's *K*-function, a cross-*K* function and local indicators of spatial association (LISA). Together the three provide a more nuanced picture of local variation than would be possible with any one alone.

Ripley's K

Ripley's *K* describes the proximity of street segments in the same trajectory pattern to one another. For each street segment, it counts the number of street segments of the same trajectory pattern that fall within a specified distance band and then repeats for each distance band in use. In this way it characterizes spatial dependence among locations of street segments with the same trajectory pattern at a wide range of scales. If street segments having the same temporal trajectory pattern are clustered, then the processes underlying that trajectory pattern are also clustered. If the results show a dispersed pattern, then the street segments are spread out, and there is pattern to that spread. Thus the processes underlying a dispersed pattern are also 'spaced out.' A finding of randomness would indicate the pattern of the street segments in the temporal trajectory pattern and the processes underlying them are both random.

In order to make more formal statements about the point patterns, it is necessary to compare the summary statistics calculated from the observed distribution of street segments with those calculated from a model distribution, for example, complete spatial randomness (CSR). When used in this way, the *K*-function is able to identify whether the observed pattern is significantly different than what would be expected from a random distribution (Bailey & Gatrell, 1995). Ripley's *K* is calculated and then compared to a reference line that represents CSR. If $K(h) > \pi d_{ij}^2$ then clustering is present (Bailey & Gatrell 1995, p. 90-95; Kaluzny et al., 1997, p. 162-163).[3]

Bivariate-K function

A bivariate-*K* (also called a cross *K*) function is used to test for independence between movement patterns. This statistical technique determines whether the pattern of street segments belonging to one trajectory is significantly different from the pattern of street segments in another trajectory (Bailey & Gatrell, 1995; Rowlingson & Diggle, 1993). As described by Rowlingson and Diggle (1993) and applied here, the bivariate-*K* -function expresses the expected number of street segments of a particular trajectory pattern (e.g., low decreasing) within a specified distance of an arbitrary point of a second type of street segment (e.g., low increasing), divided by the overall density of low increasing street segments.

As with Ripley's *K* simulation, the bivariate-*K* function is used to test whether two patterns are independent. This is accomplished by using a series of random toroidal shifts on one set of points and comparing the cross *K*-function of the shifted points with another fixed set (Rowlingson & Diggle, 1993).[4] If the *K* value falls within the envelope of independence, then

[3] Where h = the radius of the distance band and d_{ij} = the distance between an event i and an event j.
[4] A toroidal shift provides a simulation of potential outcomes under the assumption of independence. This is accomplished by repeatedly and randomly shifting the locations for one type of street segment and calculating the cross K-function for that iteration. The outcomes are used to create test statistics in the form of an upper and lower

the two patterns are independent of one another; there is no evidence of spatial interaction (i.e., attraction or dispersion). If the *K* value falls above the envelope, significant attraction exists at that distance.[5] If the *K* value line is below the envelope, significant dispersion is present between the two patterns. The x-axis (s) represents the distance in feet, and the y-axis the cross *K* value.

In the case of our observations, a finding of attraction in the configuration of two trajectory patterns can be interpreted as a situation in which the pattern of street segments of one trajectory group is similar to the pattern of street segments of the comparison trajectory group. Since the patterns 'hang' together it can be assumed that the same underlying process or processes are driving both patterns. A finding of independence in the comparison can be interpreted as showing no relationship between the locations of street segments in the two patterns. Thus, it is more likely that different processes are driving the observed patterns. The scale at which processes operate provides evidence regarding the appropriate unit of analysis for understanding them.

LISA

Finally, the LISA statistic is calculated in order to measure the degree of spatial autocorrelation in the pattern (i.e., how likely a street segment of one group is to be near a street segment of the same or any another group). This statistic identifies four types of spatial autocorrelation; two characterize positive spatial autocorrelation and two negative spatial autocorrelation. In positive spatial autocorrelation, observations with high values are near other observations with high values or low values are near other observations with low values. Negative correlation describes situations in which high values are near low values or vice versa.

---

envelope. One thousand iterations were used for each simulation except the generation of the test statistic for the crime free trajectory pattern. Because of the large number of members we used one hundred iterations.

[5] Since street segments are stationary, attraction in this context refers to a tendency for street segments of one trajectory pattern to be found in closer proximity to street segments of another trajectory pattern than would be expected under independence (i.e., their patterns are similar).

The limited nature of the dependent variable, in this case trajectory patterns, provides a challenge to measuring spatial autocorrelation. Typically, measures of spatial autocorrelation such as Moran's I and LISA measure the pattern in the deviation of an observation from the mean for the distribution. This requires a ratio level variable such as the number or rate of total crimes. For example, if number of crimes was the dependent variable, Moran's I would characterize the existence and strength of the relationship between the number of crimes on one street segment and the number on nearby street segments. However, the focus of this research is on the distribution of street segments by type of trajectory, which involves a limited dependent variable and makes the use of spatial autocorrelation techniques inappropriate without recoding. Following recent research, this study dummy coded the dependent variable to allow a series of comparisons; each trajectory pattern, in turn, was compared to all others (Griffiths & Chavez, 2004).

In this context, a finding of positive correlation among the trajectory pattern being tested is significantly more likely to be found near other members of the pattern being tested; there is clustering of members within the tested trajectory pattern. A finding of negative spatial autocorrelation indicates the existence of street segment to street segment variation. In these areas, street segments of the target trajectory pattern are significantly more likely to be found near street segments of other trajectory patterns or street segments of any other trajectory pattern are significantly more likely to be found near street segments that are members of the tested trajectory pattern.

In sum, this mix of techniques provides information about the patterns in the temporal variation of crime at street segments. Together they tell us the type of patterns (i.e., clustered, random, dispersed) and the scale. From these patterns we can infer the pattern and the scale of the underlying processes. Findings of street segment to street segment variation in the temporal patterns of crime would provide support for the operation of micro/street segment level processes. Any finding of small scale clustering or attraction provides support for the argument that there are micro level processes at work. On the other hand, findings of positive spatial autocorrelation across larger areas would tend to support the view of macro level processes that are working across large swaths of street segments.

Findings

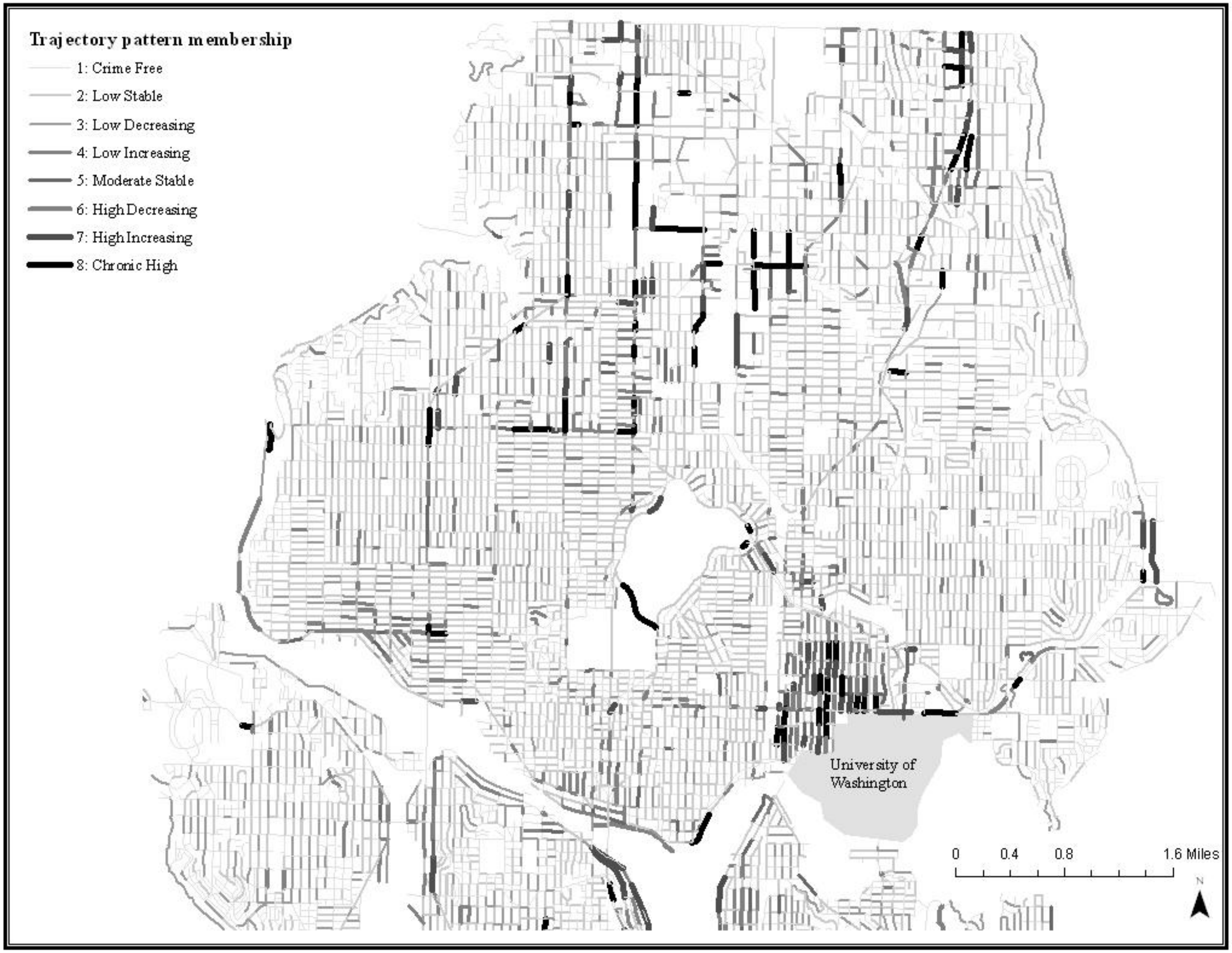
We begin our examination of the geography of temporal trajectories with a series of three maps, which enable the inspection of variation in trajectory pattern membership across street segments. Next, local relationships among the locations of street segments within the same temporal trajectory pattern are investigated more quantitatively through the application of a Ripley's *K*. Then, we examine the spatial dependence in one group compared to all other groups using a LISA. Finally, we use a series of bivariate-*K* statistics to examine commonalities in pair-wise comparisons in the spatial distributions of two trajectory patterns (e.g., low increasing street segments and high increasing street segments).

Each map depicts the eight trajectory patterns across the northern (see Figure 6.1), middle (see Figure 6.2) and southern (see Figure 6.3) portions of Seattle. These maps offer an excellent visualization of the distribution of groups. The thinnest and lightest lines are the crime free pattern members. As crime increases so does the darkness and thickness of the lines. Street segments that are members of the chronic high group are the darkest and thickest of all.

At first glance the impression is one of clusters of streets of the same shade and thickness broken up by linear patterns of differently shaded and thickness streets. However, upon closer inspection, the variety in the pattern is discernible. While there are clusters of the crime free and low stable groups (not surprising given their overwhelming numbers, 12,033 and 7,696 street segments respectively), they are broken up by streets from different trajectory patterns. There are also several arterial roads belonging to the high crime group patterns that are easily discernable.

In the northern part of the city (see Figure 6.1), there is an area that is adjacent to the University of Washington campus and on both sides of Broadway that has tremendous street segment by street segment variation in high rate temporal trajectory patterns. The area is only approximately 50 street segments in size but within that area all the high rate trajectory patterns are represented and are neatly surrounded by crime free and low stable trajectory pattern street segments.

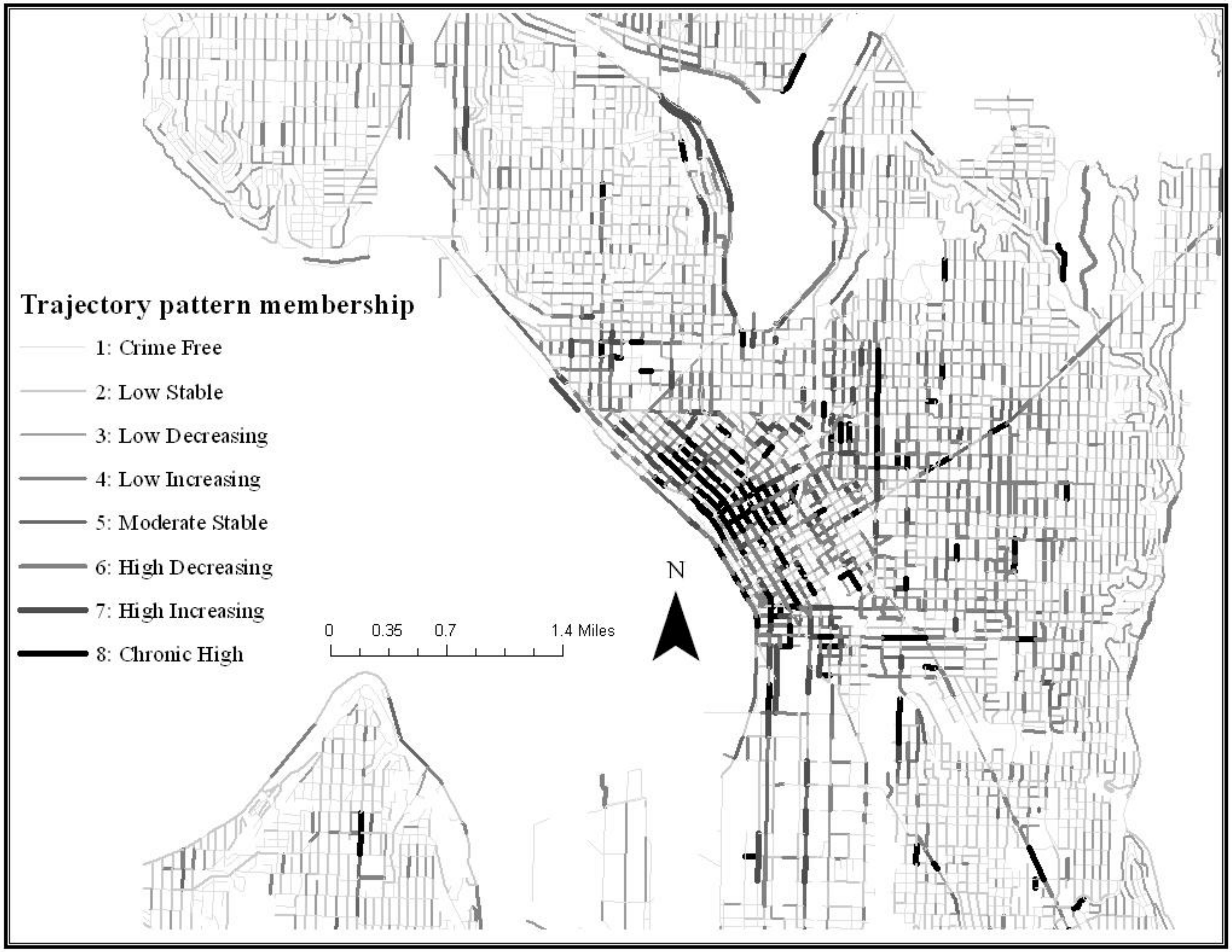
Figure 6.1: Spatial Distribution of Temporal Trajectories (Northern Seattle)



Turning to the middle of the city (see Figure 6.2), which includes the downtown area and some of the most densely populated areas in the city we see a definite increase in the street segment to street segment variation of the temporal trajectories.[6] The downtown core is the first area we see that has several adjacent chronic street segments. The middle section of Seattle also seems to have a greater frequency of high rate street segments in general than the other two sections of the city.

[6] Readers should note slight scale changes among Figures 6.1, 6.2 and 6.3. These were necessary to provide maximum enlargement of the three sections of Seattle.

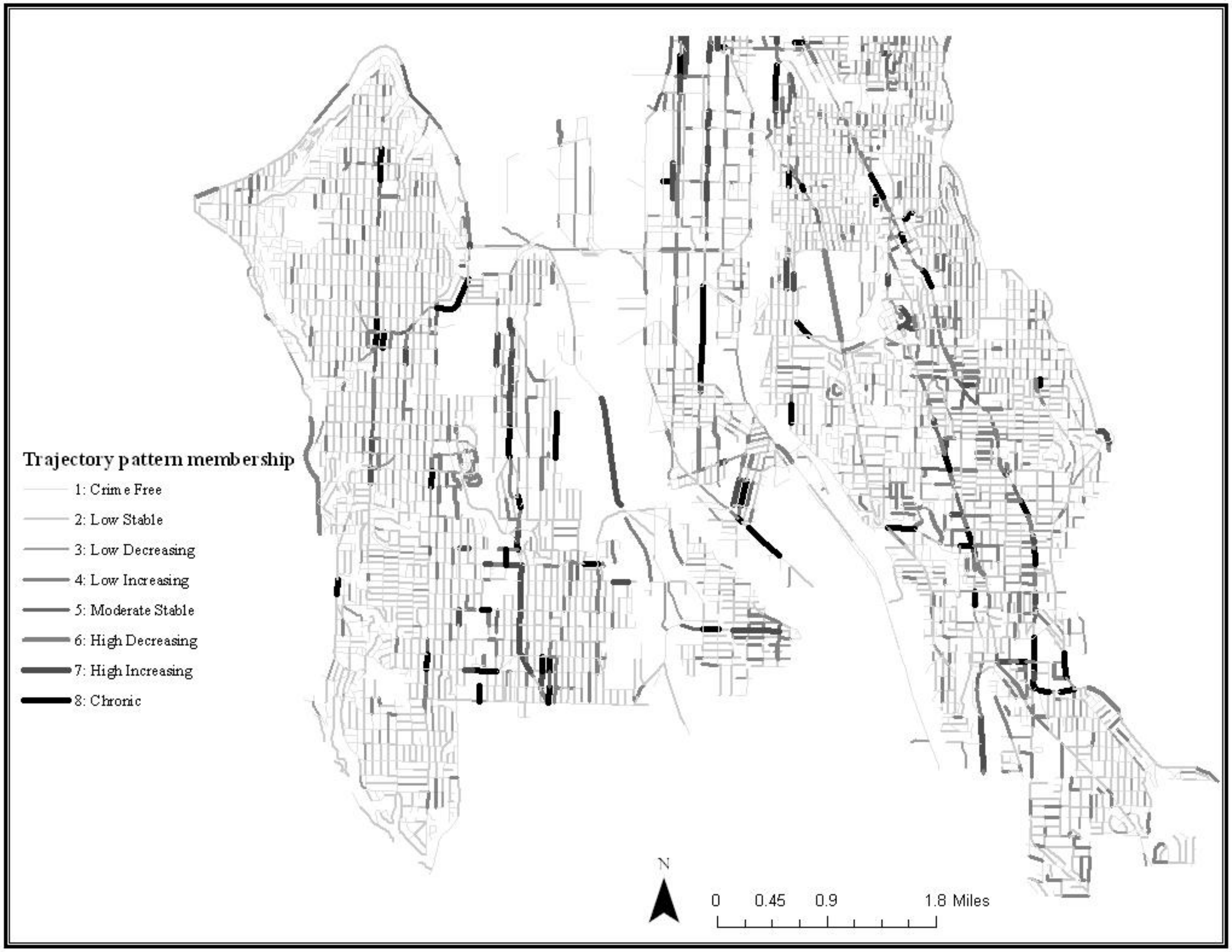
Figure 6.2: Spatial Distribution of Temporal Trajectories (Central Seattle)



Finally, turning to Figure 6.3, which covers the southwestern and southeastern sections of the city, yet another pattern emerges. Once again we see clusters of low crime and crime free street segments interspersed with the other trajectory types. There seem to be more linear patterns of high rate street segments that often follow major arteries.

While these maps do not provide statistical substantiation for the significance of the spatial associations revealed, they do offer a strong indication of heterogeneity as well as homogeneity in crime patterns at the street segment level. Together these visualizations provide striking evidence of street segment to street segment variation in crime rates that is often linear in form. The next section examines whether street segments of the same temporal trajectory pattern are clustered in space and if so, at what distances.

Figure 6.3: Spatial Distribution of Temporal Trajectory Patterns (Southern Seattle)



Clustering of Street Segments or Spatial Randomness?

Ripley's *K* provides information on whether street segments of the same trajectory are clustered in space. In addition, the statistic reveals whether the observed clustering is greater or less than would be expected under an assumption of complete spatial randomness (CSR). Ripley's *K* also quantifies the spatial extent of dependence within the set of places in a given trajectory. The L value from Ripley's *K* in CrimeStat is reported here. This is a rescaled Ripley's *K* where CSR is represented by a horizontal zero line. In order to provide a measure of significance, one hundred Monte Carlo simulations were used to develop an envelope of the minimum and maximum values under CSR. The odds of getting a result outside the envelope were one in one-hundred (or .01). The presence of the L-value line (dark blue line) above and outside the simulation envelopes (CSR MIN and CSR MAX) indicates that the members of the trajectory pattern are closer together than would be expected under CSR (i.e., the distances between street segments of the same trajectory pattern are shorter than would be expected under CSR).

Figure 6.4 shows the L(t) line for each of the trajectory patterns; the higher the line, the greater the amount of clustering among the places that are members of the trajectory group pattern. We compare the clustering in trajectory patterns to both CSR and to the intrinsic clustering in the pattern of the streets themselves.[7] All trajectory patterns are more clustered than would be expected under a CSR assumption and the street network as a whole at short distances (less than about a half mile if you include the crime free pattern and less than about one and a quarter miles if you only consider street segments with crime). The degree of clustering varies

[7] To calculate the clustering in the street network, we took the midpoint of each street and created a point pattern. We then ran Ripley's *K* on the point pattern representing the streets. Since the density of the street network varies across a city, using the intrinsic clustering of the street network as a comparison is helpful when interpreting the clustering among members of each trajectory group pattern.

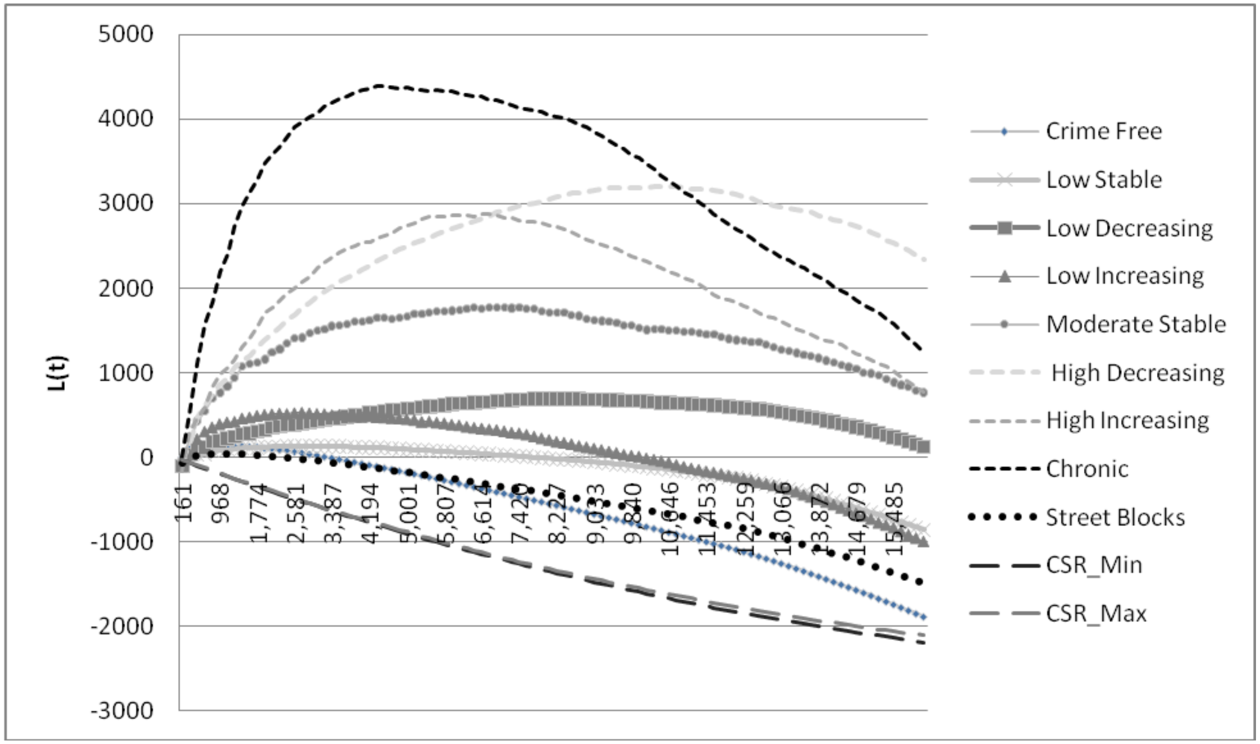
by the rate of crime. Trajectory patterns consisting of high rate temporal trends were the most clustered at all distances. The four high crime patterns also have the highest degree of clustering at all distances. In other words, if the crime rate on a street segment is high, it tends to be near (but not necessarily adjacent to) other street segments that are also exhibiting a similar high crime temporal pattern. Only three trajectory patterns, crime free, low stable, and low increasing, have truncated clustering (i.e., they do not exhibit clustering at all distances up to three miles).

More specifically, chronic street segments have the greatest clustering at just under a mile from one another. The high increasing pattern exhibits a slower rise in clustering as distances increase and peak at about 5,500 to 6,500 feet before dropping off steeply. The high decreasing pattern does not hit its peak clustering until about 8,500 feet and remains stable until about 12,500 feet. The moderate stable pattern is the least clustered. It peaks at about 6,000 feet and then stays at that level until it begins declining at just over 9,000 feet.

At the other end of the spectrum, among low rate trajectory patterns, it is the low increasing street segments which are the most clustered until about 3,500 feet, when the low decreasing pattern becomes more clustered and remains more clustered than CSR until just under two miles. The crime free and low stable street segments are the least clustered and are barely more clustered than the street segments themselves, although they are more clustered than would be expected under CSR. The crime free street segments remain more clustered than random until approximately 3,000 feet (i.e., about a 1,000 feet more than the street segments line). The low stable street segments remain more clustered than CSR until about 6,700 feet.

In sum, all of the trajectory patterns are more clustered than would be expected under an assumption of complete spatial randomness up to at least one-half of a mile. High rate trajectory patterns, as well as the low decreasing trajectory pattern, are more clustered than would be expected under an assumption of CSR up to at least two miles. Low increasing pattern street segments are more clustered up to about one and three-quarter miles. Clustering at a distance of over one and three-quarter miles means that within neighborhood-size areas, if you have one street segment of a certain trajectory you are significantly more likely to find another street segment of the same trajectory group than would be predicted by chance or by the intrinsic level of clustering in the street network.

Figure 6.4: Ripley's K of All Trajectory Patterns



Street Segment to Street Segment Variability

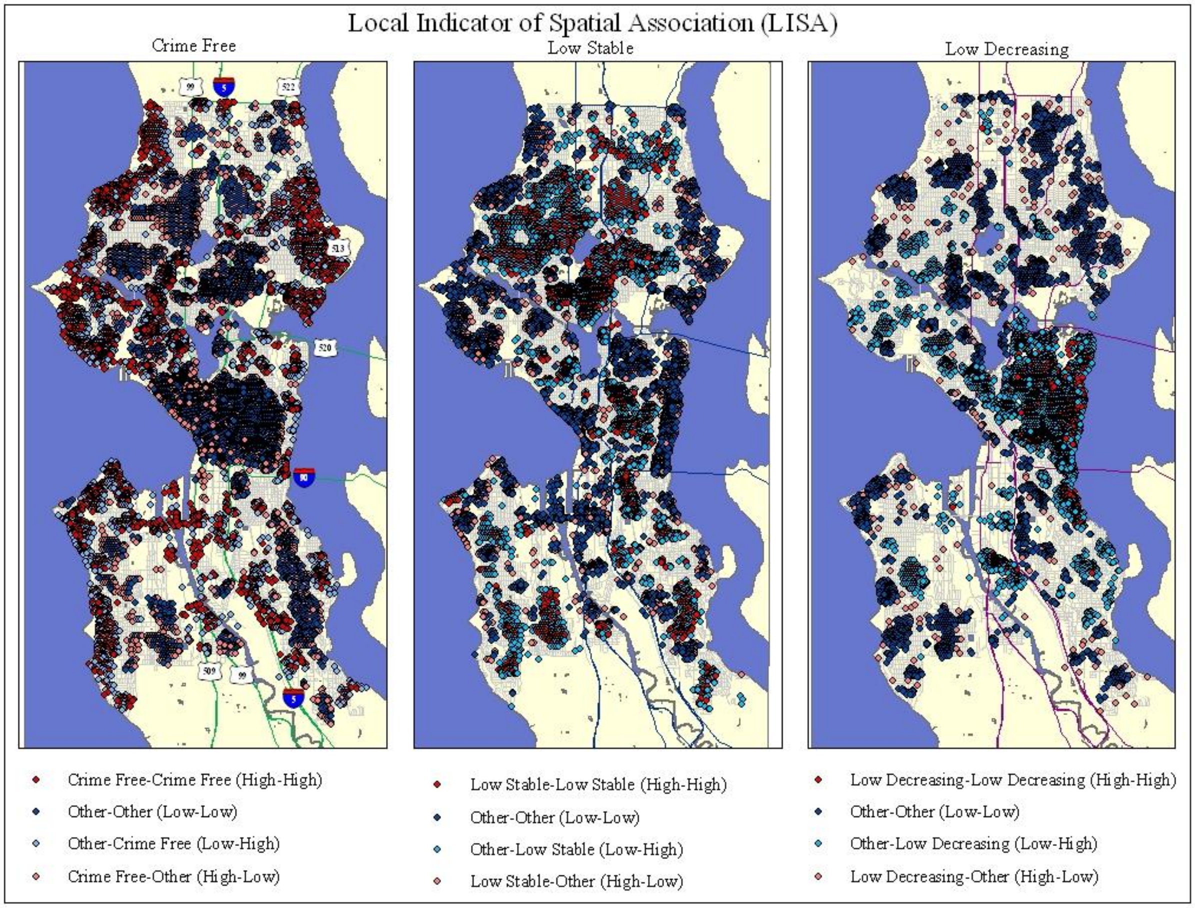
While Ripley's *K* provides important information about the level and scale of clustering of street segments within the same temporal trajectory pattern, it does not provide information regarding the street segment to street segment variation in temporal trajectory patterns. Nor can it tell us anything about relationships between the trends of one trajectory pattern versus another. To answer the question of whether street segments of the same trajectory pattern tend to be found near other street segments of the same trajectory pattern or some other trajectory pattern we use Anselin's local indicator of spatial autocorrelation (LISA). To answer the question of whether the members of one temporal trajectory pattern are found near the members of another temporal trajectory pattern (e.g., are chronic street segments consistently found near moderate stable street segments) we use a cross-*K* statistic.

Looking first at the question of whether the presence of street segments of one trajectory pattern is associated with the presence of street segments of the same trajectory pattern or some other trajectory pattern (within a quarter of a mile or about three street segments) we discuss the results of the LISA analysis. Figure 6.5 shows the LISA results for the crime free, low stable, and low decreasing trajectory patterns. Significant clusters of street segments that are crime free are found in specific areas (dark red dots). These streets are significantly associated with other streets that are also crime free. The areas of dark blue dots indicate streets that have some level of crime (i.e. they fall in one of the other seven trajectory patterns) tend to be near other streets with some level of crime. Areas of light blue and light red represent crime free street segments surrounded by street segments of other trajectory patterns or a street segment of another trajectory pattern that is surrounded by crime free street segments. In other words, in areas with light red or light blue dots, there is significant street segment to street segment variation when crime free street segments are compared to all other trajectory patterns.

Low stable street segments have a different pattern from the crime free street segments. They are concentrated in the central part of the northern section of the city. In this area there is once again a tremendous amount of negative spatial autocorrelation with low stable street segments surrounded by street segments of other trajectory patterns. There are also pockets of low stable street segments throughout the city.

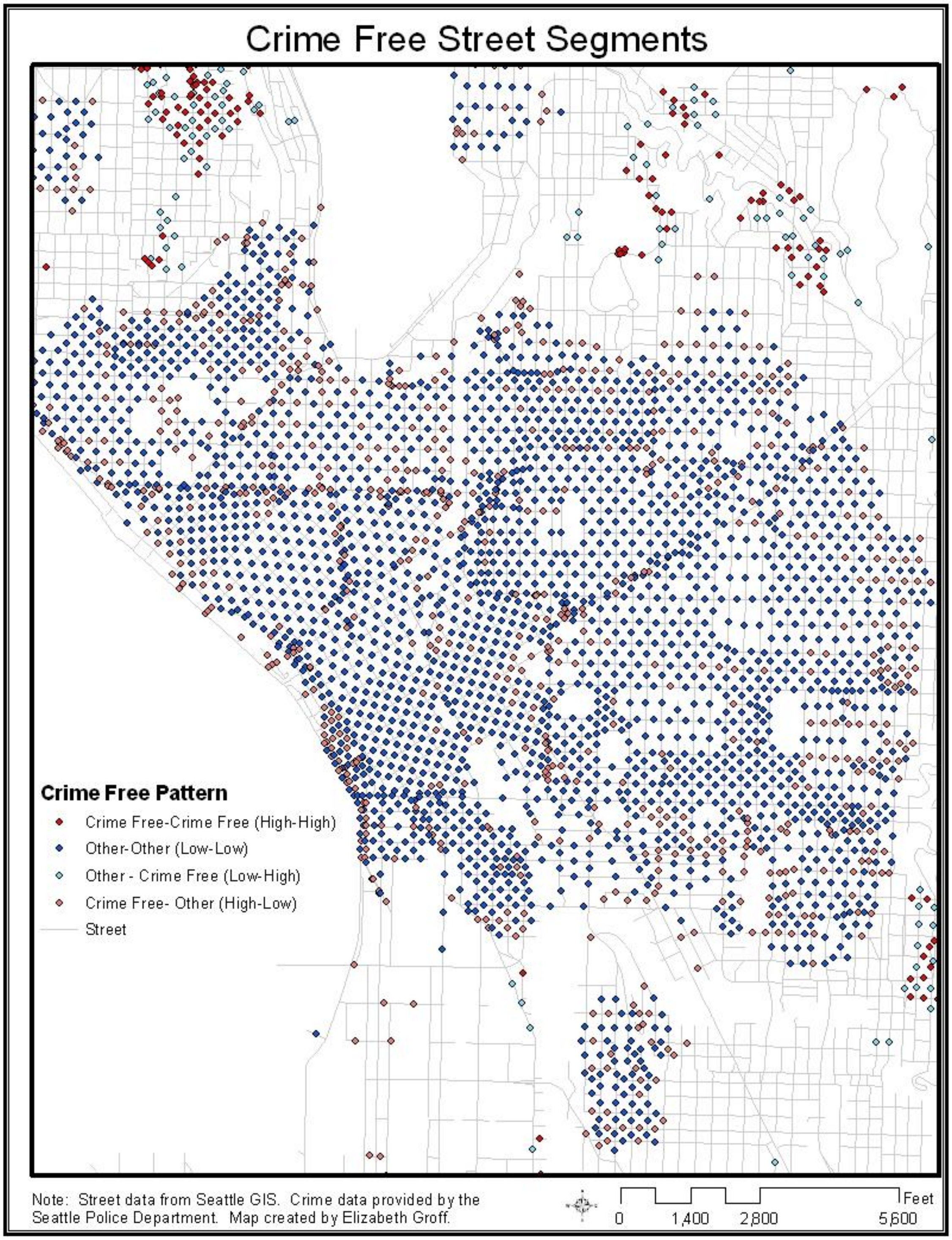
The low decreasing street segments tend to be in the east central portion of the city. Once again we see light blue mixed with dark red indicating that low decreasing street segments are near other low decreasing street segments in the same areas where street segments of other trajectory patterns are significantly associated with low decreasing street segments. This clearly demonstrates street segment to street segment variation in the trajectories of individual places.

Figure 6.5: LISA for Crime Free, Low Stable, and Low Decreasing Trajectory Group Patterns



Returning to our discussion of the crime free pattern, we more closely examine the center portion of the city, which is almost uniformly dark blue except for some light red dots (see Figure 6.6). These dots represent streets that are surrounded by streets of some other trajectory pattern. The light red dots are where crime free streets are near streets that are not crime free. Thus, there seem to be pockets of 'safe' streets even in the center city. This clearly shows how crime free street segments can be surrounded by street segments of other trajectory patterns. From this map it is apparent that there are no instances in the downtown area where a crime free street segment is surrounded by other crime free street segments (dark red). However, outside of downtown there are many more cases in which a crime free street segment is significantly correlated with other crime free street segments (dark red). In other cases, crime free street segments are surrounded by street segments that are part of high crime trajectory patterns (light red).

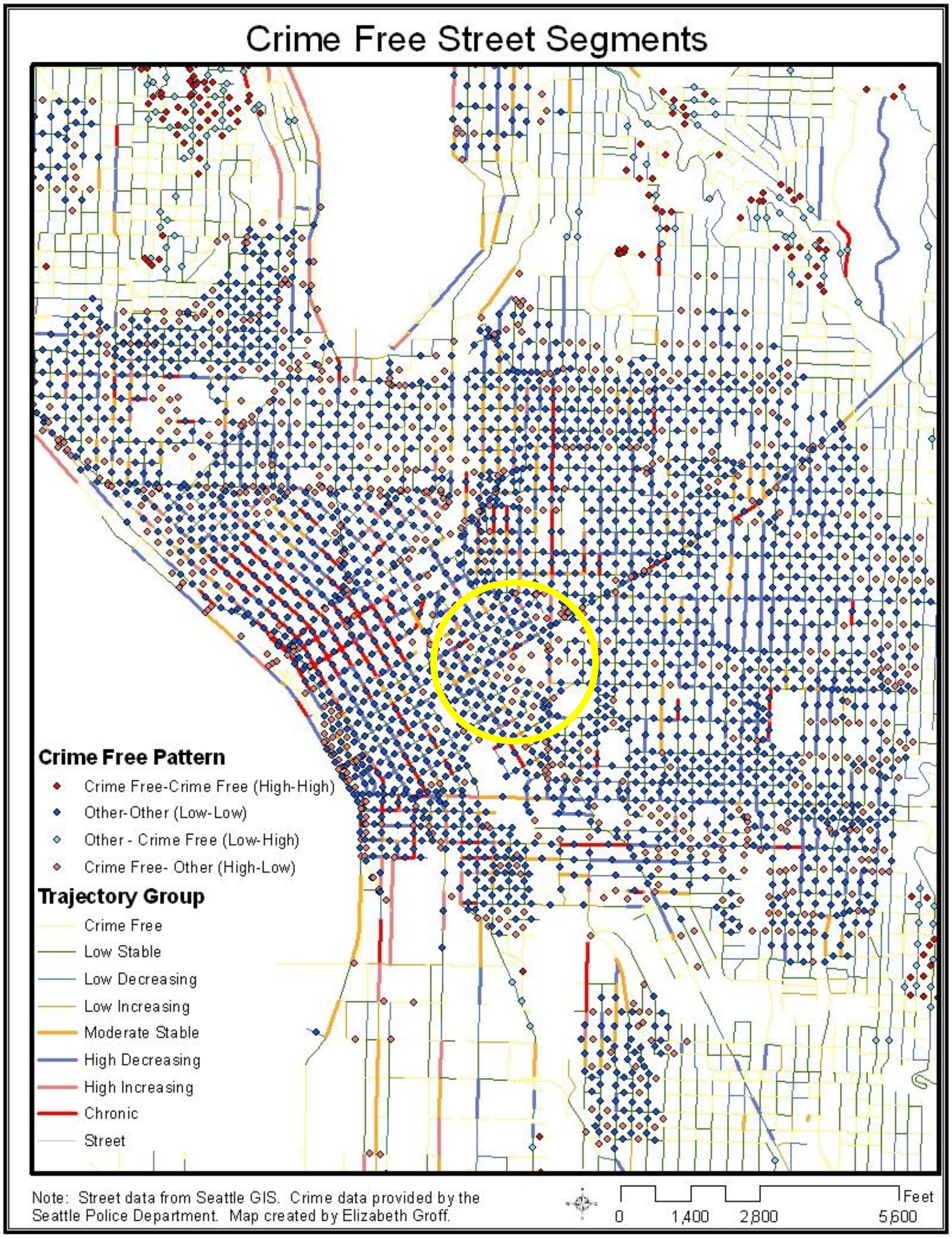
Figure 6.6: Center City LISA for Crime Free Street Segments



The limitation of the maps discussed so far is that we do not immediately know which group patterns are surrounding crime free street segments. To answer this question we would need a different map where we overlay the LISA results on the streets with each street symbolized by its trajectory pattern (see Figure 6.7 below for an example).

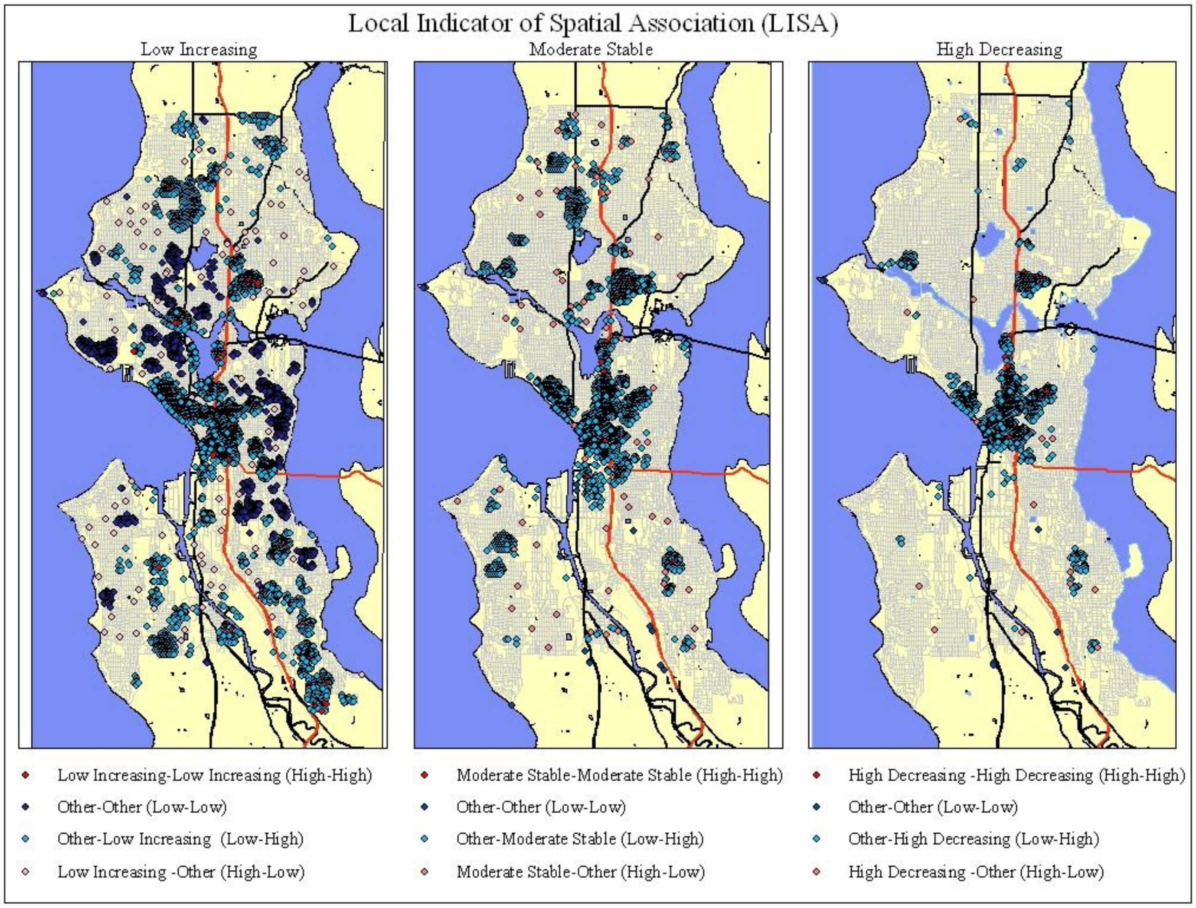
In order to answer the question of what trajectory patterns are near the crime free trajectory streets, it is necessary to zoom in even farther. Although Figure 6.7 is a bit cluttered, by picking out a particular street the reader is able to ascertain the specific trajectory group pattern of the street segments near it. To aid in this process, direct your attention to the center of the yellow circle to find several crime free street segments. Notice that within this small circle every one of the trajectory patterns is represented. Thus, there are low increasing and low decreasing street segments next to crime free street segments, and high decreasing street segments next to high increasing street segments. The street segment by street segment variation is clearly visible.

Figure 6.7: Street Segments by Trajectory Pattern with LISA for Crime Free Segments Segments



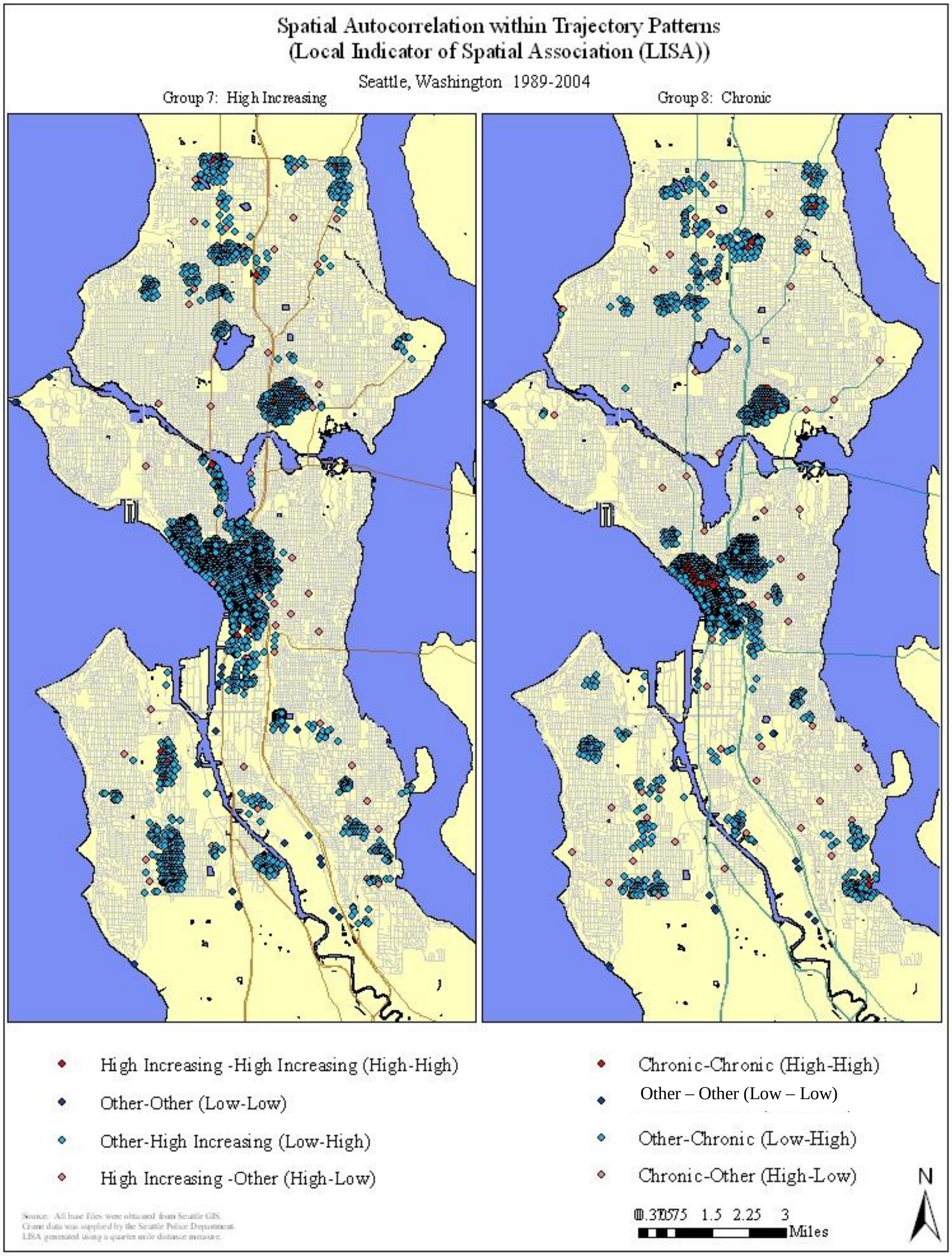
The lesser numbers of street segments in trajectories representing low increasing, moderate stable and low decreasing patterns produce arrangements of more isolated clusters (see Figure 6.8). There are significant clusters of low increasing street segments as well as significant negative spatial autocorrelation where low increasing street segments are intermixed with other street segments in downtown and in all sections of the city. A similar situation occurs with moderate stable street segments, which are significantly positively auto correlated with other street segments in the central section of the city and near the University of Washington campus. High decreasing street segments are even more clustered but with only one large cluster in downtown and then some smaller clusters near the University of Washington, in the southeast section of the city, and near Salmon Bay.

Figure 6.8: LISA for Low Increasing, Moderate Stable, and High Decreasing Trajectory Patterns



The final two trajectory patterns represent the high increasing and chronic groups (see Figure 6.9). The patterns of spatial autocorrelation are very similar for both these groups. The pattern for both is dominated by negative spatial autocorrelation. Specifically, there are large areas where high increasing and chronic street segments respectively are significantly associated with other trajectory pattern street segments. In other words, they are surrounded by street segments belonging to some other trajectory pattern. There is some scattered positive spatial autocorrelation of high increasing or chronic street segments near one another (dark red).

Figure 6.9: High Increasing and Chronic LISA for Trajectory Patterns



One final note on the differences in the patterns among trajectory patterns is required. Figure 6.5 depicted the LISA results for the three trajectory patterns which have the highest numbers of street segments in them: crime free (n = 12,033), low stable (n = 7,696), and low decreasing (n = 2,212). Because of the high numbers, there were more instances of the target temporal trajectory pattern street segments and fewer street segments of other trajectory patterns. Thus, Figure 6.5 shows more variety in positive and negative spatial correlation findings than Figures 6.8 or 6.9, where there were far fewer target street segments to compare. Overall, these findings indicate that street segments of one trajectory pattern tend to be positively associated with street segments of the same trajectory pattern in particular areas of the city. In other areas of the city, street segments of a trajectory pattern are likely to be found near street segments of other trajectory patterns (i.e., they are negatively correlated). Interestingly, the downtown area is one in which all trajectory pattern display positive spatial autocorrelation. Together these findings indicate that there is tremendous street segment by street segment variation in the downtown area for all types of temporal trajectory patterns.

Do Trajectory Patterns Share Underlying Spatial Processes?

We now turn to the question of whether there are specific temporal trajectory patterns that are also physically proximal. The application of a cross-*K* analysis allows us to systematically compare the distances between each street segment in one trajectory pattern with each member of another trajectory pattern. For example, we can directly compare moderate stable street segments with high increasing street segments. A finding that two patterns exhibit attraction to one another provides evidence that the temporal pattern observed and classified via the trajectory group membership is driven by a shared spatial process. For example, if we assume that there are similar processes driving an increase in crime wherever it occurs, we would expect trajectory patterns that have a temporal trend of predominantly increasing crime rates to have a similar spatial distribution. Thus, a finding that street segments of similar trajectory patterns are dependent at larger distances would support a macro level explanation, while a finding of dependence at short distances or independence would support the argument for a micro level examination of crime.

We conducted a series of pair wise comparisons to evaluate the spatial distribution of each trajectory pattern as compared to those of every other trajectory pattern (i.e., pattern 1 to pattern 2, pattern 1 to pattern 3 etc.). To create the envelopes, one thousand simulations were run of each pair wise comparison. Thus there is a one in one thousand possibility the results were obtained by chance. The null hypothesis of the cross-*K* test is independence between the two spatial distribution patterns (i.e., the spatial pattern of one trajectory group pattern is unrelated to the pattern of the other pattern being compared). When the entire length of the *K*(i,j) line falls within the significance simulation envelope, the pattern of street segments in the two temporal trajectory patterns being compared is independent at all distances. For distances at which the *K*(i,j) line is above the simulation envelope, the two patterns display attraction. In other words, they are dependent upon one another, and the form of the dependence is attraction (rather than repulsion which would be the finding if the *K*(i,j) line was below the simulation envelope). When the *K*(i,j) line falls on the upper bound of the simulation envelope the interpretation is one of weak attraction in the two patterns.[8]

Each trajectory pattern was individually compared to every other trajectory pattern (see Figures 6.10 and 6.11, Table 6.1 beginning on p. 33). In total, this yields 28 sets of comparisons. In all but eight of the comparisons, the patterns of street segments of one trajectory pattern were more likely to be found near the comparison trajectory pattern street segments (the Khat(I,j) line is above the envelope) at some distances. However, in most of the cases the attraction was only

---

[8] These analyses produced 28 graphs for each of the distances examined for a total of 56 graphs. Space constraints do not allow the inclusion of the graphs in this chapter; however, they are available from the authors.

weakly significant and occurred only at distances of less than two miles.[9] Trajectory patterns whose pattern was independent (i.e., the differences in pattern were not significant) were as follows:

- Crime free as compared to high decreasing, high increasing, moderate stable, and chronic.
- Low decreasing as compared to moderate stable, high decreasing, high increasing, and chronic.

But what do these results mean for our understanding of the processes underlying crime at place? Basically, a finding of independence in the patterns of temporal crime change across street segments signifies the two patterns are generated by different processes. In other words, different collections of factors are acting on each group. The finding is atheoretical in that we are not testing whether a specific characteristic or set of characteristics is responsible for the difference, only that there is a difference and it is worth looking into (i.e., significant). Specifically, these findings signify that crime free street segments are most likely generated by a process different from the one that generates any of the high rate street segments. Low decreasing street segments are similarly generated by a process different from all of the high rate street segments.

Only one of the pair wise comparisons exhibited strong attraction, low increasing with moderate stable. The dominant association was one of weakly significant attraction at short distances. The following section discusses the results from the low-rate trajectory patterns (see

[9] In order to better see the detail in the graphs, the cross-*K* analysis was done two separate times. The first run examined the distribution of the trajectory pairs at distances up to 10 miles (using 1,320 foot bins). Because the Khat(i,j) statistic line fell on the upper bound of the independence envelope in many of the comparisons, the analysis was rerun at a distance of two miles (10,560 feet, 1,320 foot bins). This allowed us to more closely inspect the relationship of the cross *K* statistic to the upper bound of the confidence envelope.

Figure 6.10) first and then turns to the high-rate trajectory patterns (see Figure 6.11). Street segments with a crime free pattern tended to be associated with other low rate street segments. With one exception, low stable pattern streets were weakly attracted to all other patterns of street segments at distances of almost a mile. Several pairs of trajectory patterns exhibited weak attraction for the full two miles: crime free street segments with low stable street segments, low stable with moderate stable, and low increasing with high increasing. Since low decreasing, low stable, and crime free street segments all exhibit at least a weak attraction to one another, we can make the case that they may share an underlying process that generates low crime rates. Further, the shared process operates at the street segment level as well as across several street segments at a time. Low increasing street segments were also more likely to be found near other low-rate street segments but for shorter distances (significant only up to 2,900 feet for all comparisons with one exception, low decreasing). Interestingly, the locations of low increasing and low decreasing street segments were mostly independent of one another. Even for places with low levels of crime, different factors were driving the changes in crime trends at spatially separate locations.

The emerging picture regarding low crime rate street segments is that they tend to be found in the same areas, except for low increasing and low decreasing street segments, which are mostly independent of one another. Interestingly, low stable street segments tends be attracted to most other trajectory pattern types. Perhaps this is an indication that many of the characteristics of low stable places are also found at higher rate segments with the exception of whatever is driving the crime trend at the other streets. It also could indicate low stable streets act as buffers between streets with ‘better’ and ‘worse’ crime rates. One factor which may be influencing this finding is the large number of crime free and low stable street segments in Seattle. Together these two groups account for almost 82 percent of all the street segments in Seattle and thus reflect the dominant processes at work, so in that way it is not surprising that they tend to be found in large numbers across many areas.

We now turn to the groups that were high in crime (see Figure 6.11). The trend of chronic street segments was weakly associated with all other high rate patterns at distances of less than one-half-mile. Chronic street segments were also weakly associated with low increasing street segments up to about three quarters of a mile. High increasing and high decreasing street segments were weakly attracted to every other pattern except crime free and low decreasing. High decreasing street segments did not display a distinct pattern, as was discovered with the low decreasing street segments. Rather, the patterns of high decreasing and moderate stable street segments were very similar to that of high increasing street segments (with slight differences in the distances at which attraction was significant). For the high-rate temporal trajectory patterns, the underlying processes are likely to be shared at micro level distances. However, the finding of weak attraction at micro distances for low stable street segments with moderate stable, high increasing, and high decreasing street segments suggests a shared set of common characteristics that manifest themselves differently at the micro level. In other words, while there may be consistency in some of the foundational elements of the situational backcloth, at the same time there is place to place variation that is driving the changes in temporal crime patterns. These spatial patterns also support our earlier finding of street segment to street segment variation in the temporal trajectory pattern of nearby street segments.

Figure 6.10: Graphical Representation of Pair Wise Comparisons for Low Rate Crime Street Segments

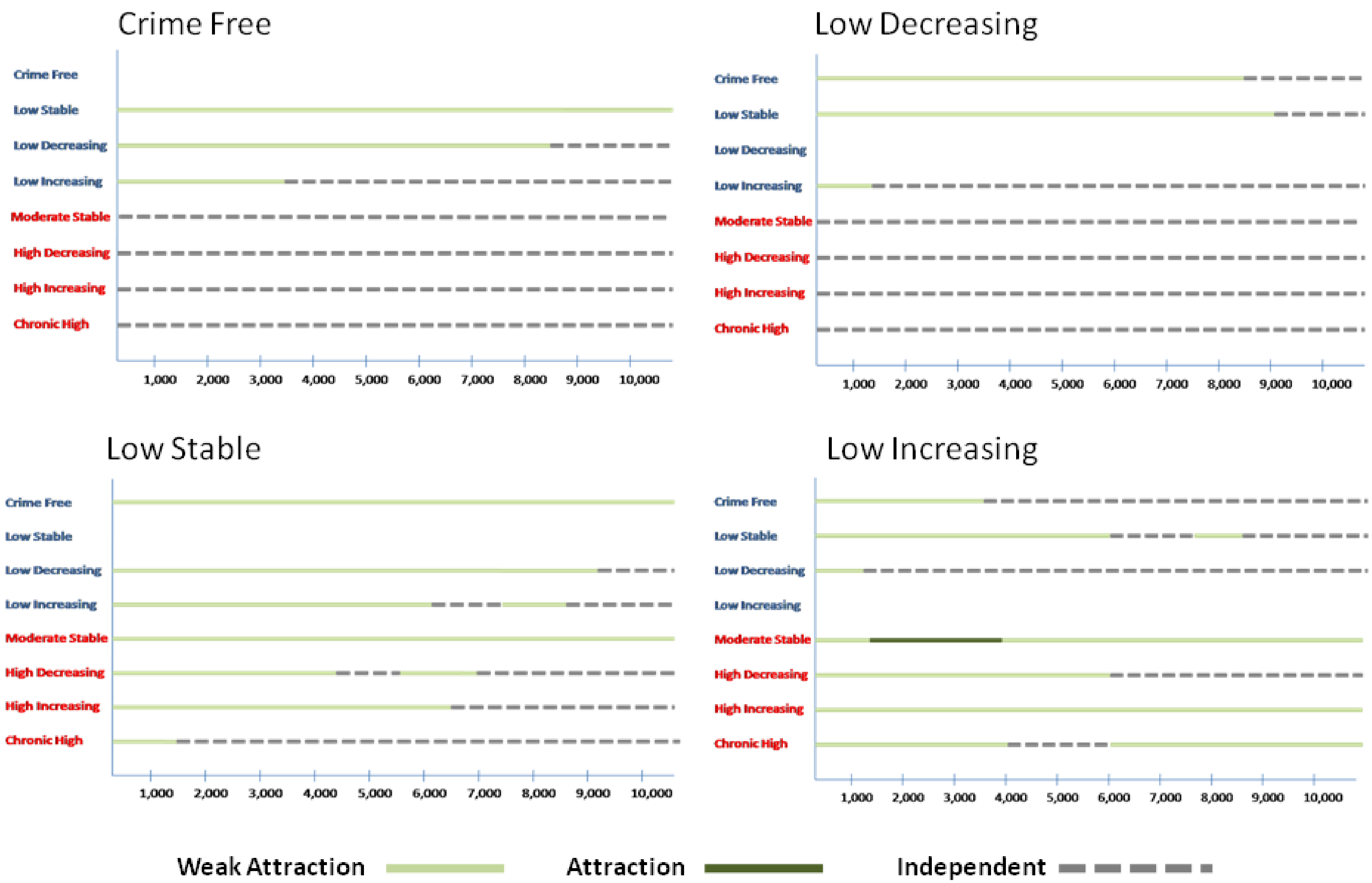


Figure 6.11: Graphical Representation of Pair Wise Comparisons for High Rate Crime Street Segments

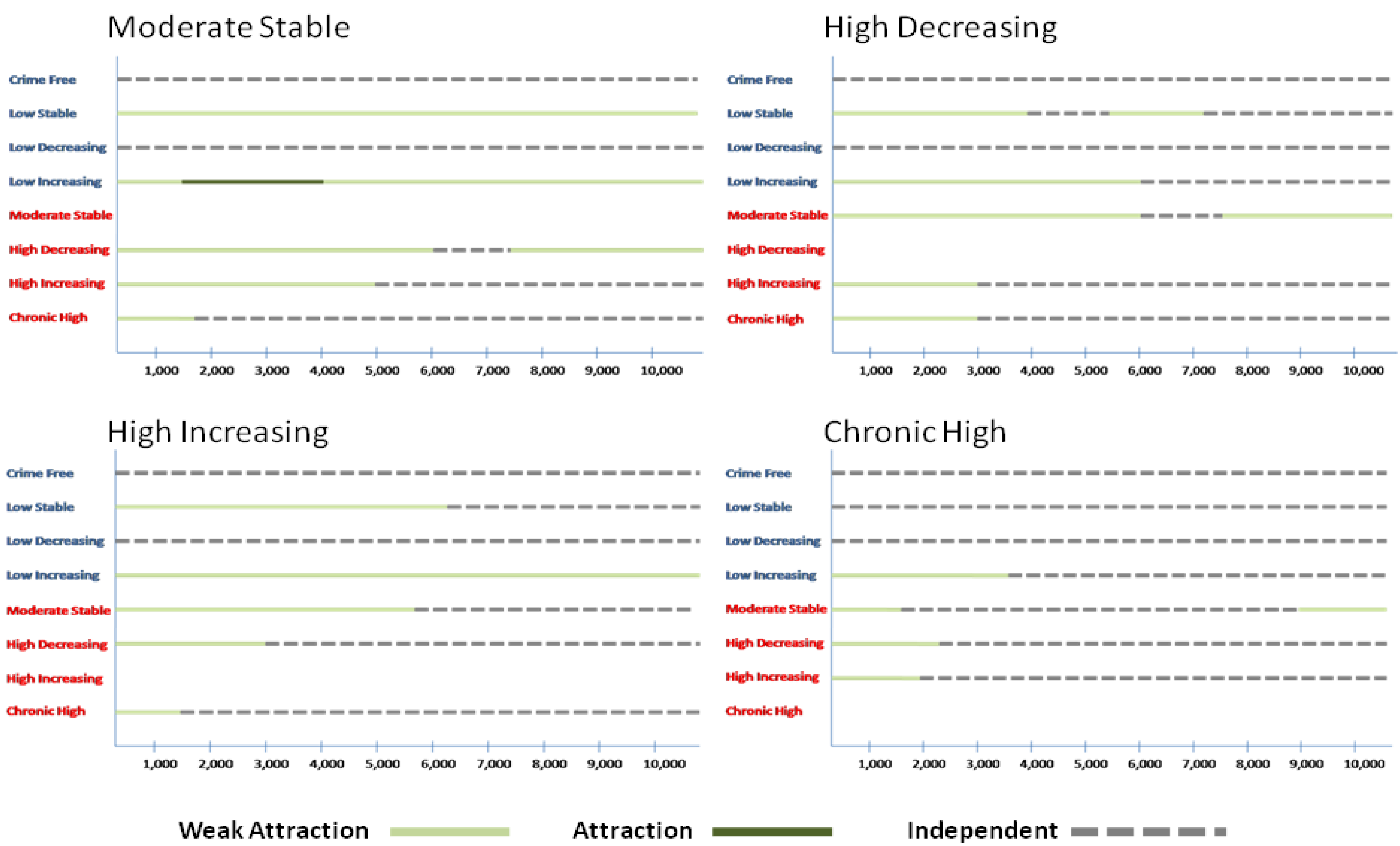


Table 6.1: Cross *K* Results

	2–Low Stable	**3–Low Decreasing**	**4–Low Increasing**	**5–Moderate Stable**	**6–High Decreasing**	**7–High Increasing**	**8–Chronic**
1–Crime Free	**Weak attraction** at all distances	**Weak attraction** to 8,400 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** to 3,500 feet, then **Independent**	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances
2–Low Stable		**Weak attraction** to about 9,000 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** to about 6,000 feet, then **Independent** until 7,500 feet, then **Weak attraction** until 8,500 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** at all distances	**Weak attraction** to about 4,500 feet, then **Independent** until 5,500 feet, then **Weak attraction** until 7,000 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** at distances up to about 6,500 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** to 1,500 feet, then **Independent**
3–Low Decreasing			**Weak attraction** to 1,500 feet, then **Independent**	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances	**Independent** at all distances
4–Low Increasing				**Weak attraction** to about 1,500 feet, then **Attraction** until 4,000 feet, then **Weak attraction**	**Weak attraction** to about 6,000 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** at all distances	**Weak attraction** to about 4,000 feet, then **Independent** to 6,000 feet, then **Weak attraction**

	2–Low Stable	**3–Low Decreasing**	**4–Low Increasing**	**5–Moderate Stable**	**6–High Decreasing**	**7–High Increasing**	**8–Chronic**
5–Moderate Stable					**Weak attraction** to about 6,000 feet, then **Independent** to about 7,500 feet, then **Weak attraction**	**Weak attraction** to about 5,000 feet then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** to about 1,800 feet then **Independent**
6–High Decreasing						**Weak attraction** to about 3,000 feet, then **Independent**	**Weak attraction** to about 3,000 feet, then **Independent**
7–High Increasing							**Weak attraction** to about 1,500 feet, then **Independent**

Weak attraction designates patterns where the Khat(i,j) statistic fell on the upper limit of the confidence interval.
Attraction designates patterns where the Khat(i,j) statistic was visually above the upper limit of the confidence interval.
Independent designates patterns where the Khat(i,j) statistic was within the confidence envelope

Conclusions

Our analyses of the geography of developmental patterns of crime at street segments, provides important answers to the questions that we raised at the outset of this chapter. We do not find evidence suggesting that the processes explaining crime patterns at street segments come primarily from higher geographic influences such as communities. While there are indications of the influence of higher order trends in our data, there is also clear and convincing evidence of the importance of micro level trends in understanding variability in trajectory patterns at street segments. There is strong street to street variability in crime patterns in our data, and such variability emphasizes the importance of studying crime at place at a micro unit of analysis.

On a broader level our findings suggest that there are both micro and macro influences that condition the developmental patterns of crime at place. The fact that there is clustering of street segments at specific distances indicates the importance of larger order trends, such as those that would be predicted by variability in economic and social characteristics at the community level. But we think that the evidence of heterogeneity of street segments in specific areas, for example the inner city, and the presence of crime hot spots throughout the city landscape, point to the critical importance of understanding how characteristics of places at the street segment level influence crime. Evidence of spatial independence at the street segment level further reinforces this view, especially given the well known law of geography that places closer to each other are likely to be more alike (Tobler, 1970).

These findings lay the ground for the following chapters. Now that we have established that micro level processes are at work in developing patterns of crime at street segments, it is reasonable to turn to the question of what specific factors influence crime at place. In this context, we now turn to how measures reflecting social disorganization and opportunity theories correlate with patterns of crime at place.

Chapter 7: Linking Characteristics of Places with Crime

In previous chapters we have established the importance of the street segment in identifying variability of both characteristics of places and crime. Incorporating variables representing social disorganization and collective efficacy, as well as those representing routine activities and crime opportunities we found that there was tremendous variation of place characteristics from place to place. In the two previous chapters we established that crime varies across street segments and that there are specific developmental patterns of crime at street segments over time. Importantly, our analyses also have shown that there is a “micro” level component to crime that is not simply explained by larger area changes. Our work suggests that the action of crime is at a much lower level of geography than traditional study of crime and place in criminology.

In this chapter we want to see whether there is a link between place characteristics and crime patterns at street segments. Is variability in such structural characteristics of places as property values, mixed land use, physical disorder, or racial heterogeneity related to the overall levels of crime at street segments or their developmental patterns? Is there a relationship between unsupervised teens or collective efficacy and crime patterns at the street segment level? While these elements of what are often termed social disorganization theories have been linked to crime patterns in larger geographic areas like census tracts and neighborhoods (e.g. see Bellair, 1997; Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson et al., 1997), our study is the first we know of us to systematically examine whether they have salience for understanding variability of crime at small micro level units of geography. This question is particularly important because social disorganization theories have been linked closely to the concept of communities and neighborhoods (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989). It has generally been assumed that the key to such theories is found in the dynamics of larger geographic areas than the street segments we study.

While what we have termed routine activities and opportunity theories are often seen as being linked to the specific places where crime occurs, our study is also the first we know of to systematically examine the relationship between key features of routine activities and opportunity theories and developmental patterns of crime at micro places. Are such factors as the presence of high risk juveniles living on a street segment ("motivated offenders") or the presence of large numbers of people working there ("suitable targets") related to levels of crime or developmental patterns of crime at street segments? Is the accessibility of places as represented by bus stops related to crime at street segments? Finally, is the level of guardianship as measured by the location of police or fire stations, street lighting, or the percentage of vacant land linked to crime at street segments?

In this chapter we want to focus on whether variability of characteristics of places representing broad theories about crime and crime events is related to variability in crime levels and developmental crime patterns at street segments. Our concern is not with causality but what scholars sometimes define as "risk factors" (Green et al., 2008; Nagin, 1999; Nagin & Tremblay, 2001). We simply want to identify at this point, for example, whether high rates of social disorganization or greater crime opportunities are related to high rates of crime at street segments and whether changes over time in factors reflecting social disorganization and opportunities for crime can be linked with developmental patterns of crime over time. We leave for the next chapter the task of identifying whether such links are causal, and the broader questions of which characteristics and which theoretical domains are the most important in understanding developmental patterns of crime at street segments.

Social Disorganization and Crime Trajectories at Street Segments

Structural Factors

We noted in Chapter 3 a set of structural variables that represent the physical or social characteristics of communities and thus are key elements of social disorganization theories of crime. These variables reflect the look and feel of places indicating whether they are socially disorganized in terms of economic, physical, and social conditions.

A key factor in such structural elements of social disorganization is the socio-economic status of areas. While many scholars have challenged the direct causal relationship between poverty and crime, there is wide agreement that crime is associated with poverty in communities and neighborhoods (Hsieh & Pugh, 1993; Ludwig et al., 2001; Williams, 1984). But is socio-economic status related to levels of crime at the micro geographic level of street segments? Using residential property values as a measure of socio-economic status at the street segment level, our data suggest that this aspect of social disorganization theory is as salient in describing variability across street segments as it is in describing variability of crime across neighborhoods.

In Table 7.1 we show the average property values for the first year and last year of data collection in our study for each of the broad trajectory group patterns we identified in Chapter 5. When we examine the relationship between the trajectory groupings and overall level of property values in the initial year of observation a clear pattern emerges. As would be predicted by social disorganization theories the higher crime areas have on average the lowest SES as measured by property values. The relationship is not perfect in this regard. For example, the low stable and low decreasing trajectory patterns have somewhat higher property values than the crime free pattern. For a city like Seattle, this phenomenon is possibly due to the fact that housing prices are higher in more developed areas than in less populated areas, even though the latter have fewer crime problems. This possibility is also consistent with the results that crime free segments showed only non-significant housing values inflation over our study period among all segments. Thus, there are relatively large and statistically significant differences between the trajectory group patterns reflecting higher property value scores and the trajectory groups that have overall higher crime rates (see Appendix 1 for pair wise comparisons between the trajectory patterns for all variables).[1]

Table 7.1: Risk Analysis for Property Value Index (Measure of SES)

Classification of Trajectories	*SES Initial Value (1991)*	*SES Ending Value (2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	4.1995	4.1961	-.0035	.740	-0.08%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	5.0722	5.1396	.0674	.000***	1.33%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	5.0829	5.3407	.2578	.000***	5.07%
Low Increasing (n=903)	3.7955	3.9350	.1395	.005**	3.68%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	3.6388	3.7315	.0927	.031*	2.55%
High Decreasing (n=574)	2.5625	2.7726	.2101	.000***	8.20%
High Increasing (n=221)	3.0769	3.2881	.2112	.024*	6.86%

[1] We use Tukey's PostHoc tests for generating these estimates, which takes into account the bias for running a large number of tests simultaneously on a single construct. Results are available from the authors upon request.

Chronics (n=247)	1.7545	1.9321	.1776	.023*	10.12%

*** p< .01, ** p<.01, * p<.05

When we look at change over time the relationship between property value and crime trajectory patterns becomes less clear. Two sets of comparisons in our data are especially salient for examining such changes over time: trajectories associated with what we have defined as the low stable, low decreasing, and low increasing patterns; and those associated with the moderate stable, high decreasing, and high increasing patterns. Following social disorganization theories we would expect that increasing crime rates would be associated with declines in SES reflecting more general increases in social disorganization, in this case at street segments. In turn, increases in property values would be expected to be associated with decreasing crime rates.

The data do not strongly reflect such patterns. Looking at the low trajectory patterns we do find that the largest increases in property values are in the low decreasing group, but the magnitude of change is not large for any of the groups. Again, for the high rate trajectory pattern the largest increase is found in the chronic trajectory, which is a little over 10 percent. It is important to note that the relationships between property values and other social variables may be confounding our view of change. As we noted above, in this chapter we wanted to examine the simple relationship between such characteristics and crime trajectories. In the next chapter we will examine property value and other variables in the context of a multivariate statistical analysis that will allow us to control for such confounding.

Public housing and Section 8 vouchers are also indicators of SES, as described in Chapter 3. Specifically, this measure captures the population that relies on public assistance and, thus is at the bottom of the SES spectrum. We term the combination of these two variables housing assistance. In Table 7.2 we report the proportion of street segments with public housing or with people who use Section 8 vouchers for each of the trajectory patterns. It is important to note that in this table as well as for other variables we report "moving averages" for three years of data as we were concerned that there might be strong year to year variability (Baller et al., 2001).

The findings here are again strongly consistent in terms of the levels of crime found in the trajectories. The crime free segments in this regard have significantly lower levels of housing assistance than any of the other patterns (see Appendix 1). The chronic trajectory street segments have 70 times the level of housing assistance as that found in the crime free trajectory segments. The high activity segments vary greatly in the level of housing assistance but overall, with the exception of the high decreasing group, have much higher levels than that found in the low crime trajectories. In this case, trends over time also appear consistent with the social disorganization perspective. In the low increasing and high increasing trajectory patterns there are strong and significant increases in housing assistance. In the low decreasing pattern there is a negative trend over time, and while the high decreasing pattern shows increasing public assistance, it is half that of the increasing group.

Table 7.2: Risk Analysis for Housing Assistance (Combining Public Housing and Section 8 Vouchers)

Classification of Trajectories	***Housing Assistance Initial Value (1998-2000)***	***Housing Assistance Ending Value (2002-2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.1110	0.0634	-.0476	.000***	-42.88
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.2387	0.2833	.0446	.000***	18.68%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.2751	0.2358	-.0393	.044*	-14.29%

Low Increasing (n=903)	1.1984	1.5443	.3459	.006**	28.86%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	2.4760	2.8534	.3774	.018*	15.24%
High Decreasing (n=574)	1.1048	1.2466	.1418	.075	12.83%
High Increasing (n=221)	4.1857	5.4051	1.2194	.000***	29.13%
Chronics (n=247)	7.5209	8.5007	.9798	.017*	13.03%

***p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

As described in Chapter 3 "mixed land use" is also an important characteristic of social disorganization theories. It is expected more generally that places with different or mixed land use are places where strong ties will not develop among residents and accordingly social disorganization will be higher. Our data do not directly reflect this relationship (see Table 7.3). The crime free trajectory pattern has on average a slightly higher level of mixed land use than the high increasing trajectory patterns, and the low decreasing trajectory pattern has a higher proportions of mixed land use than any of the higher rate trajectory patterns. Looking at change over time we also do not find significant patterns. Perhaps the overall low level of mixed land use as defined in our study[2] is one reason for the lack of relationship we observe.

Overall, there was a good deal of stability in land use patterns over time, reflecting the stability of this distribution overall as described in Chapter 3. Only the high increasing trajectory pattern shows a statistically significant change between the initial and final period of observation. As expected a change to higher mixed land use is associated with this increasing

[2] We defined a street as having mixed land use when 25 to 75% of land use was residential; see Chapter 3 pages 19-23.

trajectory. Increases are also found in the low decreasing and high decreasing trajectory patterns, though these are not statistically significant, and of smaller magnitude.

Table 7.3: Risk Analysis for Mixed Land Use

Classification of Trajectories	***Mixed Land Use Initial Value (1991)***	***Mixed Land Use Ending Value (2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t Test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.0416	0.0432	.0017	.059	3.85%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.0464	0.0477	.0013	.281	2.80%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.0570	0.0592	.0023	.398	3.86%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.0454	0.0476	.0022	.564	4.85%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.0479	0.0445	-.0034	.706	-7.10%
High Decreasing (n=574)	0.0523	0.0540	.0017	.739	3.25%
High Increasing (n=221)	0.0407	0.0588	.0181	.045*	44.47%
Chronics (n=247)	0.0445	0.0526	.0081	.158	18.20%

*** p<.01, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Just as mixed land use is expected to impact upon the ability of communities to prevent social disorganization, population heterogeneity is seen to impact upon social cohesion and thus social control among community residents (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Kornhauser, 1978; Sampson & Groves, 1989). Ethnic and racial diversity has been assumed to make it more difficult for community members to communicate and collaborate. In this context, we would expect that higher crime trajectories would also have higher levels of population heterogeneity.

In this case, the overall patterns in our data are consistent with social disorganization theories. The lowest level of population heterogeneity is found in the crime free trajectory pattern (see Table 7.4). And the difference between the crime free street segments and each other pattern is large and statistically significant (see Appendix 1). The largest differences are found in the high crime trajectory groupings, which have more than 10 times the level of population heterogeneity as that of the crime free trajectory pattern. While the chronic group has a slightly lower level of population heterogeneity than the high crime trajectory patterns the differences are not statistically significant (see Appendix 1). In contrast, the low crime trajectory patterns have lower levels than the high and chronic patterns.

When we examine change over time, these observations are reinforced. For the high trajectory groupings we find that the high increasing pattern shows a strong (23 percent) and statistically significant increase in racial heterogeneity between the first and last years of observation. In contrast the high decreasing pattern shows a statistically significant decline in racial heterogeneity. The moderate stable group shows a slight increase, but not statistically significant at the five percent threshold. For the low rate groupings the pattern is the same. The increasing pattern shows a strong (29 percent) and statistically significant increase in racial heterogeneity in the second period compared to the first. The low decreasing pattern shows little change, and the low stable pattern shows a small absolute increase which is statistically significant because of the large number of segments (7,696) found in this trajectory pattern. While overall there is a 26 percent increase in racial heterogeneity in the crime free pattern, it is important to note that the absolute change for individual blocks is very small (.0009) in good part because the weighted average from the initial period was very low in this group.

Table 7.4: Risk Analysis for Racial Heterogeneity (Based on Public School Student Data)

Classification of Trajectories	*Heterogeneity (Student) Initial Value (1992-1995)*	*Heterogeneity (Student) Ending Value (2002-2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.0034	0.0043	.0009	.000**	26.47%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.0296	0.0315	.0018	.018*	6.08%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.0264	0.0253	-.0011	.386	-4.17%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.0300	0.0387	.0087	.000**	29.00%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.0399	0.0430	.0032	.087	8.02%
High Decreasing (n=574)	0.0379	0.0342	-.0039	.249	-10.29%
High Increasing (n=221)	0.0396	0.0486	.0090	.002**	22.73%
Chronics (n=247)	0.0331	0.0312	-.0019	.099	-5.74%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Social disorganization theorists have also seen distance to the city's geographic center (i.e., urbanization) as an important factor in understanding crime (see Table 7.5). More urbanized areas in a city are assumed to have a tendency towards greater social disorganization, and such urbanization is reflected at least in part by the closeness of an area to the city center. Overall our data support this idea of the relationship between closeness to the city center and crime. The highest crime trajectories are on average closest to the city's geographic center. Indeed the high activity trajectories are on average about 3.5 miles from the geographic center of the city while the low crime trajectories are about a mile farther out. The crime free trajectory pattern segments are on average most distant from the city center (i.e., approximately 5 miles). According to librarians at the Seattle Public Library, the cultural center of Seattle is considered to be the Westlake Center at the corner of 4th and Pine in downtown Seattle. Since the two locations are only .73 miles apart as the crow flies, we simply used the geographic center for the rest of the analyses. It is important to note that the designation of geographic center does not change over time. Thus, the t tests and change scores were not computed.

Table 7.5: Risk Analysis for Urbanization/Distance to Center of the City (miles)

Classification of Trajectories	***Distance to Geographic Center***	***Distance to Cultural Center***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	5.11	5.17
Low Stable (n=7,696)	4.88	4.95
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	4.06	4.09
Low Increasing (n=903)	4.60	4.58
Moderate Stable (n=292)	3.54	3.56
High Decreasing (n=574)	3.41	3.31
High Increasing (n=221)	3.76	3.68
Chronics (n=247)	3.57	3.39

The variables we have examined so far reflect social disorganization indirectly. In contrast, physical disorder is a direct and visceral indication of the social order of the street segments we examine. Looking at physical disorder incidents we find a direct and strong relationship with the trajectory patterns (see Table 7.6).

Consistent with social disorganization theory, we find that the number of physical disorder incidents increases as the levels of crime in trajectory patterns increase in the initial period of observations. This relationship is significant and strong across the trajectory groupings (see Appendix 1). By far the lowest number of physical disorder incidents is found in the crime free group. In the low rate trajectory groupings there is an increase in incidents of about four times, and in the high rate trajectory patterns this increase is more than tenfold as compared with the crime free trajectory pattern. For the chronic group the increase is much higher.

Looking at change over time, the relationships are also strong. For the high increasing and moderate stable trajectory patterns the number of physical disorder incidents increases, though the change is statistically significant only for the stable grouping. In contrast, in the high decreasing group there is a statistically significant decline in the number of physical disorder incidents in the final observation period. The same pattern emerges looking at the low rate trajectory patterns. In the low increasing group there is about a 40 percent increase in the number of physical disorder incidents, and the change is highly significant. There is a statistically significant though smaller decline in the low decreasing group. The low stable group shows almost no change during the period.

Table 7.6: Risk Analysis for Total Number of Physical Disorder Incidents

Classification of Trajectories	***Physical Disorder Initial Value (93-95)***	***Physical Disorder Ending Value (02-04)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.0373	0.0425	.0052	.012*	13.94%

Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.1455	0.1507	.0052	.307	3.57%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.1534	0.1308	-.0226	.013*	-14.73%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.1694	0.2410	.0716	.000***	42.27%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.3870	0.4840	.0970	.032*	25.06%
High Decreasing (n=574)	0.4344	0.3333	-.1011	.008**	-23.27%
High Increasing (n=221)	0.4736	0.5279	.0543	.383	11.47%
Chronics (n=247)	0.6221	0.6923	.0702	.366	11.28%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

These findings reflect a direct relationship not simply between the levels of physical disorder and crime in trajectories, but also between specific crime patterns over time at trajectories and physical disorder. Importantly, the relationships we observe are at the street segment level and not at the larger neighborhood or community level, suggesting once again the salience of social disorganization theory for the micro level of geography we examine. However, one should be cautious here as a number of scholars have argued that crime and physical disorder are both influenced by other social forces (Sampson & Raudenbush, 1999, Taylor, 1999). Accordingly, the direct relationship we observe might not reflect the influence of physical disorder on crime but rather the fact that both are determined by other factors. We discuss this issue more directly in Chapters 8 and 9.

Mediating Variables

As we noted in Chapter 3, in recent years a number of scholars have tried to identify "mediating factors" that reflect the extent to which communities can enforce norms and establish social control. A key variable in this regard has been the presence of unsupervised teens. Unsupervised teens are reflective of a more general failure to keep communities under control, and in this context we would expect higher numbers of unsupervised teens in areas that have higher levels of crime. This is clearly reflected in our data when we look at the total number of truant students, though the relationship is not consistent across all comparisons (see Table 7.7). Overall the crime free and the low crime rate patterns have on average around .04 unsupervised teens per segment. For the high crime trajectory patterns and the chronic trajectory segments the average rate is generally above one, with only the moderate stable group having an average of less than one truant student (.8276). The crime free and low crime trajectory patterns have in this regard significantly lower numbers of truant students than the high rate and chronic patterns (see Appendix 1).

Table 7.7 Risk Analysis for Truant Students/Unsupervised Teens

Classification of Trajectories	***Truant Students Initial Value (1992-1994)***	***Truant Students Ending Value (2002-2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.0434	0.0265	-.0169	.000***	-38.94%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.3559	0.2176	-.1383	.000***	-38.86%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.3623	0.1578	-.2045	.000***	-56.44%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.4101	0.5212	.1111	.002**	27.09%

Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.8276	0.5765	-.2511	.001**	-30.34%
High Decreasing (n=574)	1.1638	0.5482	-.6156	.000***	-52.90%
High Increasing (n=221)	1.0618	1.1327	.0709	.636	6.68%
Chronics (n=247)	1.1552	0.8205	-.3347	.012*	-28.97%

*** p<.01, ** p<.01, * p<.05

When we look at change over time, the results again follow what would be expected by social disorganization theory. Among the high crime trajectory patterns, the high decreasing pattern shows a significant decline of over 50 percent. The high increasing segments, in contrast, show a slight increase, though it is not statistically significant. The moderate stable trajectory pattern follows the trend of the high decreasing trajectory pattern. Looking at the low rate trajectory patterns, the low increasing segments show a significant increase in truant students of about 25 percent. The low decreasing segments show a statistically significant and stronger decrease. Again, the low stable segments follow the patterns of the low decreasing segments, though the size of the relationship is relatively modest. As we noted in Chapter 3, a new perspective of social disorganization theory focuses on what is generally termed collective efficacy (see Sampson et al., 1997; Sampson, 2004). Collective efficacy reflects the ability of a community to realize common values and regulate behavior in its boundaries.

We measured the percent of active voters on each street segment to assess collective efficacy. The findings are consistent with the expectations of social disorganization theorists that have developed the idea of collective efficacy. Voting behavior reflects the willingness to participate in public affairs, one of the key components of neighborhood collective efficacy. As expected the crime free and low activity segments have the highest rates of active voting and the chronic crime trajectory segments have the lowest evidence of voting participation (see Table 7.8). The differences between the chronic crime trajectory segments and the crime free and low rate trajectory patterns are statistically significant (see Appendix 1). Looking at change over time the patterns are less clear. The decreasing and increasing low and high rate trajectory segments evidence the same patterns. In each case there is a statistically significant decline in voter participation over time. The magnitude of the declines is also similar.

Table 7.8: Risk Analysis for Percentage of Active Voters (Collective Efficacy)

Classification of Trajectories	***% Active Voters Initial Value (1999)***	***% Active Voters Ending Value (2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t Test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.3534	0.3030	-.0504	.000**	-14.26%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.4238	0.3641	-.0597	.000***	-14.09%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.4164	0.3674	-.0491	.000***	-11.77%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.3151	0.2743	-.0408	.000***	-12.95%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.2472	0.2367	-.0105	.235	-4.25%
High Decreasing (n=574)	0.2388	0.2191	-.0197	.019*	-8.25%
High Increasing (n=221)	0.2089	0.1797	-.0292	.017*	-13.98%
Chronics (n=247)	0.1741	0.1558	-.0182	.135	-10.51%

*** p < .001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Summary

What is clear is that the structural variables that have been linked to crime in communities are also very salient for understanding crime at micro geographic levels. Of the six structural indicators of social disorganization that we examined, five are directly related to crime levels of trajectories. In two of the cases (population heterogeneity and physical disorganization) we also found strong and significant relationships to the shape of trajectory patterns. In the case of mediating factors of social disorganization both truant teens and voting behavior were strongly related to the level of crime in trajectory patterns. The number of truant teens was also strongly related to the overall changes we found in the trajectory pattern. Our data bring the first systematic evidence of the relevance of social disorganization theory for longitudinal patterns in micro-level geographic data.

Opportunity Theories and Crime and Trajectories of Crime at Street Segments

In Chapter 4 we examined the distribution of variables that reflect opportunity theories about crime. Key to these theories is the idea of routine activities (Cohen & Felson, 1979; Eck, 1995; Felson, 2001) and its salience for understanding crime in specific situations. Routine activities theory argues that crime occurs when three factors are present: 1) the absence of capable guardianship; 2) the presence of motivated offenders; 3) and the presence of suitable targets. Below we examine the relationship between each of these dimensions and crime trajectory patterns, again focusing on the levels of crime in trajectory patterns and change over time. We also examine accessibility and urban form, as opportunity theorists have also emphasized the urban backcloth of crime events (see Brantingham & Brantingham, 1993a, 1993b).

Motivated Offenders

As described in Chapter 4 if a student is either a truant or designated as a low academic achiever or both, they can be seen as high risk juveniles. The relationship between this measure of motivated offenders and the levels of crime in trajectory patterns is very strong. While the crime free trajectories have an average level of only .11 high risk juveniles per street segment for the first three year moving average, the chronic street segments have an average of over 3 (see Table 7.9). Among the low crime rate trajectory patterns the highest incidence of high risk juveniles is found in the low increasing group where the three year moving average is less than 1.1. All of the high rate trajectories have averages of over two. Differences between the high rate and low rate crime trajectory patterns are statistically significant (see Appendix 1).

Looking at the relationship between changes in this measure of motivated offenders and developmental patterns of trajectories, our data are again consistent with opportunity theories. While the high decreasing trajectory pattern shows a strong and statistically significant decline in the number of potential juvenile offenders by almost 40 percent, there is an increase (though not statistically significant) in the high increasing group. Similarly, in the low rate decreasing trajectory pattern there is a statistically significant 38 percent drop in the number of high risk juveniles, while in the low rate increasing trajectories there is a large and statistically significant increase of 43 percent. For the low stable and moderate rate trajectory patterns there are also declines in potential juvenile offenders, though of a much smaller magnitude than that found for the decreasing trajectories.

Table 7.9: Risk Analysis for High Risk Juveniles

Classification of Trajectories	*High Risk Juveniles (1992-1994)*	*High Risk Juveniles (2002-2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.1089	0.1011	-.0078	.081	-7.16%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.8961	0.7512	-.1450	.000***	-16.18%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.8505	0.5312	-.3193	.000***	-37.54%
Low Increasing (n=903)	1.0927	1.5703	.4777	.000***	43.72%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	2.0171	1.7591	-.2580	.128	-12.79%
High Decreasing (n=574)	3.0174	1.8316	-1.1858	.000***	-39.30%
High Increasing (n=221)	2.6878	3.1463	.4585	.225	17.06%
Chronics (n=247)	3.1822	2.4332	-.7490	.078	-23.54%

*** p< .001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Suitable Targets

As we noted in Chapter 4, a key component of opportunity theories is the presence of suitable targets (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1995; Cohen & Felson, 1979). All else being equal, it would be expected that as the number of suitable targets increases the number of crimes would also increase. We examine four measures reflecting the number and attractiveness of targets on a street segment: employment, residential population, retail sales; and the presence of public facilities.

When we look at the number of people who work on a street block in the initial observation period and the levels of crime of the trajectory patterns, our analyses once again confirm the basic propositions of opportunity theories (see Table 7.10). There are very large differences between the higher crime rate and the lower rate trajectory patterns in the initial observation year and these differences are statistically significant (see Appendix 1). For example, all of the low rate trajectory patterns have fewer than 30 employees on average on a block, while the high rate patterns have averages between 95 and almost 400. At the other end of the spectrum, the crime free trajectory segments have an average of only one employee, while the chronic trajectory segments have an average of 377. Looking at the change over time in employment and the trajectory patterns the relationship is less clear, but appears to follow opportunity theory in the sample. The low increasing trajectory pattern shows on average a modest increase in employment between the first observation years and the last years, while the low decreasing segments show a small decrease. The results here are not statistically significant at the traditional five percent threshold (though for the low decreasing pattern the p value is less than .10).

Table 7.10: Risk Analysis for Employment

Classification of Trajectories	***Employment (1998)***	***Employment (2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	1.0435	1.1617	.1182	.138	11.33%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	9.7915	9.8835	.0920	.857	0.94%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	15.9928	14.2862	-1.7065	.082	-10.67%

Low Increasing (n=903)	29.7941	35.8190	6.0250	.180	20.22%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	95.1176	82.4923	-12.6252	.014*	-13.27%
High Decreasing (n=574)	103.3303	103.9365	.6062	.928	0.59%
High Increasing (n=221)	136.4485	203.0454	66.5969	.191	48.81%
Chronics (n=247)	377.7459	329.6680	-48.0779	.212	-12.73%

***p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Looking at initial residential population as estimated by our measures of voter population and number of public school students our data again follow the predictions of opportunity theories. The lowest residential population is found among the crime free trajectory pattern, and the high rate patterns have substantially higher residential populations than the low rate patterns (see Table 7.11). It is interesting to note in this regard, that the crime free segments have statistically smaller average residential populations than the street segments in all of the other groupings (see Appendix 1). The relationships however are less clear within the broad groupings. Both the moderate stable and high increasing patterns have higher average residential populations than the chronic crime street segments. It is possible in this context that the population on chronic crime street segments consists of a greater proportion of extremely disenfranchised individuals who are far less likely to vote and ex-felons who have significant hurdles to manage before they are able to vote after release. Both of these populations are not represented in our estimate of residential population. This finding could also stem from abandonment of housing in chronically high crime places.

Looking at change over time, no clear pattern emerges. Overall, there is a decline in residential populations as we measure them among each of the trajectory patterns (aside from a miniscule increase in the low increasing pattern). As we noted earlier when discussing other measures, the lack of a strong relationship between residential population and the developmental patterns of the trajectories may be due in part due to confounding of this measure with other relevant variables. In the next chapter we will examine this question more directly. Since our measure of population is based on public school attendees and voter registration records, decreases in our population measure could reflect disenfranchisement with voting, a move from public to private schools, or some combination of those factors. Decreases could also be driven by population change (i.e., people moving off the street block).

Table 7.11: Risk Analysis for Total Residents

Classification of Trajectories	***Residents (1999, 2000)***	***Residents (2003, 2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	5.2476	5.1659	-.0817	.000***	-1.56%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	26.9852	25.6368	-1.3484	.000***	-5.00%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	25.4986	23.9704	-1.5283	.000***	-5.99%
Low Increasing (n=903)	33.0332	33.1561	.1229	.840	0.37%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	62.4418	56.8784	-5.5634	.000***	-8.91%
High Decreasing (n=574)	41.2422	36.2361	-5.0061	.000***	-12.14%

High Increasing (n=221)	65.6719	58.8326	-6.8394	.000***	-10.41%
Chronics (n=247)	60.8016	51.5688	-9.2328	.000***	-15.19%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Total retail sales again follow closely the expectation of opportunity theories (see Table 7.12). The lowest average retail sales in the first observation period are found among street segments in the crime free trajectories, and this pattern has significantly lower averages than other patterns we examine (see Appendix 1). The three lowest rate trajectory patterns in turn all have average sales per street segment less than $177,000, while the high rate and chronic trajectory street segments have average sales ranging between $901,000 and just over $3,744,000. The chronic street segments have by far the highest average retail sales with about 1.5 times the level of the next highest grouping (the high increasing trajectories). Again, the chronic street segment pattern is significantly different from all of other patterns (see Appendix 1).

In this case, we also find a modest relationship between the developmental patterns of trajectories and the changes between the first and last observation period. Surprisingly, all the low rate trajectory patterns except for low increasing have a statistically significant increase in average sales, while the increase in only one high rate pattern, high decreasing, is statistically significant.

Table 7.12: Risk Analysis for Total Retail Sales (in thousands of dollars)

Classification of Trajectories	*Total Retail Sales (1998)*	*Total Retail Sales (2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	10.851	20.010	9.16	.013*	84.40%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	117.153	172.598	55.45	.028*	47.33%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	176.693	258.500	81.81	.026*	46.30%
Low Increasing (n=903)	518.425	578.650	60.23	.796	11.62%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	1139.746	1355.356	215.61	.504	18.92%
High Decreasing (n=574)	901.714	1271.944	370.23	.036*	41.06%
High Increasing (n=221)	2451.764	3348.882	897.12	.203	36.59%
Chronics (n=247)	3744.425	5281.736	1537.31	.215	41.06%

***p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

As described in Chapter 4 the number of street segments with public facilities is relatively small. Moreover scholars have generally seen this element of attractiveness of places to offenders and victims to be spread across areas nearby such facilities (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1995). Accordingly, we measure crime attractors/crime generators by examining the total number of public or quasi-public facilities (community centers, parks, hospitals, libraries, middle and high schools) within 1,320 feet (one quarter mile). Measuring the contribution of public facilities to crime targets in this way we find a strong relationship between the levels of crime of trajectory patterns (see Table 7.13).

In this case, the chronic trajectory street segments have about twice the number of public facilities nearby as do the crime-free segments, and these differences are statistically significant (see Appendix 1). In this regard, the crime free segments have significantly fewer public facilities nearby than segments in any other trajectory group pattern. The high activity trajectory patterns in turn have higher numbers of public facilities nearby than do the low activity trajectory patterns. Overall, there is an increasing and statistically significant pattern of number of public facilities within a quarter mile of a street segment across the trajectory patterns (see Appendix 1). There is little variation in the percentage increases across trajectory patterns, although the percentage increase is just over seven percent for the chronic segments, and 14 percent for the high increasing pattern.

Table 7.13: Risk Analysis for Number of Public Facilities Within 1,320 Feet of a Street Segment

Classification of Trajectories	***# of Public Facilities Within 1,320 Feet (1989-1991)***	***# of Public Facilities Within 1,320 Feet (2002-2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	.4684	.5290	.0606	.000***	12.94%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	.5171	.5847	.0676	.000***	13.07%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	.6394	.7055	.0661	.000***	10.34%
Low Increasing (n=903)	.5899	.6663	.0764	.000***	12.95%

Moderate Stable (n=292)	.8733	.9635	.0902	.000***	10.33%
High Decreasing (n=574)	1.0331	1.1220	.0889	.000***	8.61%
High Increasing (n=221)	.7195	.8220	.1026	.014**	14.26%
Chronics (n=247)	1.0634	1.1390	.0756	.091	7.11%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Accessibility

As described in Chapter 4, accessibility of an area is generally seen to increase opportunities for crime (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1991; Roman, 2005). Our primary measures of accessibility are the number of bus stops on a street and whether a street is an arterial road. Opportunity theories predict that bus stops and arterial roads will bring both potential victims and motivated offenders to the same urban space, and thus creates a convergence of victims and offenders that facilitates crime (Cohen & Felson, 1979).

Our data confirm this idea at least in terms of the levels of crime found in the trajectory patterns (see Table 7.14). The crime free street segments have by far the lowest average number of bus stops in the initial observation period, and the chronic segments have the highest. The crime free segments in turn have significantly fewer bus stops per street segment than any of the other trajectory patterns (see Appendix 1). The differences between the low rate trajectory patterns and the high rate patterns are consistent. On average the high rate patterns have twice the number of bus stops as the low rate patterns. When we look at change over time, the single pattern observed is an overall decrease in the number of bus stops across the trajectory groupings.

Table 7.14: Risk Analysis for Number of Bus Stops

Classification of Trajectories	*Bus Stops (1997-1999)*	*Bus Stops (2002-2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	0.0850	0.0839	-.0011	.326	-1.31%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	0.2069	0.1959	-.0110	.000***	-5.32%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	0.2075	0.1980	-.0095	.017*	-4.58%
Low Increasing (n=903)	0.3355	0.3127	-.0229	.010*	-7.29%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	0.6164	0.5593	-.0571	.011*	-10.21%
High Decreasing (n=574)	0.5813	0.5523	-.0290	.019*	-4.99%
High Increasing (n=221)	0.7391	0.6817	-.0573	.011*	-7.77%
Chronics (n=247)	0.8637	0.8327	-.0310	.272	-3.59%

***p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Type of street is directly related to crime rates because it affects the amount of traffic that travels along the street. The amount of traffic in turn affects the number of people who are familiar with a place. Since our street network did not change over the study period, the t tests and change scores were not computed. Overall our data support the idea of the relationship between street type and crime. The likelihood of being an arterial road increases steadily (with the exception of high decreasing) from crime free to high chronic trajectory patterns (see Table

7.15). Chronic crime streets are over four times as likely to be arterial roads as are crime free segments.

Table 7.15: Risk Analysis for Arterial Roads

Classification of trajectories	***Arterial Roads (1989-2004)***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	.1967
Low Stable (n=7,696)	.2786
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	.2939
Low Increasing (n=903)	.3998
Moderate Stable (n=292)	.6575
Moderate Decreasing (n=574)	.6272
Moderate Increasing (n=221)	.7285
Chronics (n=247)	.8462

Guardianship

Guardianship is a key component of routine activities theory and represents an important element of opportunity theories more generally (Cohen & Felson, 1979; Felson, 2001, 2002). The absence of capable guardianship is the element that allows the convergence of motivated offenders and suitable targets to lead to a criminal event. We measure guardianship in three ways: by the presence of a police or fire station, by street lighting, and by the percentage of vacant land.

The presence of a police or fire station near a street segment would be expected to increase guardianship at places. At the same time, it is important to remember that police stations are "attractors" for motivated offenders in the sense that they are often brought back to police stations for processing and then if not held in custody allowed to leave. Our data appear to reflect this latter explanation for the levels of crime at the initial observation period (see Table 7.16). Chronic and high decreasing crime trajectory pattern street segments are more likely to have one or more police or fire stations nearby. Of course, this finding may also be the result of the confounding of other factors such as population density or closeness to the city center. It could also be a result of locating facilities 'where the crime is'. Again we find only small changes over time in the likelihood of street segments overall being close to a police or fire station.

Table 7.16: Risk Analysis for Number of Police/Fire Stations Within 1,320 Feet of Street Segment

Classification of Trajectories	***# of Police/Fire Stations (1989-1991)***	***# of Police/Fire Stations (2002-2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	.4684	.5290	.0606	.000***	12.94%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	.5171	.5847	.0676	.000***	13.07%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	.6394	.7055	.0661	.000***	10.34%
Low Increasing (n=903)	.5899	.6663	.0764	.000***	12.95%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	.8733	.9635	.0902	.000***	10.33%
High Decreasing (n=574)	1.0331	1.1220	.0889	.000***	8.61%

High Increasing (n=221)	.7195	.8220	.1026	.014**	14.26%
Chronics (n=247)	1.0634	1.1390	.0756	.091*	7.11%

***p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Following the pattern of other variables reflecting guardianship, street lighting as measured by number of watts on a street has the opposite relationship with crime levels of trajectory patterns than would be predicted (see Table 7.17). Higher crime rate patterns have much higher wattage on street segments in the initial observation period. In turn, overall there is a similar increase in wattage for all of the trajectory patterns across the study period. We think that these results again are likely to be strongly confounded, which suggests the importance of looking at the influence of the risk factors we have identified in the context of a multivariate analytic framework.

Table 7.17: Risk Analysis for Street Lighting (in Watts)

Classification of Trajectories	*Lighting Initial Value (1997-1999)*	*Lighting Ending Value (2002-2004)*	*Individual Block Change Over Time*	*Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks*	*Group Mean Change*
Crime Free (n=12,033)	212.8447	230.9359	18.0912	.000***	8.50%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	448.3398	494.1797	45.8398	.000***	10.22%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	514.9224	568.8314	53.9090	.000***	10.47%
Low Increasing (n=903)	684.7767	771.3843	86.6076	.000***	12.65%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	1127.0890	1227.9110	100.8219	.000***	8.95%

High Decreasing (n=574)	1159.2973	1287.5029	128.2056	.000***	11.06%
High Increasing (n=221)	1427.5716	1561.0256	133.4540	.000***	9.35%
Chronics (n=247)	2032.7260	2227.3010	194.5749	.000***	9.57%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

As we noted in Chapter 4, there is relatively little vacant land on Seattle street segments. At the same time, we do see significant differences reflecting opportunity perspectives (see Table 7. 18). The lowest proportion of vacant land is found on crime free, low stable, and low decreasing pattern street segments. Interestingly low increasing pattern street segments have relatively large percentages of vacant land. The relationships across street segments with higher levels of crime do not present a clear pattern, nor do changes across time.

Table 7.18: Risk Analysis for Percentage of Vacant Land

Classification of Trajectories	***% of Vacant Land (1991)***	***% of Vacant Land (2004)***	***Individual Block Change Over Time***	***Sig. of Paired Sample t test for Individual Blocks***	***Group Mean Change***
Crime Free (n=12,033)	.0170	.0128	-.0041	.000**	-24.71%
Low Stable (n=7,696)	.0179	.0152	-.0028	.000**	-15.08%
Low Decreasing (n=2,212)	.0192	.0173	-.0020	.271	-9.90%
Low Increasing (n=903)	.0334	.0292	-.0042	.262	-12.57%
Moderate Stable (n=292)	.0245	.0258	.0012	.764	5.31%

High Decreasing (n=574)	.0305	.0305	-.0001	.986	0.00%
High Increasing (n=221)	.0410	.0381	-.0028	.722	-7.07%
Chronics (n=247)	.0333	.0319	-.0014	.733	-4.20%

*** p<.001, ** p<.01, * p<.05

Summary

As with social disorganization variables we find overall strong consistency with what opportunity theorists would expect both in terms of the levels of crime found among the trajectory patterns, and in terms of developmental trends. Our 10 measures of motivated offenders, suitable targets and accessibility are all linked strongly to initial crime levels of trajectory patterns. The relationship of these factors to developmental trends, while not as uniform, follows the patterns that would be expected. In the case of guardianship the simple relationship between factors we measure and the trajectory patterns appears to follow an opposing trend compared to what would be predicted by routine activity and opportunity theories. However, this may be the result of confounding of such factors with many other elements of the crime equation.

Conclusions

Looking at risk factors related to developmental trajectories we find confirmation of both social disorganization and opportunity theories. Overall, street segments evidencing higher social disorganization are also found to have higher levels of crime. And for many social disorganization measures increasing trends of social disorganization over time were associated with increasing developmental trajectory patterns of crime, while decreasing trends in social disorganization were linked to decreasing crime trajectory patterns. Similarly, at least in the case of opportunity measures related to the presence of motivated offenders, the suitability of crime targets and their accessibility, we found that greater opportunities for crime were found at street segments in higher rate crime trajectories. In turn, it was often the case that increasing levels of crime opportunities over time was related to increasing rate crime trajectories, while decreasing opportunities was related to street segments being found in decreasing crime trajectories.

These data show more generally that the concentrations of characteristics of places that we identified in Chapters 3 and 4 are strongly related to the concentrations of crime in hot spots that we identified in Chapter 5. It is not simply that some street segments have greater concentrations of social disorganization or crime opportunities; it is that such places are also likely to show concentrations of crime. Hot spots of social disorganization and crime opportunities are in this sense risk factors for hot spots of crime.

We are not surprised by the strong relationships observed for routine activities measures in part because such theories have long emphasized the importance of the immediate situation to crime (see Clark 1980, 1983). But we think the identification of strong relationships between social disorganization measures and trajectory patterns is a particularly important finding. This is the first study we know of to examine the salience of social disorganization theory at such a micro geographic level. The fact that social disorganization variables are related to variability of crime at street segments suggests, as we argued in Chapter 2, that the street segment forms an important locus for interaction and identification of people in the city that applies more generally to the social patterns of these micro places.

At this juncture, we think it interesting that variables reflecting both social disorganization and opportunity theories are found to be risk factors in understanding trajectories of crime at place. While these theories are often seen as competing explanations for crime, our analyses so far suggest that they may both contribute to the development of crime at place. But before we begin to interpret these relationships it is important to examine the salience of both theoretical perspectives using multivariate models that allow us to control out for the confounding we have discussed in this chapter, and also to identify which factors (controlling for others) have the most important relationships to the developmental patterns we have observed in our data.

Chapter 8: Explaining Crime at Place

In the previous chapters our interest was primarily in description. We sought to identify how crime and other social and contextual characteristics varied across places and to examine whether the idea of hot spots could be applied not only to crime but also to social disorganization and opportunity variables that we identified as possible causal factors in understanding the criminology of place. Our data confirm prior studies that crime is concentrated at small geographic units of analysis, and that there are distinct developmental trends of crime at place across time. Our analyses in Chapter 6 confirmed not only that there are developmental trends, but that there is significant street to street variability in such trends suggesting the inherent importance of understanding causal processes at the level of street segments. In Chapters 3 and 4 we established not only that crime is clustered at place, but also that there is clustering of social disorganization and opportunity measures at street segments. There are, simply stated, hot spots of crime opportunities and hot spots of social disorganization at the very micro geographic level of street segments.

In Chapter 7 we provided an initial portrait of how the variability of social disorganization and opportunity factors and that of crime at place are related. Our description provided what is often called a “risk analysis” of factors related to crime at place. We identified clearly that crime at place is strongly related to the two main theoretical perspectives we have identified. Hot spots of social disorganization and crime opportunities do overlap with hot spots of crime. But in this chapter, we want to go beyond this simple description of the relationship between these perspectives and crime to develop an overall model of explanation for crime at place. When we draw these variables into a single overall model that describes membership in the trajectory patterns we have identified, do we provide a powerful explanation of the distribution of crime at street segments? In a context in which these perspectives and the individual measures they represent are used to understand trajectory membership, do we continue to find that both perspectives provide important information about crime at place?

While our work so far has established the relevance of both social disorganization and crime opportunities at places in identifying the developmental patterns of crime at place, we have not taken into account the fact that the variables we examine are themselves strongly related and accordingly, simple descriptive patterns may be misleading.[1] Our analyses so far have shown that specific measures reflecting social disorganization and crime opportunities vary directly with crime trajectories. But we have not yet examined which variables continue to maintain strong and independent effects when they are examined in the context of a larger model that distinguishes factors that predict trajectory pattern membership.

This is our goal in the present chapter, in which we provide a broad quantitative assessment of the factors that explain developmental crime patterns at places. We focus on two separate types of analyses. In the first and main analysis, we ask whether specific measures are relevant for understanding trajectory patterns generally. In this case we use a type of statistical analysis called “multinomial logistic regression” (Begg & Gray, 1984; Long, 1997). Using logistic regression approaches, we also examine separately trajectory pattern membership for two specific comparisons: high decreasing versus high increasing trajectories; and low increasing

[1] This problem is often stated in terms of “confounding” of effects of independent variables (Greenland et al., 1999; Meinert, 1986; Robins, 1989; Weisburd & Britt, 2007). When two variables are strongly related a bivariate analysis will not allow the researcher to distinguish between the independent effect of the variable of interest from the effect observed, which includes that effect as well as a spurious component due to the correlation with the third variable. For example, in measuring the effect of a specific treatment for drug abuse, the researcher must account for the effect of “creaming” of subjects (Larzelere et al., 2004; Miller et al., 2004; Rhodes et al., 2001). A simple bivariate analysis showing that “treated” individuals did better than untreated offenders would likely overestimate the influence of treatment since it does not take into account the possible explanation that “volunteers” who chose treatment may be predisposed to doing better. A model that examined treatment while controlling for “predispositions” for improvement in outcomes would take this confounding into account.

versus low decreasing trajectories. We think that these comparisons provide a particularly important context for assessing the impact of social disorganization and opportunity variables in understanding developmental patterns of crime at street segments.

An Overall Model for Explaining Developmental Trajectories of Crime at Place

Our dependent variable in these analyses is trajectory classification, which includes the eight trajectory patterns defined in Chapter 5: crime free, low stable, low decreasing, low increasing, moderate stable, high decreasing, high increasing and chronic trajectories. Our statistical problem is that we want to develop a model that would simultaneously allow us to assess the placement of street segments in each of these patterns. Traditional statistical approaches to categorical or nominal level dependent variables have generally constrained the dependent variable to two choices (Agresti, 1996; Long, 1997; Reynolds, 1977). Accordingly, we might have conducted a separate statistical analysis for each of the possible comparisons in our study (e.g. crime free versus low stable, crime free versus low decreasing, etc.). But our main question is whether the variables examined impact upon trajectory pattern membership, not whether they predict membership in one specific pattern as compared with another. Moreover, if we take this approach then each of our comparisons would be based on different samples, and those samples would have varied a good deal because our trajectory patterns range in size from about 200 to 12,000 street segments. The statistical problem here is that the varying sample sizes would then result in incorrect tests of statistical significance levels.[2] Multinomial logistic regression provides a straightforward solution to these problems because it allows a simultaneous examination of the different possible comparisons (Agresti, 1996; Begg & Gray, 1984; Long, 1997; Peng & Nichols, 2003; Weisburd & Britt, 2007). It provides both an overall assessment of

[2] This is because the standard errors of the estimates would be over or underestimated depending on the specific samples used (see Weisburd & Britt, 2007)

the statistical importance of the measures examined in predicting trajectory pattern, as well as a specific set of coefficients for understanding the varying effects of those factors across different sets of comparisons.

In defining our model we included all of the independent variables examined in Chapter 7. Table 8.1 provides a basic description of those variables including a definition of how they are measured in the multinomial regression analysis. We also include two new sets of variables that we thought critical for developing an understanding of developmental trajectory patterns. The first are simply time varying measures that take characteristics that we have measured over time. For example in the case of unsupervised juveniles (drawn from the social disorganization perspective) we created a variable that represents the change in the number of truant juveniles between the first three years of measurement (1992-1994) and the last three years (2002-2004). This is often called a difference of moving averages (Baller et al., 2000). Change measures are included in the model for all variables which we have sufficient data to compute a valid measure of change over time (see Table 8.1). We also created a spatial lag term which reflects the average number of crimes on street segments within one quarter of a mile of the segment examined. A spatial lag term (Anselin, 1988; Anselin et al., 2000) is a variable that averages the neighboring values of a location (the value of each neighboring location is multiplied by the spatial weight and then the products are summed). Spatial lag terms allow us to take into account in our model that some of the relationships observed may be affected by the crime levels on nearby street segments (Rosenfeld et al., 2007). Our spatial lag term captures the change in crime rates for the neighboring streets (i.e., within one quarter of a mile) between the first and last three years of observation. Finally, we include a measure of the exact length of the street segments. This allows us to control for the variation in density that might occur when 100 residents are distributed along a 100 foot street segment versus when 100 residents live on a 5,000 foot street segment.

Table 8.1: Description of included variables and mean and standard deviation for both starting values and change variables (when applicable)

Variable Name	*Description*	*Beginning Mean (S.D.)*	*Change Mean (S.D.)*
Social Disorganization			
Property Value	Residential property values (combination of weighed ranking of single family housing and multi-family housing of a given street)	4.491 (3.608)	N/A
Mixed Land Use	Mixed Land Use (dichotomous variable, representing whether the place has mixture of between 25 percent and75 percent of residential and other types of land use)	.04 (.207)	N/A
Physical Disorder	The total number of physical disorder incidents (Sum of the incidents on each street)	.112 (.379)	.005 (.410)
Housing Assistance	Combination of public housing and Section 8 voucher distribution (Sum the number of unit of public housing and the number of Section 8 vouchers given out on a street)	.375 (4.615)	N/A
Truant Juveniles	Total number of truant juveniles	.244 (.834)	-.088 (.691)
Racial Heterogeneity	Racial heterogeneity of public school students (The probabilities of each racial group to encounter another out-group member were computed and averaged to form an overall racial heterogeneity index)	.017 (.038)	.001 (.036)
% Active voters	Percent of active voters out of all the registered voters	.375 (.317)	N/A
Urbanization	Distance of a street to the center of city (The	255.712	N/A

Variable Name	***Description***	***Beginning Mean (S.D.)***	***Change Mean (S.D.)***
	distance is divided by 100 ft to adjust the scale).	(117.415)	
Opportunity			
High Risk Juveniles	Total number of truants or low academic achievers	0.615 (2.102)	-0.097 (1.616)
Employment	Total number of employees	14.914 (127.245)	0.118 (106.186)
Total Retail Sales	Total retail sales in dollars (divided by 1,000)	1.750 (27.670)	N/A
Bus Stops	Total number of bus stops	0.176 (0.510)	N/A
Vacant Land	Percentage of vacant land	0.019 (0.103)	-0.003 (.079)
Police/Fire Station	Total number of police or fire stations within one quarter mile (1,320 feet)	0.068 (0.260)	N/A
Public Facilities	Total number of public facilities (community centers, parks, libraries, middle/high schools, hospitals) within one quarter mile (1,320 feet)	0.534 (0.845)	N/A
Street Lighting	Total number of watts (divided by 100)	3.952 (6.937)	N/A
Residents	Total number of residents (Sum of the registered voters and public school students)	17.787 (27.213)	-0.946 (7.077)
Arterial Road	Is the street segment an arterial road? (yes/no, static)	0.270 (0.442)	N/A
Length	Total number of feet (divided by 100, static)	3.869 (2.516)	N/A
Spatial Lag	Average number of crimes on neighboring street segments within one quarter of a mile.	4.926 (5.232)	-0.988 (1.930)

Table 8.2 presents the overall model fit statistics and likelihood ratio tests for the statistical significance of the independent variables. We report both the Cox and Snell (1989) and Nagelkerke (1991) Pseudo R^2 statistics. While there is no direct measure for model fit for multinomial or logistic regressions, as there is for ordinary regression techniques, these measures are commonly used to provide an overall sense of the prediction level of a model. The Pseudo R^2 values produced in our model are .63 (Cox and Snell) and .68 (Nagelkerke). Cox and Snell's estimate is generally considered overly conservative in cases where the prediction value is high, such as ours (Nagelkerke, 1991).

How well does this suggest we have done in predicting patterns of developmental trajectories of crime at place? In a recent article in the *Crime and Justice* series, Weisburd and Piquero (2008) examined variance explained in tests of criminological theories in the American Society of Criminology journal *Criminology*. Their results suggest that in comparison to studies more generally we are doing extremely well. The median value for R^2 in that study was only .36, and a quarter of the studies examined had values of less than .20. While the number of Pseudo R^2 statistics examined was relatively small, they overall had on average even lower R^2 values than variance explained statistics in ordinary regression analyses. The average R^2 value for person-based studies was about .30. In this context our Pseudo R^2 value above .60 implies that we have been able to explain a good deal of the variability in trajectory pattern membership. In this context, we can say that much of the variability in trajectory pattern membership can be systematically identified. As we argue in the concluding chapter (see Chapter 9), this not only suggests that we have considerable understanding already of the factors that influence crime at place, but also that this understanding provides a strong basis for developing effective crime prevention interventions.

It is interesting in this regard to compare the overall degree of explanation of the two theoretical perspectives that we have used to understand crime at place in this report. Accordingly, we ran separate regressions which included only the social disorganization and only the opportunity measures. While these results should be viewed with some caution because they do not account for the possibility that variance of one perspective is being spuriously accounted for by related variables of another perspective, they suggest again that both perspectives are providing a strong explanation for developmental patterns of crime at place. Both perspectives provide Nagelkerke R^2 values of above .50. While the opportunity perspective provides a larger value (.66 versus .51) we do not think that the differences allow us to draw strong conclusions.

Table 8.2 also suggests that the individual variables examined continue to maintain significant relationships with trajectory pattern membership in this multivariate context. An overall test of significance for each measure on the general allocation of street segments into trajectory patterns is provided by the Likelihood Ratio Test (see Weisburd & Britt, 2007). The first observation to be drawn from this table is that the individual measures overall have a strongly statistically significant impact on membership in trajectory groups. Irrespective of which trajectory, they help us to distinguish the choice of being in one of the eight trajectory patterns.

Nearly all of the measures examined are statistically significant at the .001 level, suggesting that the observed effects are not due simply to chance. In this regard it is important to note that the very large overall sample size of our study means that even relatively smaller variable effects observed in our analyses can be distinguished from random noise in the distributions examined (Weisburd & Britt, 2007). At the same time there are specific variables that appear to have little or no impact on the selection into a specific developmental trajectory pattern. Following our bivariate results, mixed land use is not a significant factor in understanding trajectory pattern membership. We suggested in Chapter 7 that this might be the case because of our conservative definition of mixed land. While racial heterogeneity, a component of the social disorganization perspective, had strong and significant bivariate relationships with trajectory group pattern, when we examine this variable in a model which controls both for other social disorganization measures and measures of criminal opportunities it is not statistically significant.[3] Total retail business sales and whether a street segment is located close to a fire or police station, elements of the opportunity perspective, also do not have statistically significant impacts in our model.

But the important story here is the statistical significance of most of the variables examined, even in this multivariate context in which many factors are controlled for simultaneously. This suggests again that social disorganization and opportunity factors are both very important in understanding why crime develops in specific street segments. Importantly, the effects observed remain despite our taking into account spatial lag terms for crime levels which would indicate and distinguish larger area effects. While the spatial lag terms have very high levels of statistical significance, they do not minimize the effects of social disorganization and opportunity measures at the street segment level.

[3] One possible explanation for the loss of statistical significance would be multicollinearity or model instability. We ran several sensitivity analyses to explore the potential confounding effects. For example, residential population and racial heterogeneity are highly correlated and the inclusion of residential population shared the variability originally explained by racial heterogeneity. This makes sense as both variables were constructed (partially) using data collected from public school students. The shared data source explains the possible multicollinearity problem; however, the findings also show the confounding nature of certain variables across both theoretical perspectives.

Table 8.2: Likelihood Ratio Tests for the Multinomial Logistic Regression

Variable	-2 Log Likelihood	LR Chi-Square
Property Value (B)	38,090	215.262***
Housing Assistance (B)	37,940	71.507***
Physical Disorder (B)	38,340	472.143***
Truant Juveniles (B)	37,910	37.331***
Racial Heterogen.(B)	37,880	9.941
% Active Voters (B)	38,010	136.047***
Urbanization	38,320	449.707***
Mixed Land Use	37,870	2.503
Segment Length	38,000	128.065***
Physical Disorder (C)	38,080	212.081***
Truant Juveniles (C)	37,930	59.490***
Racial Heterogen.(C)	37,890	12.921
High Risk Juvs. (B)	37,980	108.287***
Employees (B)	39,570	1,703***
Total Retail Sales (B)	37,880	6.586
Bus Stops (B)	37,920	51.651***
% Vacant Land (B)	37,900	24.828**
Street Lighting (B)	38,020	149.097***
Residents (B)	43,100	5,226***
Spatial Lag (B)	38,360	489.153***
Police/Fire Station	37,880	11.372
Public Facilities	37,930	59.751***
Arterial Road	38,130	257.083***
High Risk Juvs. (C)	37,900	25.351**
Employees (C)	38,100	229.626***
% Vacant Land (C)	37,890	17.806*
Residents (C)	37,980	110.355***
Spatial Lag (C)	38,180	311.866

df = 7; B = beginning value; C = change variable; * $p < .05$, ** $p < .01$, *** $p < .01$

While the likelihood ratio test allows us to examine the overall significance of variables in the model, it does not provide a measure of the size of the effect of specific variables examined. To do this we have to look at the individual parameter estimates. One complication of using multinomial regression is that the parameter estimates are given for each trajectory pattern relative to an excluded or baseline category. In our analysis, the crime free trajectory pattern is the reference group or excluded category both because it includes the largest number of cases, and thus provides statistical stability to the overall model, and because it provides a logical comparison group in understanding the analysis. In this context we are comparing all of the trajectory groups with some criminal activity to a pattern that is distinguished by being almost crime free during the observation period. Table 8.3 lists the odds ratios for each of the seven other trajectory patterns relative to the excluded category. Following the results of our likelihood ratio tests we do not interpret parameter estimates for non-significant variables.[4]

[4] Following our approach of first identifying whether the overall effect of a variable is significant in determining trajectory pattern membership, we assume that the individual comparisons cannot be reliably interpreted when the likelihood test is non-significant.

Table 8.3: Odds Ratios from the Multinomial Logistic Regression of Impact of Social Disorganization and Opportunity Variables (Including Change Variables) on Trajectory Group Pattern Membership (Crime Free Pattern is the Reference Group)

Variable	Low Stable	Low Decreasing	Low Increasing	Moderate Stable	High Decreasing	High Increasing	Chronic
Social Disorganization							
Property Value (B)	0.930***	0.939***	0.878***	0.825***	0.758***	0.815***	0.704***
Housing Assistance (B)	1.021	1.054**	1.076***	1.085***	1.070**	1.094***	1.104***
Physical Disorder (B)	7.335***	6.022***	8.236***	17.286***	15.302***	19.014***	25.634***
Truant Juveniles (B)	1.653**	1.719**	2.296***	2.518***	1.993**	3.330***	2.585***
Racial Heterogen.(B)	1.199	2.526	0.095	0.894	0.069	0.047	0.010
% Active Voters (B)	0.704***	0.816	0.279***	0.077***	0.188***	0.044***	0.041***
Urbanization	0.998***	0.994***	0.999**	0.996***	0.995***	0.997***	1.000
Mixed Land Use	1.119	1.142	1.220	1.152	1.267	1.233	1.565
Segment Length	1.035**	1.144	0.973	1.042	1.050*	1.036	1.021
Physical Disorder (C)	3.025***	2.417***	3.810***	4.888***	3.662***	5.045***	6.169***
Truant Juveniles (C)	1.358*	1.284	2.089***	1.843***	1.505**	2.497***	1.969***
Racial Heterogen.(C)	0.160*	0.153	0.187	0.982	0.019*	5.362	0.009
Opportunity							
High Risk Juvs. (B)	1.860***	1.737***	1.903***	2.034***	2.292***	2.009***	2.218***

Variable	Low Stable	Low Decreasing	Low Increasing	Moderate Stable	High Decreasing	High Increasing	Chronic
Employees (B)	1.065***	1.067***	1.071***	1.074***	1.073***	1.074***	1.075***
Bus Stops (B)	1.288***	1.253**	1.439***	1.631***	1.636***	1.777***	1.831***
% Vacant Land (B)	2.204***	2.033*	4.486***	1.384	1.311	4.300*	1.482
Street Lighting (B)	1.045***	1.037***	1.070***	1.070***	1.070***	1.079***	1.089***
Residents (B)	1.196***	1.187***	1.221***	1.237***	1.229***	1.239***	1.241***
Spatial Lag (B)	1.109***	1.050***	1.171***	1.153***	1.124***	1.210***	1.224***
Police/Fire Station	1.131	1.207	1.250	0.913	1.446*	1.046	1.555*
Public Facilities	1.079**	1.148***	1.024	1.282**	1.446***	0.992	1.237*
Arterial Road	1.812***	1.938***	1.976***	5.435***	4.255***	6.494***	10.870***
Total Retail Sales (B)	1.005	1.006	1.007	1.007	1.006	1.008	1.007
High Risk Juvs. (C)	1.229***	1.126*	1.259***	1.226**	1.254***	1.205**	1.242**
Employees (C)	1.026***	1.026***	1.031***	1.031***	1.031***	1.032***	1.031***
% Vacant Land (C)	2.848***	2.734*	2.485	4.988*	4.900**	4.155	5.803
Residents (C)	1.052***	1.043***	1.078***	1.067***	1.050***	1.062***	1.055***
Spatial Lag (C)	1.069***	.878***	1.224***	1.104**	0.998	1.270***	1.170***

n = 24,023; B = beginning value; C = change variable * $p < .05$, ** $p < .01$, *** $p < .01$
Cox and Snell Pseudo $R^2 = .632$; Nagelkerke Pseudo $R^2 = .684$

Social Disorganization Variables

We identified a series of structural variables reflecting social disorganization in earlier chapters. A key measure of this dimension is SES. We have two measures of SES, residential property values and housing assistance. Residential property value varies in influence across the seven comparisons with crime free trajectories, though the direction of change is consistent. For a unit increase in rank in residential property value (in a scale ranging from 0 to 10) there is between a 6 and 30 percent decrease in the likelihood of being in one of the seven examined trajectory patterns as opposed to the crime free trajectory pattern. The largest effect is found in the chronic trajectory group and the smallest effect in the low stable pattern. The results here show a strong and consistent relationship for SES with higher level crime trajectories showing the largest differences, and accordingly reinforce the idea that SES is an important part of understanding crime at place, even after we control for opportunity factors that relate to SES such as employment, land use and number of residents on the street segment.

Housing assistance also reflects SES at the street segment. Our measure here combined units of public housing and the number of Section 8 vouchers. While most street segments had very low values for this measure, a few street segments (i.e. those in public housing communities) had very high values (see Chapter 4). Again, the direction of change is similar across the comparisons, and the magnitudes follow what social disorganization theory would predict. A unit increase in public assistance for the two lowest crime trajectory patterns leads to an increase of between 2 and 5 percent in the odds of trajectory membership in that pattern as opposed to the crime free pattern. For the chronic trajectory pattern the increase is 10 percent.

Another key structural variable reflecting social disorganization is mixed land use. We have already noted that mixed land use does not significantly impact trajectory membership, though its impacts are consistent and in the expected direction for the comparisons with crime free segments. Racial heterogeneity also was not found to be statistically significant in this multivariate model though it was highly significant in our risk analysis. Indeed, in this case the effects vary in direction and do not follow the pattern that would be expected by social disorganization theory. It seems reasonable to conclude from this that elements of social disorganization reflecting variability in land use or population are not important predictors of developmental trajectories of crime at place once other variables reflecting social disorganization and criminal opportunities are taken into account.

Another structural component of social disorganization theories--distance from the city center--does have a strong and significant impact upon trajectory pattern membership. A relatively short one hundred foot increase in distance from the city center leads to a less than one percent decrease in the likelihood of being in the low, moderate or high trajectory groups. But if we examine, for example, the impact of a half mile distance, we can get a sense for the effect of this factor. Here, being 2,500 feet from the city center decreases the likelihood of being in the high decreasing patterns as opposed to the crime free group pattern by fully 11.8 percent. The effects here, however, are not fully consistent. There is no significant effect of distance to the city center in distinguishing the chronic trajectory group from the no crime pattern. This suggests that while overall the crime free pattern segments are more distant from the city center than other trajectory patterns, it is not a distinguishing characteristic for chronic trajectory street segments. This reinforces our observation earlier in the report that hot spots of crime are spread throughout the city. Moreover, while the low and high crime trajectory patterns are significantly different from the crime free trajectory pattern, there is not a clear pattern among the low and high crime trajectory groupings.

Physical disorder is the most direct indicator of social disorganization, and its relationship to developmental trajectories of crime at street segments is very strong. The smallest coefficients are found for the low crime trajectory patterns and the largest for the higher crime trajectory patterns. But it is important to note the magnitude of effects. Even for the low stable trajectory pattern, each additional report of physical disorder leads to a sevenfold increase in the odds of being in the low stable as opposed to the crime free trajectory pattern. In our sample a street segment is 25 times more likely to be in the chronic trajectory group as opposed to the crime free pattern, if it has an additional physical disorder incident. Change in physical disorder is also strongly related to trajectory group pattern membership with increases in incidents associated with higher likelihoods of being in the higher crime rate trajectory patterns.

Mediating variables that reflect the ability of communities, or in this case street segments, to regulate behavior are also important in the social organization framework. A key variable in this context is truant juveniles. An additional truant juvenile on a street segment significantly increases the likelihood of being in any of the crime trajectory patterns as compared with the crime free trajectory pattern. Increased truancy has the largest impact in the high increasing trajectory pattern and the chronic trajectory group where an additional truant juvenile resident increases the likelihood of group membership by 2 ½ to more than 3 times. The change variable also influences the likelihood of group membership, and suggests a strong relationship between increasing truancy and increasing crime, though we will examine this finding more directly in the next sections.

We used percent of active voters as an indicator of collective efficacy at the street segment level. Overall, the measure follows what would be expected from social disorganization theory with the largest impacts being found in the chronic trajectory group and high increasing trajectory pattern. At the same time, this measure is not significant in making comparisons between the low decreasing and crime free patterns. The size of the effect is overall very meaningful. In the case where there are no active voters as contrasted with a situation where all eligible residents are active voters, the probability of being in the chronic trajectory group compared with the no crime trajectory pattern decreases almost 96 percent.

Opportunity and Routine Activities

Accessibility of an area is generally seen to increase opportunities for crime (Levine & Wachs, 1986; Rengert et al., 2005). We have two main measures of accessibility: the number of bus stops on a street and whether the street is an arterial road. Our data strongly suggest that bus stops are associated with more crime. Even in the low decreasing trajectory group (which shows the smallest effect) more bus stops increase the likelihood of being in that trajectory pattern as contrasted with the crime free trajectory pattern. For each bus stop there is an increase of about 25 percent in the odds of membership in the low stable trajectory pattern. The increase in the odds for a bus stop in the chronic group is more than 80 percent. The other groups fall somewhere between, overall following the theory that bus stops create greater accessibility and increase the likelihood of crime.

Additionally, being on an arterial road increases crime risks. Arterial streets are more than 10 times more likely to be in the chronic group as contrasted with the crime free trajectory pattern. Arterial roads are about twice as likely to be in the low rate trajectory patterns as in the crime free trajectory pattern. Overall this indicates that crime is higher on arterial roads and the impact is much more significant in higher crime trajectories.

A key component of opportunity theories of crime is the concept of motivated offenders (Cohen, 1981; Cohen & Felson, 1979). In our analysis we used the total number of truants and low academic achievers on a block to reflect "high risk" juveniles, or potential motivated offenders. The distribution of this measure, though highly correlated with the truant students measure used to reflect the social disorganization perspective, captures in our view a more general measure of "motivated offenders." The variable has strong impacts on trajectory pattern membership and follows overall expected patterns. For the moderate, high and chronic trajectory patterns, each additional high risk juvenile doubles the odds of being in those groups as contrasted with the no crime trajectory pattern. Change in high risk juveniles over time also distinguishes between the crime trajectories and the crime free street segments. However, there do not appear to be strong differences in effects across the crime trajectory patterns.

A second component of routine activities is the number of suitable targets. In this regard, the larger the number of employees the less likely a segment is to be in the crime free trajectory pattern. The effects are largest in the high crime patterns, where an additional employee on a block increases the likelihood of being in high or chronic trajectory patterns as contrasted with the crime free trajectory pattern by about 7 ½ percent. It should be noted that the number of employees on street segments varies between none and over 7,000. The change variable also distinguishes the crime free trajectory pattern from others.

Looking at residential population our findings are reinforced. The effects here are very large, with fewer residents being associated with an increased likelihood of membership in the crime free trajectory pattern. An additional resident on a block increases the odds of being in the chronic group as opposed to the crime free pattern by almost 25 percent. Clearly residential population is a critical factor in explaining crime at street segments. Even in the low stable trajectory pattern, an additional resident increases the odds by almost 20 percent. Again the change variable follows a similar pattern, though in this case comparisons between the increasing and decreasing trajectory patterns are particularly interesting. While the increase of one resident over time leads to a four percent greater likelihood of being in the low decreasing trajectory pattern as contrasted with the crime free trajectory pattern, it leads to almost an eight percent increase in the low increasing trajectory pattern. Less dramatically but in the same direction, the value is five percent in the high decreasing pattern versus six percent in the high increasing trajectory pattern.

As noted earlier, retail business sales as a measure of suitable targets does not have a statistically significant impact in our model, though it follows the expected pattern in our data with higher sales associated with membership in the crime trajectory patterns as opposed to the crime free trajectory pattern. The presence of public facilities within a quarter mile of a street segment decreases the probability of being in the crime free trajectory pattern. The largest impact is found in the chronic trajectory group, where having a public facility such as a community center, park, library, middle and high school, or hospital, within a quarter mile increases the likelihood of being in that group by about 25 percent. In our data, it is difficult to identify whether such facilities influence the number of suitable targets or motivated offenders, and indeed this measure may represent both constructs. Interestingly, this measure was not significant for both the low increasing and high increasing trajectory pattern comparisons.

As we noted in Chapter 7, the presence of a police station or fire station within a quarter of a mile does not significantly increase guardianship and decrease crime in our data. Importantly, the multivariate analysis suggests that the finding of increasing crime with the presence of fire and police stations in Chapter 7 is spurious. However, street lighting continues to have a strong and positive effect on developmental trajectories. Here we find that an increase in wattage on a street increases the likelihood of membership in all of the trajectory patterns as contrasted with the crime free trajectory pattern. The largest effects are found in the high increasing trajectory pattern and chronic trajectory group where an increase of one hundred watts of light increases the likelihood of being in those groups by eight to nine percent. Again, we are faced with the finding that more street lighting appears to increase the likelihood of membership in higher crime trajectories. And this finding holds true when controlling for the full range of variables we have included in our model. Of course, we cannot distinguish whether lighting was increased in response to a prior crime problem. It may also be that the long-held assumption that street lighting reduces crime is spurious or that the relationship of lighting to crime is too complex to be accurately parsed using total crime over both daytime and nighttime hours.

Vacant land also suggests a lack of guardianship. While the proportion of vacant land in Seattle street segments is relatively low, the proportion of vacant land does have an important impact on developmental crime trajectories. However, the largest influences are found in the low crime trajectory patterns and not in the higher crime trajectory patterns. This suggests a non-linear relationship in which street segments with higher proportions of vacant land are more likely to have crime, but they are not as likely to be in the highest rate crime trajectory patterns. Perhaps this reflects a balance between guardianship and crime opportunities. At some level, when most of the land is vacant there may be less guardianship, but there also may be fewer opportunities for crime. It is interesting however, that when we turn to the change variable, we do find that increases in vacant land are associated more strongly with membership in the highest crime rate trajectory patterns.

Comparing Increasing and Decreasing Crime Trajectories

As we noted in Chapter 7, the low decreasing and increasing, and high decreasing and increasing trajectory patterns provide particularly interesting comparisons which allow us to more directly examine change variables. In the multinomial logistic regression we compared all trajectory patterns to the crime free pattern and provided an overall assessment of the importance of social disorganization and opportunity variables in explaining developmental trajectories of crime at place. We want to turn here to the specific question of which factors distinguish increasing from decreasing trajectory patterns. Accordingly, we present two simple logistic regression analyses which compare low increasing/decreasing trajectory patterns, and high increasing/decreasing trajectory patterns. As illustrated in Tables 8.4 and 8.5 these models appear to fit less strongly to the data in our sample, though the levels of explanation are still robust. The Nagelkerke Pseudo R^2 for the low crime trajectory patterns is .33, and for the high crime trajectory patterns, it is .30.

Table 8.4: Comparison of Low Increasing Trajectory Pattern vs. Low Decreasing Pattern

Variable	Beta	Standard Error	Odds Ratio
Social Disorganization			
Property Value (B)	-.048	.019	.953*
Housing Assistance (B)	.035	.020	1.036
Physical Disorder (B)	.379	.148	1.461*
Truant Juveniles (B)	.407	.172	1.502*
Racial Heterogeneity (B)	-2.748	1.663	.064
% Active Voters (B)	-.660	.224	.517**
Urbanization	.004	.000	1.004***
Mixed Land Use	.008	.214	1.008
Segment Length	-.173	.026	.841***
Physical Disorder (C)	.530	.126	1.699***
Truant Juveniles (C)	.611	.121	1.842***
Racial Heterogeneity (C)	.401	1.339	1.494
Opportunity			
High Risk Juveniles (B)	.034	.072	1.035
Employees (B)	.003	.001	1.003***
Bus Stops (B)	.119	.083	1.127
% Vacant Land (B)	1.109	.539	3.031*
Street Lighting (B)	.032	.007	1.033***
Residents (B)	.028	.003	1.028***
Total Retail Sales (B)	.001	.002	1.001
Police/Fire Station	.245	.162	1.278
Public Facilities	-.121	.059	.886*
Arterial Road	-.053	.127	.948
High Risk Juveniles (C)	.096	.049	1.101
Employees (C)	.003	.001	1.003**
% Vacant Land (C)	-.049	.607	.952
Residents (C)	.040	.007	1.041***
Spatial Lag (B)	.104	.011	1.110***
Spatial Lag (C)	.328	.028	1.388***
Constant	-1.901	.280	.149***

n = 3,105; B = beginning value; C = change variable; * $p < .05$ ** $p < .01$ *** $p < .001$
Cox and Snell Pseudo R^2 = .233; Nagelkerke Pseudo R^2 = .332

Table 8.5: Comparison of High Increasing Trajectory Pattern vs. High Decreasing Pattern

Variable	Beta	Standard Error	Odds Ratio
Social Disorganization			
Property Value (B)	.052	.037	1.053
Housing Assistance (B)	.030	.012	1.030*
Physical Disorder (B)	.410	.161	1.506*
Truant Juveniles (B)	.442	.169	1.556**
Racial Heterogeneity (B)	-.468	2.810	.626
% Active Voters (B)	-1.165	.488	.312*
Urbanization	.001	.001	1.001
Mixed Land Use	.138	.445	1.148
Segment Length	-.006	.031	.994
Physical Disorder (C)	.465	.157	1.592**
Truant Juveniles (C)	.461	.142	1.586**
Racial Heterogeneity (C)	6.182	4.986	484.007*
Opportunity			
High Risk Juveniles (B)	-.099	.056	.906
Employees (B)	.000	.000	1.000
Bus Stops (B)	.037	.114	1.037
% Vacant Land (B)	1.158	.928	3.183
Street Lighting (B)	.003	.008	1.003
Residents (B)	.007	.007	1.007**
Total Retail Sales (B)	.003	.002	1.003
Police/Fire Station	-.383	.257	.682
Public Facilities	-.373	.099	.689***
Arterial Road	-.426	.255	.653
High Risk Juveniles (C)	-.048	.049	.953
Employees (C)	.001	.000	1.001*
% Vacant Land (C)	.477	.899	1.611
Residents (C)	.008	.007	1.008
Spatial Lag (B)	.078	.016	1.081***
Spatial Lag (C)	.230	.036	1.258***
Constant	-2.068	.545	.126***

n = 793; B = beginning value; C = change variable; * $p < .05$ ** $p < .01$ *** $p < .001$
Cox and Snell Pseudo $R^2 = .209$; Nagelkerke Pseudo $R^2 = .301$

We can see that the variable effects in these comparisons closely follow our findings in the multinomial model, though the number of statistically significant variables is fewer. This importantly is due in part to the much smaller sample that these comparisons are drawn from. Of the SES measures of social disorganization, property value continues to have a significant impact in the low rate comparisons, while housing assistance has a significant effect in the high rate comparisons. In both cases the effects are in the expected direction, with higher property values in the low comparison associated with the decreasing trajectory pattern and higher housing assistance associated with the increasing trajectory pattern in the high rate comparison. In both models, each additional truant juvenile raises the likelihood of being in the increasing as opposed to decreasing trajectory pattern by 50 percent.

Distance from the city center has a strong impact in predicting the low rate trajectory pattern membership. However, in this analysis we find that longer distances from the city center are significantly associated with being in the increasing trajectory pattern. The measure is not significantly related to trajectory pattern membership in the high rate comparison. These findings reinforce our earlier interpretation, noting that for the highest rate crime places, being located close to the city center is not an important factor as has often been assumed.

Increases in reports of physical disorder lead to significantly higher likelihoods of membership in the increasing trajectory patterns, though the effect size here is considerably smaller than in the earlier analysis (the odds ratios here are both approximately 1.5 compared to odds ratios ranging from 6.0 to greater than 25.0 in Table 8.3). A similar effect size is found for change in physical disorder between the first and last periods of observation. Again, collective efficacy as indicated by active voters has a strong and significant impact on trajectory membership. That is, streets with a higher percentage of active voters are less likely to experience an increasing crime trend as oppose to a decreasing crime trend.

Accessibility, an important component of the opportunity model, does not have significant impacts in these analyses, though other opportunity and routine activities variables are important in explaining developmental trajectories. For example, residential population and employees both have strong and significant impacts on trajectory pattern membership in the comparisons examined, as does change in the low pattern comparison. Our data suggest that increases in the number of suitable targets are directly related to increases as contrasted with decreases in crime at street segments. We also find that vacant land is significant in the low comparison. Increases in vacant land are associated with increasing crime.

Lighting continues to have a significant relationship with trajectory membership in the low rate analysis, but not for the higher rate trajectory patterns. Higher wattage is again associated with increasing rather than decreasing trajectory patterns. Public facilities within one quarter mile decrease the likelihood of streets being assigned to the increasing trajectory pattern in both analyses. This is a particularly interesting finding given our result in the multinomial regression that nearness to public facilities increases the likelihood of not being in the crime free pattern trajectories. Perhaps it is the case that such facilities are less likely to be found near crime free trajectories, but their presence inhibits the development of increasing as opposed to decreasing crime trajectories.

Conclusions

In this chapter we have brought together the full range of variables reflecting social disorganization and opportunity theories into a single statistical model of developmental trajectories of crime at place. The most important single finding here is that both perspectives have considerable salience in understanding crime at place, and that together they allow us to develop a very strong level of prediction of crime. Crime at street segments is highly predictable. This is perhaps the key finding of our work. In turn, social disorganization measured at the street segment level and opportunity and routine activities are both key perspectives if we want to explain developmental trajectories of crime. We have also seen that such factors can distinguish directly increasing versus decreasing trajectory patterns, and that change in social disorganization and opportunity variables over time are followed by developmental changes at street segments.

Together these findings provide a strong reinforcement of the knowledge we have gained and our ability to consistently predict crime at the street segment level even in this relatively early stage of the development of knowledge about crime and place. As we will discuss in the concluding chapter, this reality provides an important context to consider and implement successful crime prevention at the street segment level.

Chapter 9: Conclusions

We began our report by noting the growing importance of hot spots of crime in criminological inquiry as well as crime prevention policy. It is now a well established fact that crime is concentrated at hot spots in a city (see Brantingham & Brantingham, 1999; Eck et al., 2000; Roncek, 2000; Spelman, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1994; Weisburd & Mazerolle, 2000; Weisburd et al., 1992; Weisburd et al., 2004; Weisburd et al., in press) and police agencies throughout the country have begun to develop programs and practices that focus on hot spots of crime (e.g. see Braga et al., 1999; Mazerolle & Terrill, 1997; Mazerolle et al., 1998; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995; Weisburd & Lum, 2005). But having noted the growing recognition of the importance of crime hot spots, we raised a series of questions that have so far not been answered systematically by criminologists.

Are these hot spots simply reflecting the influence of higher level geographic processes, such as those generated by problems in communities? Should we really be focusing on hot spots of crime, or rather addressing crime problems at the community level? If it is important to explain crime at the micro level, what are the theories that are most salient for understanding developmental patterns of crime at place? And do those theories provide a very strong explanation for crime patterns, or is much of the variation of crime at place left unexplained by systematic factors?

In this chapter we want to sum up what we have learned in our longitudinal study of street segments, and examine the implications of those findings for criminological knowledge about place and for crime prevention practice. We begin by reviewing the major findings of our study. We then turn to the policy implications of our work, and finally to limitations in our study and suggestions for future research.

Key Findings

We think that our study has yielded a number of important findings for advancing the study of the criminology of place. In some cases, our work has only reinforced that of prior investigations. But in others, our research has broken new ground that we hope will continue to be explored by other researchers. We divide our discussion into four distinct areas: 1) the distribution of opportunity and social disorganization across places; 2) the concentration of crime at place; 3) the geography of crime at place; 4) the correlates of crime at place.

The Distribution of Opportunity and Social Disorganization across Places

We set out in our study to bring context to previous studies that have identified concentration of crime at place. What are the characteristics of crime places, and how do they vary across street segments in the city? A key concern of ours was whether in fact characteristics of places vary at very low levels of geography. For example, it may be that street segments are too small a unit of geography to observe variability in social characteristics of place.

We began by identifying two major perspectives that have informed criminological understandings of place. The first, social disorganization theories, have been used primarily to understand the concentration of crime at higher levels of geography (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson et al., 1997; Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]). Social disorganization theories have been strongly linked to concepts of community (Bursik & Grasmick, 1993; Sampson & Groves, 1989; Sampson et al., 1997; Shaw & McKay, 1942 [1969]), and have been much more rarely used to understand micro geographic processes (for exceptions see Rice & Smith, 2002; Taylor, 1996). For criminologists who have placed emphasis on social disorganization theory, social processes occur in relatively larger areas where social and economic forces influence the ability of communities to regulate and enforce norms on their members.

While social disorganization theory has not been seen as a key factor in understanding crime at micro units of analysis such as the street segment, we thought it was important to examine whether such structural factors as socio-economic status or physical disorder, or mediating concepts like collective efficacy help us to understand what we have termed the criminology of place. When we constructed our unit of analysis, we did so based on studies that have noted the importance of street segments in the rhythms of everyday interactions and behavior of people who live on street segments. As we described in Chapter 2, scholars have long recognized the relevance of street blocks in organizing life in the city (Appleyard, 1981; Brower, 1980; Jacobs, 1961; Taylor et al., 1984; Unger & Wandersman, 1983). An important question is whether the structural and mediating factors that are identified with social disorganization theory vary at a level of geography as small as the street segment. While the key question for our study is whether such factors explain crime at place, absent such variation there would be no reason to expect social disorganization theory to have relevance for explaining crime patterns at micro places.

The importance of opportunity theories for understanding crime at place has a long history in criminology (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991], 1984; Clarke, 1983, 1992, 1995; Cohen & Felson, 1979; Cornish & Clarke, 1986). Indeed, the major theorists in this area have focused on crime opportunities rather than structural characteristics such as poverty and social disorganization when seeking explanations for the concentrations of specific crimes at specific places (Brantingham & Brantingham, 1981 [1991], 1984; Clarke, 1983, 1992, 1995; Cohen & Felson, 1979; Cornish & Clarke, 1986; Eck & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd et al. 2004).

This reliance on opportunity theories is easy to understand when we consider that these scholars have generally focused on crimes rather than criminals. A focus on crime naturally leads scholars to specific places or situations, and the opportunities that situations and places provide for crime. We expected at the outset that measures reflecting the opportunity perspectives would vary at the street segment level. However, we wanted to examine whether this assumption would be strongly supported by empirical data.

Our findings regarding the distribution of social disorganization across places surprised us, in that we found tremendous concentration and variation in most of the measures that we examined. Looking both at structural and mediating variables we found that there are hot spots of social disorganization at the street segment level. For example, fully 50 percent of truant students are consistently found to live on between 2 and 3.5 percent of the total street segments during the study period. Over 50 percent of reports of physical disorder were found on between 1.5 and 3 percent of street segments. And these hot spots were not simply part of contiguous hot spots at larger geographic levels. They are not found only in specific neighborhoods. Rather they are distributed across the city landscape.

We found strong evidence of spatial independence of social disorganization at street segments. While there are sometimes clusters of street segments with specific traits in what may be termed communities or neighborhoods, there is also significant street by street variation in such concentrations. This is an extremely important finding since it suggests that a perspective that has generally been seen as relevant at higher levels of geography shows concentration and variability at the street segment level. The fact that there are hot spots of social disorganization at this level raises the intriguing question of whether such hot spots are related to hot spots of crime (see later). But irrespective of that relationship our work is the first to establish that social disorganization variables are concentrated at micro crime places and that they are spread across the city landscape.

Opportunity measures are, as we expected, also concentrated, and also evidence variability across places. For example, 50 percent of high risk juveniles (a proxy in our work for "motivated offenders") are consistently found on between three and four percent of the total number of Seattle street segments. In turn, half of all the employees (a proxy for "suitable targets") in the city were located on less than one percent of Seattle street segments. There are hot spots of motivated offenders, suitable targets and capable guardians. This was not suprising given prior theorizing, but our data are among the first to illustrate this fact.

Finally, as with social disorganization measures we find that opportunity characteristics of places evidence much spatial heterogeneity. In statistical terms there is a significant amount of negative spatial autocorrelation evident in the variables we examine. In this sense while there are hot spots of opportunities, such hot spots are not clustered only in specific neighborhoods. Our results suggest that characteristics reflecting opportunity theories are indeed associated with specific street segments, and are not simply reflecting larger area trends.

The Concentration of Crime at Place

Using 16 years of data and adding refinement to the definition of street segments (see Chapter 2) our analyses follow closely those of prior studies of crime at place. Our study confirms prior research showing that crime is tightly clustered in specific places in urban areas, and that most places evidence little or no crime (Sherman et al., 1989, Weisburd et al., 2004). Fifty percent of the crime each year in Seattle was found at just five to six percent of the street segments in the city. We think this pattern is consistent enough to suggest a "law of concentration" of crime.

But we also are able to show that there is a high degree of stability of crime at micro places over time. This stability is evident in the vast majority of street segments in our study of 16 years of official data. Moreover, for those trajectories that evidenced decreasing or increasing trends, we still found a stability of scale with the highest rate segments generally remaining so throughout the observation period. This finding is particularly interesting when we contrast it with what is known about offending among individuals. While crime is also concentrated among offenders, there is perhaps no more established fact in criminology than the variability and instability of offending across the life course. A primary factor in this variability is the fact that most offenders age out of crime, often at a relatively young age (Blumstein et al., 1986; Gottfredson & Hirschi, 1990; Laub & Sampson, 2003; Tracy & Kempf-Leonard, 1996; Wolfgang et al., 1987). But there is also evidence of strong instability in criminal behavior for most offenders even when short time periods are observed (Bushway et al., 2003; Horney et al., 1995; Nagin, 1999).

While there is overall stability in the trajectory patterns observed in our study, there is also evidence of strong increasing and decreasing patterns of crime. One pattern of developmental trends we observe for example, suggest strong crime waves during a 16 year period of general crime declines in the city. One trajectory group we identified in our study went from fewer than 10 crimes per street segment at the outset of the observation period to more than 60 at the end of that period. More generally, our data suggest that crime trends at specific segments are central to understanding overall changes in crime in a city.

The Geography of Crime at Place

Our analyses of the geography of developmental patterns of crime at street segments provided important insights into our understanding of the processes that generate crime trends at street segments. Perhaps the key objection to our work would be that we have unnecessarily rarified our geographic analysis and that our choice of a micro place unit for studying crime provides no benefit over the study of higher order geographic processes. Are crime hot spots at places just proxies for larger hot spots in communities? Is study of place in the micro context, as we have defined it, necessary for understanding crime in urban areas? Or is it simply cutting up the pie in additional pieces without adding new information about the crime problem?

Our study provides unambiguous answers to these questions. We do not find evidence suggesting that the processes explaining crime patterns at street segments come primarily from higher geographic influences such as communities. There are indications of the influence of higher order trends in our data, for example in the fact that higher crime street segments are not distributed at random, and are more likely to be closer to each other than would be predicted simply by chance. But these indications of macro geographic influences are much outweighed in our data by evidence of the importance of looking at crime at the micro level that we have defined as street segments. There is strong street to street variability in crime patterns in our data, and such variability emphasizes the importance of studying crime at place at a micro unit of analysis.

We do find cases in our data where multiple street segments one after another evidence similar developmental trends of crime. Nonetheless, the evidence of heterogeneity of street segments in specific areas, for example the inner city, and the presence of crime hot spots throughout the city landscape, point to the critical importance of understanding how characteristics of places at the street segment level influence crime. Evidence of spatial independence at the street segment level further reinforces this.

There are certainly forces pushing down on the street segments that we study. These may come from communities and the specific social and economic changes that they experience. It may also come from higher levels of geography, for example, national social or economic processes. But our data illustrate clearly that much is lost if we simply examine crime trends at the geographic levels that have traditionally interested criminologists. Much of the action of crime comes from the street segment, as we have defined it. We think our findings suggest that it is time to move the geographic cone of criminological interests to the criminology of place.

The Correlates of Crime at Place

Having established that an important part of the crime equation is generated at a very micro level of geography, it was natural to turn to the factors that would explain crime at place. In Chapters 3 and 4 we established that characteristics of social disorganization and opportunity were concentrated at places and that they evidenced strong geographic heterogeneity. Are hot spots of social disorganization and crime opportunities related at street segments? Can we explain selection to different developmental crime patterns with variables representing these key theoretical dimensions of place?

Our research has provided an unambiguous answer to this question. Looking at risk factors for crime, we found a large number of both opportunity measures and social disorganization measures to significantly distinguish trajectory membership. Of the six structural indicators of social disorganization that we examined, five are directly related to crime levels of trajectories. In the case of mediating factors of social disorganization two key measures were related to the level of crime in trajectory patterns. Our 10 measures of motivated offenders, suitable targets and accessibility are all linked strongly to initial crime levels of trajectory patterns. The relationship of these factors to developmental trends, while not as uniform, follows the patterns overall that would be expected.

In the case of guardianship the simple relationship between factors we measure and the trajectory patterns followed an opposing trend compared to what would be predicted by routine activity and opportunity theories. The presence of public facilities or a police/fire station was associated with higher rates of crime at place. However, it is important to remember that these facilities are often located in high population density areas that also are likely to have higher rates of crime, and while perhaps evidencing elements of guardianship, they may also be facilitating the convergence of offenders and targets in ways that increase the likelihood of crime. In turn, our multivariate modeling found that increases in the presence of such facilities over time were associated with decreasing trajectory patterns, while decreases in the presence of facilities were associated with increasing trajectory patterns. This may suggest that both crime generating and crime inhibiting forces operate as a result of the presence of facilities on street segments.

Our risk analysis confirms a position that has been taken by most scholars who have advocated routine activities as a key to understanding crime. The opportunities provided by targets, offenders, guardianship and accessibility at specific street segments are related to the specific developmental crime trends at those street segments. As we noted earlier, scholars that have identified hot spots of crime have often alluded to these theories to understand the concentration of crime at place. However, our work is the first to confirm these relationships systematically and provides clear evidence not only of the variability of opportunities at places, but their relationship to crime patterns over time. Opportunity theories of crime have strong salience for the criminology of place.

But our work also points to the importance of a theoretical paradigm that has often been ignored by criminologists concerned with crime at place. The risk analyses in our study point to an extremely strong relationship between characteristics of social disorganization at the street segment level and developmental patterns of crime at street segments. The relationships here follow closely what would be expected, and they are both statistically significant and substantively large. While we set out to compare and contrast social disorganization and opportunity perspectives we were surprised at the strength and consistency of the correlates of social disorganization with developmental patterns of crime.

One reason for our surprise was that criminologists so far, as we noted earlier, have generally assumed that social disorganization theory influences crime at a much higher geographic level. It is a theory of communities and neighborhoods, and has not to our knowledge been applied to the micro geographic units that concern the criminology of place. But our initial intuition was that social disorganization was in fact as meaningful a concept at the street segment level as it is at the larger community level. This is something that most people who live in a city will recognize. The immediate social context of city life is the people on one's block. These are the people that one sees each day, and those who have most immediacy when we are concerned with problems or seek help.

The Chinese folk saying that we quoted in Chapter 1 that "(n)eighbors next door are more important than relatives far away," strikes us as particularly salient for understanding our data. Neighbors close by play a key part in modern urban life, and they are the key context in which our daily lives are located. In some ways it seems quite natural that social disorganization perspectives should be particularly salient on street segments. Our first encounter with social life each day is likely to come when we walk out on our street. It is its look and feel that provides a visceral sense of the order of our immediate world. We suspect in this context that community social controls begin with the social order of our streets. The larger community is built up one by one from those streets, but it does not take away from the fact that the idea of community is relevant at the street segment level. What our study illustrates is that there is tremendous variation from street to street in such elements of community life, and these variations are strongly related to developmental patterns of crime.

Our risk analysis suggested the importance of both opportunity and social disorganization theories as correlates of crime at place. But we also looked at these factors in the context of an overall model explaining developmental patterns of crime at street segments. Do both perspectives sustain their importance when they are examined in a multivariate context? More generally, how well can we explain crime at place, and how does this compare with models of individual criminality?

We used a direct method for comparing the influence of the two theoretical perspectives on crime patterns at places. It suggested that both perspectives are providing a strong explanation for developmental patterns of crime at place. The opportunity perspective provided a value of explained variance ("pseudo" R2) of .66 versus .51 for the social disorganization measures. This suggests that a model exclusively concerned with opportunities for crime (as we measure them) is likely to provide a higher level of prediction of trajectory patterns. However, we think what is most significant here overall is that in the multivariate context, both perspectives maintain strong and significant influences on crime at place. Both social disorganization theory and opportunity theories need to be considered in understanding why crime varies across places.

In turn, the models presented in Chapter 8 point to the strength of these theories in providing explanation for crime at place. Our main model explaining trajectory group membership had a Pseudo R^2 value of .68 (Nagelkerke). Drawing from a recent article in the *Crime and Justice* series (see Weisburd & Piquero, 2008) we argue that in comparison to studies of crime and criminality more generally we are doing extremely well. The median value for R^2 in that study was only .36, and a quarter of the studies examined had values of less than .20. The average R^2 value for person-based studies was about .30. In this context our Pseudo R^2 value above .60 implies that the criminology of place has much potential for explaining crime.

Policy Implications

We have shown so far that our findings have important implications for our understanding of crime. However, we also think that our work has direct implications for crime prevention policy. Our work reinforces a growing trend in crime prevention that seeks to focus efforts on the context of crime (Sherman, 1995; Weisburd, 2002; Weisburd et al, 2009), in our case on crime places. Our work suggests that a program of crime prevention at place would have tremendous "efficiency" for police and other crime prevention practitioners. Efficiency is important because crime prevention resources are limited. Our work also points to the importance of focusing crime prevention efforts on places within communities, and the fact that criminologists and crime prevention practitioners can identify and address particular characteristics of places that are related to developmental crime patterns.

While the efficiency of crime prevention approaches can be defined in a number of different ways, we think it reasonable to begin with a definition of efficiency that suggests that strategies are more efficient to the extent that they offer the same crime prevention value with a smaller number of targets. To the extent that crime is concentrated among a small number of potential targets, the efficiency of crime prevention can be maximized. We find that five to six percent of street segments each year include half of all crime incidents. One percent of the street segments in the chronic trajectory group are responsible for more than a fifth of all crime incidents in the city. This means that crime prevention practitioners can focus their resources on relatively few crime hot spots and deal with a large proportion of the crime problem.

Having noted the efficiency of crime concentrations at place, it is important to note that crime is also concentrated among offenders, a fact pointed out in research by Marvin Wolfgang and colleagues (1972) more than 30 years ago. Is crime more concentrated at places than among offenders? We tried to make this comparison using crime incidents from Seattle. Using this approach, we found that on average fewer than 1,500 street segments accounted for 50 percent of the crime each year during our study period. During the same period about 6,000 offenders were responsible for 50 percent of the crime each year. Simply stated, the police or other crime prevention practitioners would have to approach four times as many targets to identify the same level of overall crime when they focus on people as opposed to places.

Importantly, as well, places are not "moving targets." The American Housing Survey from the United States Census Bureau shows that Americans move once every seven years (American Housing Survey Branch, 2005). It is reasonable to assume that offenders move even more often than this. Studies have often noted the difficulty of tracking offenders for survey research (Laub & Sampson, 2003; Wolfgang et al., 1987), and it is a common experience of the police to look for an offender and find that he or she no longer lives at the last known address. Place-based crime prevention provides a target that "stays in the same place." This is not an insignificant issue when considering the investment of crime prevention resources.

Evidence of the stability of crime patterns at places in our work also suggests the efficiency of place-based approaches. If there is instability of crime across time at a unit of analysis, then crime prevention strategies will be less efficient. For example, let us say that criminals vary in offending greatly over time with a very high peak in one time period and very low activity in subsequent periods. Investment of resources, for example, in incarceration of such offenders may have little real crime prevention benefit, though of course it may satisfy important considerations of just punishments for criminals. Similarly, if it is very hard to identify and track targets for crime prevention initiatives, the efficiency of strategies will also be challenged.

As we noted earlier, there is perhaps no more established fact in criminology than the variability and instability of offending across the life course. This may be contrasted with findings in our study. In Chapter 5 we show not only that about the same number of street segments were responsible for 50 percent of the crime each year, but that the street segments that tended to evidence very low or very high activity at the beginning of the period of study in 1989 were similarly ranked at the end of the period in 2004. This stability suggests that place-based crime prevention will not only be more efficient in terms of the number of targets, but also in the application of interventions to specific targets. A strategy that is focused on chronic hot spots is not likely to be focusing on places that will naturally become cool a year later. The stability of crime at place across time makes crime places a particularly salient focus for investment of crime prevention resources.

Our work also reinforces the importance of focusing in on “places” rather than larger geographic units such as communities or police precincts. Our data suggest that crime prevention at larger geographic units is likely to suffer an “ecological fallacy” in which crime prevention resources are spread thinly across large numbers of street segments, when the problems that need to be addressed are concentrated only on some of the street segments in that area. Criminologists and crime prevention practitioners need to recognize that definitions of neighborhoods as “bad” or problematic are likely to miss the fact that many places in such areas have no or little crime. In turn, crime prevention resources should be focused on the hot spots of crime within “good” and “bad” neighborhoods.

Our data also illustrate that criminologists and crime prevention practitioners can identify key characteristics of places that are correlated with crime. At a policy level, our research reinforces the importance of initiatives like “hot spots policing,” which address specific streets within relatively small areas (Braga, 2001; Sherman & Weisburd, 1995; Weisburd & Green, 1995). If police become better at recognizing the “good streets” in the bad areas, they can take a more holistic approach to addressing crime problems. For example, they can more precisely target community building and law enforcement operations to maximize efficiency and effectiveness. More broadly, they can work with other city agencies to change the physical and social environment of problem places (Johnson et al., 2008). Alterations to the built environment which improve surveillability, control access, and increase the capacity for territoriality among legitimate users can reduce crime (Lab, 2007).

One implication of our work is that social disorganization is also important in the generation of crime hot spots. Does this suggest that formal social controls, such as hot spots policing, may have less potential for affecting the trajectories of crime at places? One answer to this question is that the police can indeed enhance and support social control at street segments just as they have traditionally in communities overall. Advocates of the “broken windows” perspective have long argued this point, noting that a key role of the police is to reduce fear in communities and through this to empower citizens to reestablish community social control and community norms (Kelling & Coles, 1996; Wilson & Kelling, 1982). Our work suggests that the role of the police as "watchmen" in local communities should be focused not broadly in communities but specifically at places that evidence serious crime problems.

But if important causal mechanisms underlying developmental patterns of crime at place can be found in factors such as economic deprivation, as indicated by our work, then a much broader set of social interventions may also be required to change the trajectories of crime at crime hot spots. Even here our work suggests a different approach than has been common. Perhaps we need to focus interventions more carefully, providing economic support to problematic street blocks and not to neighborhoods overall. Our work suggests the importance of focusing crime prevention, whether it is at the level of local police agents or in terms of the development of larger social programs on hot spots of crime. This idea has also been suggested in recent studies of prisoner reentry. Scholars have identified "million dollar blocks" that include large numbers of people who are in jail or prisons (Cadora et al., 2002). They argue that more could be gained by focusing resources on the blocks where these prisoners come from than on their incarceration (Clear, 2008). Whatever the approach that is taken, it is time to recognize the need to focus crime prevention resources at places.

Limitations

While we think our work has contributed a good deal to our knowledge of the criminology of place, we want to note before concluding some specific limitations of our data. Perhaps most significant is the fact that by necessity we were limited to retrospective data collection. We think we have accessed a wide array of data from a large number of data sources. Indeed, we were surprised at the breath and depth of information that we were able to collect retrospectively. In this context our study includes to our knowledge the most comprehensive longitudinal data base ever compiled for a study of places at a very low geographic level.

But having noted that we were able to provide a more in depth view of crime at place than any prior study we know of, we think it important to recognize that retrospective data collection is by its nature limited. Many of our measures are proxies for variables we would have liked to collect but were unable to identify. For example, we used school and voter information to estimate population statistics at street segments. Our problem in collecting such social data retrospectively is that confidentiality requirements prohibit the census from allowing access to street segment level data. Even our measure of physical disorder is a proxy since it relies on reports to a city agency and does not measure directly the level of disorder on each street segment.

More generally, there is much we would want to know about street segments that we could not learn simply from collecting official information. For example, people commit crime, and their role in the crime equation is a central one. Certainly, to learn more about the causes of crime at place we would want to know more than we could retrospectively about the people who live on street segments and the people that offend there. Data on people at places, and narratives of their experiences are certainly necessary to develop a clearer picture of the developmental patterns of crime at place.

These limitations suggest the importance of a prospective longitudinal study of crime at place that would capture at specific times both the characteristics of places and people. Such studies are common in studies of human development more generally (e.g. see Browning et al., 1999; Elliott et al., 1985; Loeber et al., 2001; Moffitt et al., 1994), though they are expensive to conduct and take patience and a long term perspective on knowledge by funders. However, our data suggest the importance of such studies. What we have learned already implies that crime places are an important focus of study. It is time in this context, to develop a major longitudinal study of developmental patterns of street segments in the urban context.

A second key limitation of our study relates to our use of observational data in understanding developmental crime patterns. While we examine the correlates of developmental crime patterns at places, we cannot make unambiguous statements about the causal patterns underlying our data. For example, reports of physical disorder are very strongly correlated with presence in more serious or chronic trajectory patterns. But our data do not allow us to establish that physical disorder leads to more serious crime problems. Even though we find that changes in physical disorder and changes in crime are related, it may be that a third cause unmeasured in our analysis is in fact the ultimate cause of the relationships observed. This limitation is not unique to our study, but one that affects all observational studies (Shadish et al., 2002). Nonetheless, it is important to keep this limitation in mind when considering the implications of our work.

Conclusions

For most of the last century criminologists and crime prevention practitioners have tried to understand why people become involved in crime and what programs can be developed to discourage criminality. Our work suggests that it is time to consider another approach to the crime problem that begins not with the people who commit crime but the places where crimes are committed. Our work shows that street segments in the city of Seattle represent a key unit for understanding the crime problem. This is not the geographic units of communities or police beats that have generally been the focus of criminologists or police in crime prevention, but it is a unit of analysis that is key to understanding crime and its development.

Appendix 1: ANOVA Results for Pair Wise Comparisons

Notations: "*" shows a positive sig. association (first group-second group); "#" represents a negative sig. association; "blank" means no significant association is found

Traj Classification\ Compared to		Social Disorganization Related Risk Factors**						
		Property Value	*Housing Assistance*	*Racial Heterogeneity*	*Distance to Geographic Center*	*Physical Disorder*	*Truant Students*	*Percent Active Voters*
Crime Free	Low Stable	#		#	*	#	#	#
	Low Decreasing	#		#	*	#	#	#
	Low Increasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	#
	Moderate Stable		#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Decreasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Increasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	Chronics	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
Low Stable	Crime Free	*		*	#	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing				*			
	Low Increasing	*	#		*			*
	Moderate Stable	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Decreasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Increasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	Chronics	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
Low Decreasing	Crime Free	*		*	#	*	*	*
	Low Stable				#			
	Low Increasing	*	#	#	#			*
	Moderate Stable	*	#	#	*	#	#	*

Traj Classification\ Compared to		**Social Disorganization Related Risk Factors****						
		Property Value	*Housing Assistance*	*Racial Heterogeneity*	*Distance to Geographic Center*	*Physical Disorder*	*Truant Students*	*Percent Active Voters*
	High Decreasing	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Increasing	*	#	#		#	#	*
	Chronics	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
Low Increasing	Crime Free	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Stable	#	*		#			#
	Low Decreasing	#	*	*	*			#
	Moderate Stable		#	#	*	#	#	*
	High Decreasing	*		#	*	#	#	*
	High Increasing		#	#	*	#	#	*
	Chronics	*	#	#	*	#	#	*
Moderate Stable	Crime Free		*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Stable	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Decreasing	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Increasing		*	*	#	*	*	#
	High Decreasing	*	*				#	
	High Increasing		#				#	
	Chronics	*	#			#	#	#
High Decreasing	Crime Free	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Stable	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Decreasing	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Increasing	#		*	#	*	*	
	Moderate Stable	#	#				*	
	High Increasing		#					
	Chronics		#			#		#
High	Crime	#	*	*	#	*	*	#

Traj Classification\ Compared to		**Social Disorganization Related Risk Factors****						
		Property Value	*Housing Assistance*	*Racial Heterogeneity*	*Distance to Geographic Center*	*Physical Disorder*	*Truant Students*	*Percent Active Voters*
Increasing	Free							
	Low Stable	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Decreasing	#	*	*		*	*	#
	Low Increasing		*	*	#	*	*	
	Moderate Stable		*				*	
	High Decreasing		*					
	Chronics	*	*			#		
Chronics	Crime Free	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Stable	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Decreasing	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Low Increasing	#	*	*	#	*	*	#
	Moderate Stable	#	*			*	*	
	High Decreasing		*			*		
	High Increasing	#	*			*		

** Mixed Land Use does not yield significant overall F test result. Thus, pair-wise comparisons were not conducted.

Notations: "*" shows a positive sig. association (first group-second group); "#" represents a negative sig. association; "blank" means no significant association is found

Trajectory Classification\	Compared to	**Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors**				
		High Risk Juvenile	*Number of Employees*	*Number of Residents*	*Total Retail Business Sales*	*Public Facilities Count – 1320 ft*
Crime Free	Low Stable	#	#	#	#	#
	Low Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Low Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	#
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	#
Low Stable	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing					#
	Low Increasing		#	#	#	
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	#
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	#
Low Decreasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable					*
	Low Increasing	#		#		
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	#
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	#
Low Increasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*

Trajectory Classification\	Compared to	Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors				
		High Risk Juvenile	*Number of Employees*	*Number of Residents*	*Total Retail Business Sales*	*Public Facilities Count – 1320 ft*
	Low Stable		*	*	*	
	Low Decreasing	*		*		
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	#
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	#
Moderate Stable	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	*
	High Decreasing	#		*		
	High Increasing	#	#		#	
	Chronics	#	#		#	
High Decreasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Moderate Stable	*		#		
	High Increasing		#	#	#	*
	Chronics		#	#	#	
High Increasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	

Trajectory Classification\	Compared to	**Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors**				
		High Risk Juvenile	*Number of Employees*	*Number of Residents*	*Total Retail Business Sales*	*Public Facilities Count – 1320 ft*
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	
	Moderate Stable	*	*		*	
	High Decreasing		*	*	*	#
	Chronics		#		#	#
Chronics	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Moderate Stable	*	*		*	
	High Decreasing		*	*	*	
	High Increasing		*		*	*

Trajectory Classification\	Compared to	**Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors**				
		Bus Stops	*Arterial Roads*	*Police/Fire Count – 1320 ft*	*Street Lighting*	*% Vacant Land*
Crime Free	Low Stable	#	#	#	#	
	Low Decreasing	#	#		#	
	Low Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	#
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	
Low Stable	Crime Free	*	*	*	#	
	Low Decreasing				#	
	Low Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Moderate Stable	#	#	#	#	
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	
Low Decreasing	Crime Free	*	*		*	
	Low Stable				*	
	Low Increasing	#	#	#	#	#
	Moderate Stable	#	#		#	
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	
	High Increasing	#	#	#	#	
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	

Trajectory Classification\	Compared to	**Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors**				
		Bus Stops	*Arterial Roads*	*Police/Fire Count – 1320 ft*	*Street Lighting*	*% Vacant Land*
Low Increasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	*
	Moderate Stable	#	#		#	
	High Decreasing	#	#	#	#	
	High Increasing	#	#		#	
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	
Moderate Stable	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	
	Low Decreasing	*	*		*	
	Low Increasing	*	*		*	
	High Decreasing					
	High Increasing				#	
	Chronics	#	#	#	#	
High Decreasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	
	Moderate Stable					
	High Increasing	#			#	
	Chronics	#	#		#	
High Increasing	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	*

Trajectory Classification\ Compared to		Opportunity Theories Related Risk Factors				
		Bus Stops	*Arterial Roads*	*Police/Fire Count – 1320 ft*	*Street Lighting*	*% Vacant Land*
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	*
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	
	Low Increasing	*	*		*	
	Moderate Stable				*	
	High Decreasing	*			*	
	Chronics			#	#	
Chronics	Crime Free	*	*	*	*	
	Low Stable	*	*	*	*	
	Low Decreasing	*	*	*	*	
	Low Increasing	*	*	*	*	
	Moderate Stable	*	*	*	*	
	High Decreasing	*	*		*	
	High Increasing			*	*	

References

Abbott, A. (1997). Of time and space: The contemporary relevance of the Chicago school. *Social Forces*, *75*(4), 1149-1182.

Agnew, R. (1992). Foundation for a general strain theory of crime and delinquency. *Criminology, 30*(1), 47-87.

Agnew, R. (1999). A general strain theory of community differences in crime rates. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 36*(2), 123-155.

Agresti, A. (1996). An introduction to categorical data analysis. New York: Wiley.

Akers, R. L. (1973). *Deviant behavior: A social learning approach*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.

American Housing Survey Branch. (2005). *American Housing Survey for the United States: 2005*. Washington, DC: Housing and Household Economic Statistics Division, U.S. Census Bureau.

Andrews, D. A., Zinger, I., Hoge, R. D., Bonta, J., Gendreau, P., & Cullen, F. T. (1990). Does correctional treatment work? A clinically relevant and psychologically informed meta-analysis. *Criminology*, *28*(3), 369-404.

Anselin, L. (1988). *Spatial econometrics: Methods and models.* Boston: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Anselin, L., Cohen, J., Cook, D., Gorr, W., & Tita, G. (2000). Spatial analysis of crime. In D. Duffee (ed.), *Criminal Justice 2000, Measurement and analysis of crime and justice*, *vol. 4* (pp. 213-262). Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice.

Appleyard, D. (1981). *Livable streets*. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

Bailey, T. C., & Gatrell, A. C. (1995). *Interactive spatial data analysis*. Essex: Longman Group Limited.

Baldwin, J., & Bottoms, A. E. (1976). *The urban criminal*. London: Tavistock.

Baller, R. D., Anselin, L., Messner, S. F., Deane, G., & Hawkins, D. F. (2001). Structural covariates of U.S. County homicide rates: Incorporating spatial effects. *Criminology*, *39*(3), 561-590.

Barker, R. G. (1968). *Ecological psychology: Concepts and methods for studying the environment of human behavior*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Baumer, E. P., Lauritsen, J. L., Rosenfeld, R., & Wright, R. (1998). The influence of crack cocaine on robbery, burglary, and homicide rates: A cross-city, longitudinal analysis. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency*, *35*(3), 316-340.

Beavon, D. J. K., Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1994). The influence of street networks on the patterning of property offenses. In R. V. Clarke (ed.), *Crime Prevention Studies*, vol. 2 (pp. 115-148). Monsey, NY: Criminal Justice Press.

Begg, C. B., & Gray, R. (1984). Calculation of polychotomous logistic regression parameters using individualized regressions. *Biometrika, 71*, 11-18.

Beirne, P., & Messersmidt, J. (1991). *Criminology*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.

Bellair, P. E. (1997). Social interaction and community crime: The importance of neighbor networks. *Criminology, 35*(4), 677-704.

Bevis, C., & Nutter, J. B. (1977). Changing street layouts to reduce residential burglary. Paper presented at the meeting of the American Society of Criminology, Atlanta, GA.

Birkbeck, C., & LaFree, G. (1993). The situational analysis of crime and deviance. *Annual Review of Sociology*, *19,* 113-137.

Blau, J. R., & Blau, P. M. (1982). The cost of inequality: Metropolitan structure and violent crime. *American Sociological Review*, *47*, 114-129.

Block, C., Dabdoub, M., & Fregly, S. (eds.) (1995). *Crime analysis through computer mapping.* Washington, DC: Police Executive Research Forum.

Blokland, A. A. J., Nagin, D. S., & Nieuwbeerta, P. (2005). Life span offending trajectories of a Dutch conviction cohort. *Criminology 43*, 919-954.

Blumstein, A. (2000). Disaggregating the violence trends. In A. Blumstein & J. Wallman (eds.), *The crime drop in America* (pp. 13-44). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Blumstein, A., & Wallman, J. (eds.). (2000). *The crime drop in America*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Blumstein, A., Cohen, J., Roth, J. A., & Visher, C. A. (1986). *Criminal careers and "career criminals"*, vol. I. Panel on Research on Criminal Careers. Committee on Research on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Justice. Commission on Behavioral and Social Science and Education. National Research Council. Washington DC: National Academy Press.

Boggs, S. L. (1965). Urban crime patterns. *American Sociological Review*, *30*(6), 899-908.

Braga, A. A. (2001). The effects of hot spots policing on crime. *Annals of the American Academy, 578*, 104-125.

Braga, A. A. (2003). Serious youth gun offenders and the epidemic of youth violence in Boston. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 19*(1), 33-54.

Braga A. A., Weisburd, D., Waring E. J., Mazerolle, L. G., Spelman, W., & Gajewski, F. (1999). Problem-oriented policing in violent crime places: A randomized controlled experiment. *Criminology, 37*, 541-580.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1975). Residential burglary and urban form. *Urban Studies, 12***,** 104-125.

Brantingham, P. J., & Brantingham, P. L. (eds.). (1981 [1991]). *Environmental criminology*. Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland Press.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1982). Mobility, notoriety, and crime: A study of crime patterns in urban nodal points. *Journal of Environmental Systems, 11*(1), 89-99.

Brantingham, P. J., & Brantingham, P. L. (1984). *Patterns in crime*. New York: Macmillan.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1993a). Environment, routine, and situation: Toward a pattern theory of crime. In R. V. Clarke & M. Felson (eds.), *Routine activity and rational choice*. *Crime prevention studies,* vol. 5 (pp. 259-294). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1993b). Nodes, paths and edges: Considerations on the complexity of crime and the physical environment. *Journal of Environmental Psychology, 13*, 3-28.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1995). Criminality of place: Crime generators and crime attractors. *European Journal on Criminal Policy and Research, 3*(3), 5-26.

Brantingham, P. L., & Brantingham, P. J. (1999). Theoretical model of crime hot spot generation. *Studies on Crime and Crime Prevention, 8,* 7-26.

Brower, S. (1980). Territory in urban settings. In I. Altman & C. M. Werner (eds.), *Human Behavior and environment: Current theory and research*, vol. 4. New York: Plenun.

Browning, K., Thornberry, T. P., & Porter, P. K. (1999). Highlights of findings from the Rochester Youth Development Study. OJJDP Fact Sheet. Washington, DC: Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention.

Bryk, A. S., & Raudenbush, S. W. (1987). Application of hierarchical linear models to assessing change. *Psychological Bulletin, 101,* 147-158.

Bryk, A. S., & Raudenbush, S. W. (1992). *Hierarchical linear models: Applications and data analysis methods*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Bulmer, M. (1984). *The Chicago School of sociology. Institutionalization, diversity, and the rise of sociological research*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Burgess, E.W. (1925 [1967]). The growth of the city. An introduction to a research project. In R. E. Park & E. W. Burgess (eds.), *The city: Suggestions for the investigation of human behaviour in the urban environment*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Burgess, E. W., & Bogue, D. J. (1964a). Research in urban society: A long view. In E. W. Burgess & D. J. Bogue (eds.), *Contributions to urban sociology* (pp. 1-14). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Burgess, E. W., & Bogue, D. J. (1964b). The delinquency research of Clifford R. Shaw and Henry D. McKay and associates. In E. W. Burgess & D. J. Bogue (eds.), *Contributions to urban sociology* (pp. 591-615). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Bursik, R. J. Jr. (1984). Urban dynamics and ecological studies of delinquency. *Social Forces, 63,* 393-413.

Bursik, R. J. Jr. (1986). Ecological stability and the dynamics of delinquency. In A. J. Reiss, Jr. & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 8 (pp. 35-66). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Bursik, R. J. Jr. (1988). Social disorganization and theories of crime and delinquency: Problems and prospects. *Criminology, 26*(4), 519-551.

Bursik, R. J. Jr., & Webb, J. (1982). Community change and patterns of delinquency. *American Journal of Sociology, 88*(1), 24-42.

Bursik, R. J. Jr., & Grasmick, H. G. (1993). *Neighborhoods and crime: The dimensions of effective community control.* New York: Lexington Books.

Burt, C. (1924 [1944]). *The young delinquent*. London: University of London Press.

Bushway, S. D., Thornberry, T. P., & Krohn, M. D. (2003). Desistance as a developmental process: A comparison of static and dynamic approaches. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology*, *19*(2), 129-153.

Bushway, S. D., Sweeten, G., & Nieuwbeerta, P. (2009). Measuring long term individual trajectories of offending using multiple methods. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 25*(3), 259-286.

Bushway, S. D., Piquero, A. R., Broidy, L. M., Cauffman, E., & Mazerolle, P. (2001). An empirical framework for studying desistance as a process. *Criminology, 39*, 491-516.

Byrne, J. M., & Sampson, R., J. (eds.). (1986). *Social ecology of crime*. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Cancino, J. M., Martinez, R. Jr., & Stowell, J. I. (2009). The impact of neighborhood context on intragroup and intergroup robbery: The San Antonio experience. *Annals of the American Academy of Political & Social Science, 623,* 12-24.

Chakravorty, S., & Pelfrey, W. V. J. (2000). Exploratory data analysis of crime patterns: Preliminary findings from the Bronx. In V. Goldsmith, P. McGuire, G., J. H. Mollenkopf, & T. A. Ross (eds.), *Analyzing crime patterns: Frontiers of practice* (pp. 65-76). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Chilton, R. J. (1964). Continuity in delinquency area research: A comparison of studies for Baltimore, Detroit, and Indianapolis. *American Sociological Review, 29*, 71-83.

Christie, N. (1960). *Unge norske lovovertredere*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation. Oslo, Norway: Universitetsforlaget.

Clarke, R. V. (1980). "Situational" crime prevention: Theory and practice. *British Journal of Criminology*, *20*(2), 136-147.

Clarke, R. V. (1983). Situational crime prevention: Its theoretical basis and practical scope. In M. Tonry & N. Morris (eds.), *Crime and Justice: An Annual Review of Research*, vol. 14 (pp. 225-256). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Clarke, R. V. (1992). *Situational crime prevention: Successful case studies.* 2nd ed. Albany, NY: Harrow and Heston Publishers.

Clarke, R. V. (1995). Situational crime prevention. In M. Tonry & D. Farrington (eds.), *Building a safer society: Strategic approaches to crime prevention. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 19 (pp. 91-150). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Clarke, R. V., & Cornish, D. B. (1985). Modeling offender's decisions: A framework for research and policy. In M. Tonry & N. Morris (eds.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 6. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Clear, T. R. (2008). The effects of high imprisonment rates on communities. In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research, 37* (pp. 97-132). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Cloward, R. A., & Ohlin, L. E. (1960). *Delinquency and opportunity: A theory of delinquent gangs.* Glencoe, IL: Free Press.

Cohen, L. E. (1981). Modeling crime trends: A crime opportunity perspective. *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency, 18,* 138-164.

Cohen, L. E., & Felson, M. (1979). Social change and crime rate trends: A routine activity approach. *American Sociological Review, 44*, 588-608.

Cohen, J., & Tita, G. (1999). Diffusion in homicide: Exploring a general method for detecting spatial diffusion processes. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 15*(4), 451-493.

Coleman, S. (2002). A test for the effect of conformity on crime rate using voter turnout. *The Sociological Quarterly, 43*(2), 257-276.

Cook, P. J., & Laub, J. H. (1998). The unprecedented epidemic of youth violence. In M. Tonry & M. H. Moore (eds.), *Youth violence*. *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 24 (pp. 27-64). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Cook, P. J., & Laub, J. H. (2002). After the epidemic: Recent trends in youth violence in the United States. In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 29 (pp. 1-17). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Cork, D. (1999). Examining space-time interaction in city-level homicide data: crack markets and the diffusion of guns among youth. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 15*(4), 379-406.

Cornish, D., & Clarke, R. V. (eds.). (1986). *The reasoning criminal: Rational choice perspectives on offending*. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Cox, D. R., & Snell, E. J. (1989). *The analysis of binary data.* 2nd edition. London: Chapman and Hall.

Crow, W., & Bull, J. (1975). *Robbery deterrence: An applied behavioral science demonstration -- Final report*. La Jolla, CA: Western Behavioral Science Institute.

Curtis, L. A. (1974). *Criminal violence: National patterns and behavior.* Lexington MA: Lexington Books.

Dreier, P. (1994). Start your engines: The housing movement and the motor voter law. *Shelterforce*, *17*, 10–11.

Duffala, D. C. (1976). Convenience stores, armed robbery, and physical environmental features. *American Behavioral Scientist, 20*, 227-246.

D’Unger, A. V., Land, K. C., McCall, P. L., & Nagin, D. S. (1998). How many latent classes of delinquent/criminal careers? Results from mixed Poisson regression analysis. A*merican Journal of Sociology, 103*, 1593-1630.

Eck, J. E. (1995). Examining routine activity theory: A review of two books. *Justice Quarterly, 12*(4), 783-797.

Eck, J. E., & Weisburd, D. (1995). Crime places in crime theory. In J. E. Eck & D. Weisburd (eds.), *Crime and place*. *Crime Prevention Studies*, vol. 4 (pp. 1-33). Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.

Eck, J. E., Gersh, J. S., & Taylor, C. (2000). Finding crime hot spots through repeat address mapping. In V. Goldsmith, P. McGuir, J. H. Mollenkopf & T. A. Ross (eds.), *Analyzing crime patterns: Frontiers of practice* (pp. 49-64). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Eggleston, E. P., Laub, J. H., & Sampson, R. J. (2004). Methodological sensitivities to latent class analysis of long-term criminal trajectories. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 20*(1), 1-26.

Elder, G. H. Jr. (1998). The life course as developmental theory. *Child Development, 69,* 1-12.

Elliott, D. S., Huizinga, D., & Ageton, S. S. (1985). *Explaining delinquency and drug use*. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.

Elmer, M. C. (1933). Century-old ecological studies in France. *American Journal of Sociology, 39*(1), 63-70.

Evans, D. J., & Oulds, G. (1984). Geographical aspects of the incidence of residential burglary in Newcastle-Under-Lyme, U.K. *Tijdschrift voor Economische Sociale Geografie, 75*(5), 344-355.

Faris, R. E. L. (1967). *Chicago sociology 1920-1932*. San Francisco: Chandler.

Farrington, D. P. (1995). The development of offending and antisocial behaviour from childhood: Key findings from the Cambridge Study in Delinquent Development. *Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry 360*, 929-964.

Farrington, D. P. (2003). Developmental and life-course criminology: Key theoretical and empirical issues. The 2002 Sutherland Award address. *Criminology, 41*, 221-255.

Farrington, D. P., & Welsh, B. C. (2002). Improved street lighting and crime prevention. *Justice Quarterly, 19*(2), 313-342.

Felson, M. (1994). *Crime and everyday life: Insight and implications for society.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge Press.

Felson, M. (2001). The routine activity approach: A very versatile theory of crime. In R. Paternoster & R. Bachman (eds.), *Explaining criminals and crime* (pp. 43-46). Los Angeles: Roxbury Publishing.

Felson, M. (2002). *Crime in everyday life*. 3rd ed. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Felson, M., & Clarke, R. V. (1998). *Opportunity makes the thief: Practical theory for crime prevention*. Police Research Series Paper 98. London: Policing and Reducing Crime Unit; Research, Development and Statistics Directorate.

Fotheringham, A. S., Brundson, C., & Charlton, M. (2000). *Quantitative geography*. London: Sage Publications.

Friedrichs, J., & Blasius, J. (2003). Social norms in distressed neighborhoods: Testing the Wilson hypothesis. *Housing Studies, 18,* 807-826.

Frisbie, D. W., Fishbine, G., Hintz, R., Joelson, M., & Nutter, J. B. (1978). *Crime in Minneapolis: Proposals for prevention.* Minneapolis, MN: Minnesota Crime Prevention Center.

Glueck, S., & Glueck, E. (1950). *Unraveling juvenile delinquency*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Glueck, S., & Glueck, E. (1968). *Delinquents and nondelinquents in perspective*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Glyde, J. (1856). Localities of crime in Suffolk. *Journal of the Statistical Society of London*, *19*, 102-106.

Goldstein, H. (1995). *Multilevel statistical models.* London: Edward Arnold

Golledge, R. G. (1978). Learning about urban environments. In T. Carlstein, D. Parkes, & N. J. Thrift (eds.), *Making sense of time* (pp. 76-98). John Wiley and Sons.

Golledge, R. G., & Stimson, R. J. (1997). *Spatial behavior: A geographical perspective*. New York: Guilford Press.

Gordon, R. A. (1967). Issues in the ecological study of delinquency, *American Sociological Review*, *32*, 927-944.

Gottfredson, M., & Hirschi, T. (1990). *A general theory of crime*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Green, L. (1996). *Policing places with drug problems.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Green, A. E., Gesten, E. L., Greenwald, M. A., & Salcedo, O. (2008). Predicting delinquency in adolescence and young adulthood. A longitudinal study of early risk factors. *Youth Violence and Juvenile Justice*, *6*(4), 323-342.

Greenberg, S. W., Rohe, W. M., & Williams, J. R. (1984). Safety in urban neighborhoods: A comparison of physical characteristics and informal territorial control in high and low crime neighborhoods. *Population and Environment*, *5*(3), 141-165.

Greenland, S., Robins, J. M., & Pearl, J. (1999). Confounding and collapsibility in causal inference. *Statistical Science, 14,* 29-46.

Griffiths, E., & Chavez, J. M. (2004). Communities, street guns, and homicide trajectories in Chicago, 1980-1995: Merging methods for examining homicide trends across space and time. *Criminology, 42*(4), 941-978.

Groff, E. R., & LaVigne, N. G. (2001). Mapping an opportunity surface of residential burglary. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 38*(3), 257-278.

Groff, E. R., Weisburd, D., & Morris, N. (2009). Where the action is at places: Examining spatio-temporal patterns of juvenile crime at places using trajectory analysis and GIS. In D. Weisburd, W. Bernasco & G. Bruinsma (eds.), *Putting crime in its place: Units of analysis in spatial crime research* (pp. 61-86). New York: Springer.

Groff, E. R., Weisburd, D., & Yang, S.-M. (Forthcoming). Is it important to examine crime trends at a local "micro" level?: A longitudinal analysis of street to street variability in crime trajectories. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology*.

Guerry, A-M. (1833). *Essai sur la statistique morale de la France*. Paris: Crochard.

Hagan, J., & Palloni, A. (1988). Crimes as social events in the life course: Reconceiving a criminological controversy. *Criminology, 26,* 87-100.

Hägerstrand, T. (1970). What about people in regional science? *Papers of the Regional Science Association, 24*, 7-21.

Hakim, S., & Shachamurove, Y. (1996). Spatial and temporal patterns of commercial burglaries: The evidence examined. *American Journal of Economics and Sociology, 55*(4), 443-456.

Hakim, S., Rengert, G. F., & Shachamurove, Y. (2000). *Knowing your odds: Home burglary and the odds ratio.* (Working paper #00-14). Philadelphia, PA: Center for Analytic Research in Economics and the Social Sciences, University of Pennsylvania.

Harvey, L. (1987). *Myths of the Chicago School of sociology*, Aldershot, UK: Avebury.

Hayslett-McCall, K. L. (2008). *Do we reap what we zone? A routine activity study of neighborhoods, land-use, and robbery rates*. Saarbrucken, Germany: Springer Publishing, Verlag VDM House.

Heitgerd, J. L., & Bursik, R. J. Jr. (1987). Extracommunity dynamics and the ecology of delinquency. *American Journal of Sociology, 92*(4), 775-787.

Herbert, D. (1982). *The geography of urban crime.* London: Longman Group LTD.

Hipp, J. R. (2007a). Income inequality, race, and place: Does the distribution of race and class within neighborhoods affect crime rates? *Criminology, 45*(3), 665-697.

Hipp, J. R. (2007b). Block, tract, and level of aggregation: Neighborhood structure and crime and disorder as a case in point. *American Sociological Review, 72,* 659-680.

Hipp, J. R., Tita, G. E., & Boggess, L. N. (2009). Intergroup and intragroup violence: Is violent crime an expression of group conflict or social disorganization? *Criminology, 47*(2), 521-564.

Hirschi, T. (1969). *Causes of delinquency*. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

HistoryLink.org Online Encyclopedia of Washington State History. (2009). Seattle -- thumbnail history. Accessed August 1, 2009 at: http://www.historylink.org/index.cfm?DisplayPage=pf_output.cfm&file_id=7934.

Horney, J., Osgood, D. W., & Marshall, I. H. (1995). Criminal careers in the short-term: Intra-individual variability in crime and its relation to local life circumstances. *American Sociological Review, 60*(5), 655-673.

Horton, F. E., & Reynolds, D. R. (1971). Action space differentials in cities. In H. McConnell & D. Yaseen (eds.), *Perspectives in geography: Models of spatial interaction* (pp. 83-102). DeKalb, IL: Northern Illinois University Press.

Hsieh, C.-C., & Pugh, M. D. (1993). Poverty, income inequality, and violent crime: A meta-analysis of recent aggregate data studies. *Criminal Justice Review, 18*(2), 182-202.

Hunter, R. D. (1988). Environmental characteristics of convenience store robberies in the state of Florida. Paper presented at the meeting of the American Society of Criminology, Chicago.

Jacobs, J. (1961). *The death and life of great American cities.* New York: Vintage Books.

Jefferis, E. (2004). *Criminal Places: A micro-level study of residential theft.* Unpublished dissertation. Cincinnati: University of Cincinnati.

Jeffery, C. R. (1971). *Crime prevention through environmental design.* Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.

Johnson, S. D., Lab, S. P., & Bowers, K. J. (2008). Stable and fluid hotspots of crime: Differentiation and identification. *Built Environment, 34*(1), 32-45.

Jones, B. L., Nagin, D. S., & Roeder, K. (2001). A SAS procedure based on mixture models for estimating developmental trajectories. *Sociological Methods & Research, 29*(3), 374-393.

Kaluzny, S. P., Vega, S. C., Cardoso, T. P., & Shelly, A. A. (1997). *S+ SpatialStats. User's manual for Windows and UNIX*. New York: Springer.

Kelling, G. L., & Coles, C. M. (1996). *Fixing broken windows: Restoring order and reducing crime in our communities*. New York: Touchstone.

King County Budget Office. (2004). *2004 King County Annual Growth Report*. Seattle, WA: King County Government.

Klinger, D., & Bridges, G. (1997). Measurement error in calls-for-service as an indicator of crime. *Criminology*, *35*(4), 705-726.

Kobrin, S., & Schuerman, L. A. (1981). Ecological processes in the creation of delinquency areas: An update. Paper presented at the meeting of the American Sociological Association, Toronto, ON.

Kornhauser, R. (1978). *Social sources of delinquency*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Kubrin, C. E., & Herting, J. R. (2003). Neighborhood correlates of homicide trends: An analysis using growth-curve modeling. *The Sociological Quarterly, 44*(3), 329-350.

Kurtz, E. M., Koons, B. A., & Taylor, R. B. (1998). Land use, physical deterioration, resident-based control, and calls for service on urban streetblocks. *Justice Quarterly, 15*(1), 121-149.

Lab, S. P. (2007). *Crime prevention: Approaches, practices, evaluations*. Cincinnati, OH: Anderson.

Landau, D., & Lazarsfeld, P. F. (1968). Quetelet, Adolphe. *International Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences*, *13*, 247-257.

Lander, B. (1954). *Towards an understanding of juvenile delinquency*. New York: Columbia University Press.

Larzelere, R. E., Kuhn, B. R., & Johnson, B. (2004). The intervention selection bias: An underrecognized confound in intervention research. *Psychological Bulletin, 130*¸ 289-303.

Laub, J. H., & Sampson, R. J. (2003). *Shared beginnings, divergent lives. Delinquent boys to age 70*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Laub, J. H., Nagin, D. S., & Sampson, R. J. (1998). Trajectories of change in criminal offending: Good marriages and the desistence process. *American Sociological Review, 63,* 225-238

LaVigne, N. G. (1994). Gasoline drive-offs: Designing a less convenient environment. In R. V. Clarke (ed.), *Crime Prevention Studies*, vol. 2 (pp. 91-114). Monsey, NY: Criminal Justice Press.

LeBeau, J. L. (1987). The methods and measures of centrography and the spatial dynamics of rape. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 3,* 125-141.

LeBlanc, M., & Loeber, R. (1998). Developmental criminology updated. In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 23 (pp. 115-198). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Lehoczky, J. P. (1986). Random parameter stochastic-process models of criminal careers. In A. Blumstein, J. Cohen, J. A. Roth, & C. A. Visher (eds.), *Criminal careers and "career criminals"* vol II. Panel on Research on Criminal Careers. Committee on Research on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Justice. Commission on Behavioral and Social Science and Education. National Research Council. Washington, DC: National Academy Press.

Levine, N., & Wachs, M. (1986). Bus crime in Los Angeles I: Measuring the incidence. *Transportation Research*, *20A*(4), 273-284.

Loeber, R., & Le Blanc, M. (1990). Toward a developmental criminology. In M. Tonry & N. Morris (eds.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 12 (pp. 375-473). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Loeber, R., & Hay, D. (1997). Key issues in the development of aggression and violence from childhood to early adulthood. *Annual Review of Psychology, 48,* 371-410.

Loeber, R., Farrington, D. P., Stouthamer-Loeber, M., Moffitt, T. E., Caspi, A., & Lynam, D. (2001). Male mental health problems, psychopathy, and personality traits: Key findings from the first 14 years of the Pittsburgh Youth Study. *Clinical Child and Family Psychology Review, 4*, 273-297.

Loftin, C., & Hill, R. H. (1974). Regional subculture and homicide: An examination of the Gastil-Hackney thesis. *American Sociological Review*, *39*(5), 714-724.

Long, J. S. (1997). *Regression models for categorical and limited dependent variables.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Loukaitou-Sideris, A. (1999). Hot spots of bus stop crime: The importance of environmental attributes. *Journal of the American Planning Association*, *65*(4), 395-411.

Lowenkamp, C. T., Cullen, F. T., & Pratt, T. C. (2003). Revisiting Sampson and Groves's test of social disorganization theory: Revisiting a criminological classic. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency*, *40*(4), 351-373.

Ludwig, J., Duncan, G. J., & Hirschfield, P. (2001). Urban poverty and juvenile crime: Evidence from a randomized housing mobility experiment. *Quarterly Journal of Economics, 116*(2), 655-679.

Maguire, M. (1982). *Burglary in a dwelling.* London: Heinemann.

Maltz, M. D. (1996) From Poisson to the present: Applying operations research to problems of crime and justice. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology*, *12*(1), 3-61.

Maltz, M. D., Gordon, A. C., & Friedman, W. (1990 [2000]). *Mapping crime in its community setting: Event geography analysis.* Originally published New York: Springer-Verlag.

Mayhew, H. (1851 [1950]). *London's underworld. Being selections from 'Those that will not work', the 4th vol. of 'London labour and the London poor'* (edited by P. Quennell), London: Spring Books.

Mayhew, P., Clarke, R. V., Sturman, A., & Hough, M. (1976). *Crime as opportunity*. Home Office Research Study, vol. 34. London: Home Office, H.M. Stationary Office.

Mazerolle, L. G., & Terrill, W. (1997). Problem-oriented policing in public housing: Identifying the distribution of problem places. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies and Management*, *20*(2), 235-255.

Mazerolle, L. G., Kadleck, C., & Roehl, J. (1998). Controlling drug and disorder problems: The role of place managers. *Criminology*, *36*, 371-404.

McArdle, J. J. & Epstein, D. (1987). Latent growth curves within developmental structural equation models. *Child Development, 58,* 110-133.

McLachlan, G., & Peel, D. (2000). *Finite mixture models*. New York: Wiley.

Meinert, C. L. (1986). *Clinical trials: Design, conduct, and analysis.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Meredith, W., & Tisak, J. (1990). Latent curve analysis. *Psychometrika, 55,* 107-122.

Merton, R. K. (1968). *Social theory and social structure.* New York: Free Press.

Messner, S. F. (1983). Regional and racial effects on the urban homicide rate: The subculture of violence revisited. *American Journal of Sociology 88*, 997-1007.

Messner, S. F., & Anselin, L. (2004). Spatial analysis of homicide with areal data. In M. F. Goodchild & D. G. Janelle (eds.), *Spatially integrated social science* (pp. 127-144). New York: Oxford University Press.

Miller, J. M., Koons-Witt, B. A., & Ventura, H. E. (2004). Barriers to examining the effectiveness of drug treatment behind bars. *Journal of Criminal Justice, 32*, 75-83.

Moffitt, T. E. (1993). Adolescence-limited and life-course persistent antisocial behavior: A developmental taxonomy. *Psychological Review, 100*, 674-701.

Moffitt, T. E., Lynam, D. R., & Silva, P. A. (1994). Neuropsychological tests predicting persistent male delinquency. *Criminology, 32*(2), 277-300.

Morenoff, J. D., & Sampson, R. J. (1997). Violent crime and the spatial dynamics of neighborhood transition: Chicago, 1970-1990. *Social Forces, 76*(1), 31-64.

Morenoff, J. D., Sampson, R. J., & Raudenbush, S. W. (2001). Neighborhood inequality, collective efficacy, and the spatial dynamics of urban violence. *Criminology, 39*, 517-560.

Morris, T. (1957). *The criminal area. A study in social ecology*, London: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Muthén, B. (1989). Latent variable modeling in heterogeneous populations. *Psychometrika, 54,* 557-585.

Muthén, B. (2001). Second general structural equation modeling with a combination of categorical and continuous latent variables: New opportunities for latent class-latent growth modeling. In. L. M. Collins & A. G. Sayers (eds.), *New methods for the analysis of change.* Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Nagelkerke, N. J. D. (1991). A note on the general definition of the coefficient of determination. *Biometrika, 78*(3), 791-792.

Nagin, D. S. (1998). Criminal deterrence research at the outset of the twenty-first century. In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 23 (pp. 1-42). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Nagin, D. S. (1999). Analyzing developmental trajectories: A semiparametric group-based approach. *Psychological Methods, 4*, 139-157.

Nagin, D. (2005). *Group-based modeling of development over the life course*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Nagin, D. S., & Land, K. C. (1993). Age, criminal careers, and population heterogeneity: Specification and estimation of a nonparametric, mixed Poisson model. *Criminology, 31*(3), 327-362.

Nagin, D. S., & Tremblay, R. E. (1999). Trajectories of boys' physical aggression, opposition, and hyperactivity on the path to physically violent and nonviolent juvenile delinquency. *Child Development, 70*, 1181-1196.

Nagin, D. S., & Tremblay, R. E. (2001). Parental and early childhood predictors of persistent physical aggression in boys from kindergarten to high school. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 58*, 389-394.

Nagin, D. S., Farrington D. P., & Moffitt, T. E. (1995). Life-course trajectories of different types of offenders. *Criminology, 33*, 111-139.

Nettler, G. (1978). *Explaining crime*. 2nd ed. Montreal: McGraw-Hill.

Newman, O. (1972). *Defensible space: Crime prevention through environmental design.* New York: Macmillan.

Newman, O. (1975). *Design guidelines for creating defensible space*. Washington, DC: U.S. Printing Office.

Office of Financial Management. (2008). April 1 population of cities, towns, and counties used for allocation of selected state revenues, state of Washington. Olympia, WA: Author.

Osgood, D. W . (2000). Poisson-based regression analysis of aggregate crime rates. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 16*(1), 21-43.

Osgood, D. W., & Chambers, J. M. (2000). Social disorganization outside the metropolis: An analysis of rural youth violence. *Criminology, 38*(1), 81-116.

Painter, K. (1993). Street lighting as an environmental crime prevention strategy. Paper presented at the International Seminar on Environmental Criminology and Crime Analysis, Coral Gables, FL.

Painter, K. A., & Farrington, D. P. (1997). The crime reducing effect of improved street lighting: The Dudley project. In R. V. Clarke (ed.), *Situational crime prevention: Successful case studies*, 2nd ed. (pp. 209-226). Albany, NY: Harrow and Heston Publishers.

Painter, K. A., & Farrington, D. P. (1999). Street lighting and crime: Diffusion of benefits in the Stoke-On-Trent project. In K. Painter & N. Tilley (eds.), *Surveillance of public space: CCTV, street lighting, and crime prevention. Crime Prevention Studies,* vol. 10 (pp. 77-122). Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.

Park, R. E. (1925 [1967]). The city: Suggestions for the investigation of human behaviour in the urban environment. In R. E. Park & E. W. Burgess (eds.), *The city: Suggestions for the investigation of human behaviour in the urban environment* (pp. 1-46). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Pease, K. (1999). A review of street lighting evaluations: Crime reduction effects. In K. Painter & N. Tilley (eds.), *Surveillance of public space: CCTV, street lighting and crime prevention*. *Crime Prevention Studies*, vol. 10 (pp. 47-76). Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.

Peng, C.-Y., J., & Nichols, R. N. (2003). Using multinomial logistic regression to predict adolescent behavioral risk. *Journal of Modern Applied Statistical Methods, 2,* 177-188.

Perkins, D., Wandersman, A., Rich, R., & Taylor, R. B. (1993). The physical environment of street crime: Defensible space, territoriality and incivilities. *Journal of Environmental Psychology, 13,* 29-49.

Perkins, D. D., Florin, P., Rich, R. C., Wandersman, A., & Chavis, D. M. (1990). Participation and the social and physical environment of residential blocks: Crime and community context. *American Journal of Community Psychology, 18*(1), 83-115.

Pierce, G., Spaar, S., & Briggs, L. R. (1986). *The character of police work: Strategic and tactical implications.* Boston, MA: Center for Applied Social Research, Northeastern University.

Pyle, G. F. (1976). Spatial and temporal aspects of crime in Cleveland, Ohio. *American Behavioral Scientist, 20***,** 175-198.

Quetelet, A. J. (1831 [1984]). *Research on the propensity for crime at different ages* (S. F. Test Sylvester, Trans.). Cincinnati: Anderson Publishing Co.

Quetelet, A. J. (1842 [1969]). *A treatise of man*. Gainesville, FL: Scholar's Facsimiles and Reprints.

Raine, A. (1993). Features of borderline personality and violence. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 49*(2), 277-281.

Ratcliffe, J. H. (2004). Geocoding crime and a first estimate of a minimum acceptable hit rate. *International Journal Geographical Information Science, 18*(1), 61-72.

Raudenbush, S. (2001). Toward a coherent framework for comparing trajectories of individual change. In. L. M. Collins & A. G. Sayers (eds.), *New methods for the analysis of change* (pp. 35-63). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association

Reeves, T. J., & Bennett, C. E. (2004). We the people: Asians in the United States. Census 2000 special report. Washington, DC: U.S. Census Bureau.

Reiss, A. J., Jr. (1986). Why are communities important in understanding crime? In M. Tonry and N. Morris (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 8 (pp. 1-33). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Reiss, A. J., Jr., & Tonry, M. (1986). Preface. In A. J. Reiss Jr. & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research*, vol. 8 (pp. vii-viii). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Rengert, G. F. (1980). Spatial aspects of criminal behavior. In D. E. Georges-Abeyie & K. D. Harries (eds.), *Crime: A spatial perspective* (pp. 47-57). New York: Columbia University Press.

Rengert, G. F. (1981). Burglary in Philadelphia: A critique of an opportunity structure model. In P. Brantingham & P. Brantingham (eds.), *Environmental criminology* (pp. 189-201). Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland Press.

Rengert, G. (1988). The locations of facilities and crime. *Journal of Security of Administration, 11*(2), 12-16.

Rengert, G. (1989). Behavioural geography and criminal behaviour. In D. Evans & D. T. Herbert (eds.), *The geography of crime* (pp. 161-175). London: Routledge.

Rengert, G., & Wasilchick, J. (2000). *Suburban burglary*. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas Publisher.

Rengert, G. F., & Lockwood, B. (2009). Geographical units of analysis and the analysis of crime. In D. Weisburd, W. Bernasco & G. Bruinsma (eds.), *Putting crime in its place: Units of analysis in spatial crime research* (pp. 109-122). New York: Springer.

Rengert, G., Ratcliffe, J. H., & Chakravorty, S. (2005). *Policing illegal drug markets: Geographic approaches to crime reduction*. Monsey, NY: Criminal Justice Press.

Reynolds, H. T. (1977). *Analysis of nominal data.* 2nd edition. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.

Rhodes, W., Pelissier, B., Gaes, G., Saylor, W., Camp, S., & Wallace, S. (2001). Alternative solutions to the problem of selection bias in an analysis of federal residential drug treatment programs. *Evaluation Review, 25,* 331-369.

Rice, K. J., & Smith, W. R. (2002). Sociological models of automotive theft: Integrating routine activity and social disorganization approaches. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 39*(3), 304-336.

Robins, J. M. (1989). The control of confounding by intermediate variables. *Statistics in Medicine, 8,* 679–701.

Robinson, W. S. (1950). Ecological correlations and the behavior of individuals. *American Sociological Review*, *15*, 351-357.

Robinson, J. B., Lawton, B. A., Taylor, R. B., & Perkins, D. D. (2003). Multilevel longitudinal impact of civilities: Fear of crime, expected safety, and block satisfaction. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology, 19*, 237-274.

Roman, C. G. (2002). *Schools as generators of crime: Routine activities and the sociology of place.* Unpublished dissertation. Washington, DC: American University.

Roman, C. G. (2005). Routine activities of youth and neighborhood violence: Spatial modeling of place, time, and crime. In F. Wang (ed.), *Geographic information systems and crime analysis* (pp. 293-310). Hershey, PA: Idea Group.

Roncek, D. W. (2000). Schools and crime. In V. Goldsmith, P. G. McGuire, J. H. Mollenkopf, & T. A. Ross (eds.), *Analyzing crime patterns: Frontiers of practice* (pp. 153-165). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Roncek, D. W., & R. Bell. (1981). Bars, blocks, and crimes. *Journal of Environmental Systems, 11*(1), 35-47.

Roncek, D. W., & Maier, P. A. (1991). Bars, blocks, and crime revisited: Linking the theory of routine activities to the empiricism of "hot spots". *Criminology, 29*(4), 725-753.

Roncek, D. W., Bell, R., & Francik, J. M. A. (1981). Housing projects and crime: Testing a proximity hypothesis. *Social Problems, 29*(2), 151-166.

Rosenfeld, R., Fornango, R., & Rengifo, A. (2007). The impact of order-maintenance policing on New York City robbery and homicide rates: 1988-2001. *Criminology, 45*(2), 355-384.

Rowlingson, B. S., & Diggle, P. J. (1993). Splancs: Spatial point pattern analysis code in S-Plus. *Computers and Geosciences, 19*, 627-655.

Sampson, R. J. (1985). Neighborhood and crime: The structural determinants of personal victimization. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 22*(1), 7-40.

Sampson, R. J. (2004). Neighborhood and community: Collective efficacy and community safety. *New Economy, 11*, 106–113.

Sampson, R. J., & Groves, W. B. (1989). Community structure and crime: Testing social-disorganization theory. *American Journal of Sociology, 94*(4), 774-802.

Sampson, R. J., & Laub, J. (1993). *Crime in the making: Pathways and turning points through life*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Sampson, R. J., & Wilson, W. J. (1995). Toward a theory of race, crime, and urban inequality. In J. Hagan & R. D. Peterson (eds.), *Crime and inequality* (pp. 37-54). Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Sampson, R. J., & Raudenbush, S. W. (1999). Systematic social observation of public spaces: A new look at disorder in urban neighborhoods. *American Journal of Sociology, 105*(3), 603-651.

Sampson, R. J., & Raudenbush, S. W. (2001). *Disorder in urban neighborhoods: Does it lead to crime?* Research In Brief. Washington DC: National Institute of Justice.

Sampson, R. J., & Morenoff, J. D. (2004). Spatial (dis)advantage and homicide in Chicago neighborhoods. In M. F. Goodchild & D. G. Janelle (eds.), *Spatially integrated social science* (pp. 145-170). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Sampson, R. J., Raudenbush, S. W., & Earls, F. (1997). Neighborhoods and violent crime: A multilevel study of collective efficacy. *Science, 277*, 918-924.

Sampson, R. J., Morenoff, J. D., & Gannon-Rowley, J. (2002). Assessing "neighborhood effects:" Social processes and new directions in research. *Annual Review of Sociology, 28*, 443-478.

Schmid, C. F. (1960a). Urban crime areas: Part I. *American Sociological Review, 25*(4), 527-542.

Schmid, C. F. (1960b). Urban crime areas: Part II. *American Sociological Review, 25*(5), 655-678.

Schreck, C. J., McGloin, J. M., & Kirk, D. S. (2009). On the origins of the violent neighborhood: A study of the nature and predictors of crime-type differentiation across Chicago neighborhoods. *Justice Quarterly, 26*(4), 771-794.

Schuerman, L., & Kobrin, S. (1986). Community careers in crime. In A. J. Reiss Jr., & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 8 (pp. 67-100). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Seattle City Government (2009). Quick information: Area of the city [Electronic Version] Accessed August 1, 2009 at: http://www.cityofseattle.net/CityArchives/Facts/info.htm.

Shadish, W. R., Cook, T. D., & Campbell, D. T. (2002). *Experimental and quasi-experimental designs for generalized causal inference*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company.

Shaw, C. R. (with F. M. Zorbaugh, H. D. McKay & L. Cotrell). (1929). *Delinquency areas. A study of the geographical distribution of school truants, juvenile delinquents, and adult offenders in Chicago*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Shaw, C. R., & McKay, H. D. (1942 [1969]). *Juvenile delinquency and urban areas. A study of rates of delinquency in relation to differential characteristics of local communities in American cities*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press (Rev. ed.).

Sherman, L. (1995). Hot spots of crime and criminal careers of places. In J. Eck & D. Weisburd (eds.), *Crime and place*. *Crime Prevention Studies,* vol. 4. Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.

Sherman, L. W., & Weisburd, D. (1995). General deterrent effects of police patrol in crime `hot spots': A randomized, controlled trial. *Justice Quarterly, 12*(4), 625-648.

Sherman, L. W., Gartin, P., & Buerger, M. E. (1989). Hot spots of predatory crime: Routine activities and the criminology of place. *Criminology, 27*(1), 27-55.

Sherman, L.W., Farrington, D. P., Welsh, B. C., & MacKenzie, D. L. (eds.). (2002). *Evidence-based crime prevention.* New York: Routledge.

Sherman, L.W., Gottfredson, D., MacKenzie, D., Eck, J., Reuter, P., & Bushway, S. (1997). *Preventing crime: What works, what doesn't, what's promising*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice.

Skogan, W. G. (1986). Fear of crime and neighborhood change. In A. J. Reiss Jr., & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 8 (pp. 203-229). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Skogan, W. G. (1987). *Disorder and community decline*. Final report. Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice.

Skogan, W. G. (1990). *Disorder and decline: Crime and the spiral of decay in American cities*. New York: Free Press.

Skogan, W. G. (1996). *Evaluating problem-solving policing: The Chicago experience*. Chicago: Institute for Policy Research, Northwestern University.

Skogan, W. G., & Annan, S. (1994). Drugs and public housing: Toward an effective police response. In D. MacKenzie & C. D. Uchida (eds.), *Drugs and crime*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Smith, D. A. (1986). The neighborhood context of police behavior. In A. J. Reiss Jr., & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and crime. Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 8 (pp. 313-341). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Smith, D. A., & Jarjoura, G. R. (1988). Social structure and criminal victimization. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 25*(1), 27-52.

Smith, W. R., Frazee, S. G., & Davison, E. L. (2000). Furthering the integration of routine activity and social disorganization theories: Small units of analysis and the study of street robbery as a diffusion process. *Criminology, 38*(2), 489-523.

Snodgrass, J. (1976). Clifford R. Shaw and Henry D. McKay: Chicago criminologists. *British Journal of Criminology, 16*, 1-19.

Spelman, W. (1995). Criminal careers of public places. In J. E. Eck & D. Weisburd (eds.), *Crime and place*. *Crime Prevention Studies*, vol. 4 (pp. 115-144). Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.

Stark, R. (1987). Deviant places: A theory of the ecology of crime. *Criminology, 25*(4), 893-909.

St. Jean, P. K. B. (2007). *Pockets of crime: Broken windows, collective efficacy, and the criminal point of view*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Sutherland, E. H. (1947). *Principles of criminology: A sociological theory of criminal behavior.* New York: J.B. Lippincott Company.

Taylor, R. B. (1988). *Human territorial functioning: An empirical, evolutional perspective on individual and small group territorial cognitions, behaviors and consequences.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Taylor, R. B. (1996). Neighborhood responses to disorder and local attachments: The systemic model of attachment, social disorganization, and neighborhood use value. *Sociological Forum, 11*(1), 41-74.

Taylor, R. B. (1997). Social order and disorder of street blocks and neighborhoods: Ecology, microecology, and the systemic model of social disorganization. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 34*(1), 113-155.

Taylor, R. B. (1998). Crime and small-scale places: What we know, what we can prevent, and what else we need to know. In R. B. Taylor, G. Bazemore, B. Boland, T. R. Clear, R. P. J. Corbett, J. Feinblatt, G. Berman, M. Sviridoff, & C. Stone (eds.), *Crime and place: Plenary papers of the 1997 Conference on Criminal Justice Research and Evaluation* (pp. 1-22). Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice.

Taylor, R. B. (1999). *Crime, grime, fear, and decline: A longitudinal look*. Research in Brief. Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice, U.S. Department of Justice.

Taylor, R. B. (2001). *Breaking away from broken windows: Baltimore neighborhoods and the nationwide fight against crime, grime, fear and decline*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Taylor, R. B., Gottfredson, S. D., & Brower, S. (1984). Block crime and fear: Defensible space, local social ties, and territorial functioning. *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 21*(4), 303-331.

Taylor, R. B., Koons, B. A., Kurtz, E. M., Greene, J. R., & Perkins, D. D. (1995). Street blocks with more nonresidential land use have more physical deterioration: Evidence from Baltimore and Philadelphia. *Urban Affairs Review, 31*(1), 120-136.

Thomas, W. I. (1966). *On social organization and social personality. Selected papers* (ed. by M. Janovitz), Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Tierney, J. P., Grossman, J. B., & Resch, N. L. (1995). *Making a difference: An impact study of Big Brothers/Big Sisters*. Philadelphia: Public/Private Ventures.

Tiihonen, J., Isohanni, M., Räsänen, P., Koiranen, M., & Moring, J. (1997). Specific major mental disorders and criminality: A 26-year prospective study of the 1966 northern Finland birth cohort. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 154,* 840-845.

Tobler, W. (1970). A computer model simulation of urban growth in the Detroit Region. *Economic Geography, 46*(2), 234-240.

Tracy, P. E., & Kempf-Leonard, K. (1996). *Continuity and discontinuity in criminal careers*. New York: Plenum Press.

Travis, J., & Waul, M. (2001). *Reflections on the crime decline: Lessons for the future?* Proceedings from the Urban Institute Crime Decline Forum. Washington, DC: The Urban Institute.

Unger, D., & Wandersman, A. (1983). Neighboring and its role in block organizations: An exploratory report. *American Journal of Community Psychology, 11*(3), 291-300.

U.S. Census Bureau (Cartographer). (1990). *Census 1900: Summary Tape File 1 (SF1)*

U.S. Census Bureau (Cartographer). (2000). *Census 2000: Summary Tape File 1 (SF1)*

U.S. Census Bureau. (2005). *American Community Survey*. Washington, DC: U. S. Census Bureau.

Veysey, B. M., & Messner, S. F. (1999). Further testing of social disorganization theory: An elaboration of Sampson and Groves's "community structure and crime." *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency, 36*(2), 156-174.

Vold, G. B., Bernard, T. J., & Snipes, J. B. (2002). *Theoretical criminology*. 5th ed. New York: Oxford University Press.

Weisburd, D., & Green, L. (1994). Defining the drug market: The case of the Jersey City DMA system. In D. L. MacKenzie & C. D. Uchida (eds.), *Drugs and crime: Evaluating public policy initiatives*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Weisburd, D., & Green, L. (1995). Policing drug hot spots: The Jersey City drug market analysis experiment. *Justice Quarterly, 12*(4), 711-735.

Weisburd, D., & McEwen, T. (1997). Introduction: Crime mapping and crime prevention. In D. Weisburd & T. McEwen (eds.), *Crime mapping and crime prevention. Crime Prevention Studies,* vol. 8 (pp. 1-23). Monsey, NY: Criminal Justice Press.

Weisburd, D., & Mazerolle, L. G. (2000). Crime and disorder in drug hot spots: Implications for theory and practice in policing. *Police Quarterly, 3*(3), 331-349.

Weisburd, D., & Lum, C. (2005). The diffusion of computerized crime mapping policing: Linking research and practice. *Police Practice and Research, 6,* 419-434.

Weisburd, D., & Britt, C. (2007). *Statistics in criminal justice*. 3rd ed. New York: Springer.

Weisburd, D., & Piquero, A. R. (2008). How well do criminologists explain crime? Statistical modeling in published studies. In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice: A Review of Research,* vol. 37 (pp. 453-502). Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Weisburd, D., Bernasco, W., & Bruinsma, G. J. N. (eds.). (2009). *Putting crime in its place: Units of analysis in spatial crime research*. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Weisburd, D., Bruinsma, G. J. N., & Bernasco, W. (2009). Units of analysis in geographic criminology: Historical development, critical issues, and open questions. In D. Weisburd, W. Bernasco & G. Bruinsma (eds.), *Putting crime in its place: Units of analysis in spatial crime research* (pp. 3-31). New York: Springer-Verlag.

Weisburd, D. L., Morris, N., & Groff, E. R. (In press). Hot spots of juvenile crime: A longitudinal study of street segments in Seattle, Washington. *Journal of Quantitative Criminology*.

Weisburd, D., Maher, L. & Sherman, L. (1992). Contrasting crime general and crime specific theory: The case of hot spots of crime. In F. Adler & W. S. Laufer (eds.), *Advances in Criminological Theory,* vol. 4 (pp. 45-70). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.

Weisburd, D. L., Lum, C., & Yang, S.-M. (2004). *The criminal careers of places: A longitudinal study*. Washington DC: US Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice.

Weisburd, D. L., Bushway, S., Lum, C., & Yang, S.-M. (2004). Trajectories of crime at places: A longitudinal study of street segments in the city of Seattle. *Criminology, 42*(2), 283-321.

White, G. F. (1990). Neighborhood permeability and burglary rates. *Justice Quarterly, 7*(1), 57-67.

Wicker, A. W. (1987). Behavior settings reconsidered: Temporal stages, resources, internal dynamics, context. In D. Stokels & I. Altman (eds.), *Handbook of environmental psychology* (pp. 613-653). New York: Wiley-Interscience.

Wikström, P.-O. H. (2006). Individuals, settings, and acts of crime: Situational mechanisms and the explanation of crime. In P.-O. H. Wikström, & R. J. Sampson (eds.), *The explanation of crime: Context, mechanisms, and development*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Wilcox, P., Quisenberry, N., Cabrera, D. T., Jones, S. (2004). Busy places and broken windows? Toward defining the role of physical structure and process in community crime models. *The Sociological Quarterly, 45*(2), 185-207.

Willet, J. B., & Sayer, A. G. (1994). Using covariance structure analysis to detect correlates and predictors of individual change over time. *Psychological Bulletin, 116*, 363-381.

Williams, K. (1984). Economic sources of homicide: Reestimating the effects of poverty and inequality. *American Sociological Review, 49*, 283-289.

Wilson, J. W., & Kelling, G. (1982). The police and neighborhood safety: Broken windows. *Atlantic Monthly*, *127*, 29-38.

Wolfgang, M. E. (1991). Foreword: Symposium on the causes and correlates of juvenile delinquency. *Journal of Criminal Law and Criminology, 82*(1), 1-2.

Wolfgang M., E., & Ferracuti, F. (1967). *The subculture of violence: Towards an integrated theory in criminology*. London: Tavistock.

Wolfgang, M. E., Figlio, R. M., & Sellin, T. (1972). *Delinquency in a birth cohort*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Wolfgang, M., Thornberry, T. P., & Figlio, R. M. (1987). *From boy to man, from delinquency to crime.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Worden, R., Bynum, T., & Frank, J. (1994). Police crackdowns on drug abuse and trafficking. In D. MacKenzie & C. D. Uchida (eds.), *Drugs and crime*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Wright, R. T., & Decker, S. H. (1997). *Armed robbers in action: Stickups and street culture*. Boston: Northeastern University Press.

Zorbaugh, H. W. (1929). *The gold coast and the slum. A sociological study of Chicago's near north side*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.